



GUISTARA DE SAN MIGUEL

ARMAGEDDON 2066

JESUS CHRIST, JEWISH MESSIAH, 12TH MAHDI, SPAIN, MEXICO, PHILIPPINE COLONY, UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, RUSSIA, CHINA, IRAN, NORTH KOREA, SOUTH KOREA, INDIA, EUROPEAN UNION, NORTH ATLANTIC TREATY ORGANIZATION [NATO], ASSOCIATION OF SOUTH EAST ASIAN NATIONS [ASEAN], SHANGHAI COOPERATION ORGANIZATION [SCO], ARCHANGELS, ANGELS, DIWATAS, HALIMAWS, THE BEAST, APACHE HELICOPTERS, ABRAMS TANKS, MERKAVA TANKS, ISRAEL, MEGIDDO, JERUSALEM, SAUDI ARABIA, EGYPT, JORDAN, KUWAIT, TAJIKISTAN, PAKISTAN, TURKEY, TURKMENISTAN, AZERBAIJAN, ARMENIA, CHECHNYA, NEPHILIM, DRAGON TRIBE

THE FILIPINO PSYCHOLOGY

In the conceptualization of this Novel the author borrowed from the natural psychology [Psyche] of the Filipino people. These come from our pre-Spanish times as evidenced by the existence of the Elementals [the Diwatas] and the Halimaws [ugly Monsters]. The author borrowed also from the Spanish time, with the existence of the Jesus Christ, Heaven, the Church, the Archangels and Angels, and the institutions associated with the Church and the Culture that She brought. The author borrowed from the American period of Philippine History, her impact in Philippine Society, Polity and Culture. For yesterday, now and the future, the author borrowed too from Hinduism, China and the Chinese community in the Philippines.

The Holy Scriptures, particularly THE JERUSALEM BIBLE, were oftentimes quoted to enlighten the readers and there were times when they were quoted multiple times, the reason is for convenience of reading the novel. The author has some knowledge about the current events of his time particularly politics and economics. There were many nations named but this is fiction and the author simply wants to convey his ideas and predictions about the possible events. Nevertheless, this is [conversations] about the things that have relevance today that may possibly impact the future. Finally, the source of all of these ideas and imagination then translated into fiction: The predictions of the Jewish Prophets in the Holy Scriptures.

It follows therefore that this Novel covers the Past, the Present and the Future events. Saying thus, it is still a novel and a fiction at that.

I dedicate this work to my children: Minche, Asia Camille, Carlos Luis, Jose Lorenzo and Francis Oliver. This novel is dedicated to my siblings too, to you all, of course. My dad, Toribio, mom, Maria Guadalupe and Mardy, for always being there, understanding and encouraging me to finish my first novel. To PNAC Agricultural Science High School 16th Batch and our Adviser Mommy Norma Ponce de Leon. To Pamantasan ng Lungsod ng Maynila Top Executive Management Program who schooled at PAGCOR.

Lastly, to University of Santo Tomas, for teaching me humility, to be forgiving and the Knowledge about Catholicism and Mysticism [I frequented her Library, when I was studying in college, to read not about our subjects but many catholic literatures and other social sciences subjects not related to my course]. Though, I may not be always catholic, UST is a great transferor of Knowledge; as I can still remember my Asian Studies and Literatures. Sudras for example, is a knowledge I got from my Asian Studies class and the many other knowledge I put here in the novel. 20 years since I can still remember that I was not able to answer the question of my professor about Greece's rocky mountains. Thomasians generally are humble and sheepish and they are governable. This novel is also for you, all of you. To the Institution of Quality Learning at UST.

Disclaimer:

All things written here were product of imagination. The author, being a Christian and a Filipino has been influenced much by Christian literatures particularly when it comes to end time events. Diwatas are not Biblical, they come out in this novel as pure fiction, even if Filipinos would claim that they are real. The Archangels and angels of course were Biblical and real for Christians, Jews, Hindus and Muslims alike.

This novel does not want to belittle any race or religion that were mentioned here. The authored thinks and writes as he was influenced by the Jewish and Christian Prophets predictions. Although the novel cannot also convey the future with accuracy but merely imagine it as they would happen. Once again, kindly consider this work as fiction.

- The Author [1734 Christian Black 66] -

GITARA DE SAN MIGUEL

CHAPTER I

When the Spaniards arrived here in the Philippines they first settled in Cebu. I do not know the name of Cebu then but some say Sugbu, nevertheless it was made the capital by the Spaniards, the first capital of the Philippines. Together with the arrival of the Spaniards were their beliefs and cultures plus government and most importantly their faith or Christianity. In Christianity, the Spaniards propagated that God has only One Son and His Name is Jesus. He, according to the Spaniards, was the one to save the people from their sins. He was the Messiah, Messiah simply means Savior. They also propagated that He is also God for He is the only Son of God and that He and the God “are” the same.

But how did He came here in this world? There were instances when God comes down to earth. It was even recorded in the Holy Scriptures that was brought by the Spaniards. According to our Rajahs when God or gods descend they call it Avatara. Well, it simply means “God descended.”

But this Jesus Christ descended too from heaven in a different manner. How? The Spaniards told us that this Jesus Christ was incarnated. Meaning He has a human Mother and God as His Father. His Mother was a virgin when He was conceived and when He was born and all throughout her lifetime. But did God come physically to impregnate the virgin Mother of Jesus Christ? The answer is no, He was conceive through the power of the Holy Spirit. It was hard to know what is the Spirit and Holy Spirit at that. However the Rajahs have already given us ideas about the Spirit or spirits that was why the native Filipinos can immediately distinguish between supernatural and natural.

The Spaniards say that there was no urge of flesh when this Jesus Christ was born. Only that the Holy Spirit came down to the Virgin and then she conceived and gave birth after nine months to a Godchild. This Jesus Christ is different because He is God and yet Man although the proof of the matter was in His capabilities as Man or as God. According to their records in their Holy Scriptures, this Jesus Christ can make something extraordinary or more accurate something supernatural. For example, He made wine out of water in an instant. It was during a wedding in Cana [in Galilee in Judean Province of the Roman Empire] wherein the wine runs out and He has to intervene at the urging of His Mother so that those that were in the wedding banquet will not run out of wine and thus save the wedded couple from embarrassment.

They also say that this Jesus Christ taught in Galilee, a province or town in Judean province of the Roman Empire. There was even a record when this Jesus Christ feed multitudes of, around five thousand not counting women and children, people using only few pieces of bread and few pieces of fish. He made these multiplication of bread and fish. This happened not only once could even be twice of thrice. He was different from other

people. There is no man that can do that in our Kingdom. Although in the same book, there were called Prophets, who could feed multitudes, but this one can do it all. He feeds multitudes from supernaturally multiplying bread and fish. He raised the dead to life. This God-Man was doing signs that only He can do in His time. He also cured people who are ill. Those people who cannot see – He opened their eyes. Those who cannot hear – He opened their ears to hear. Those who cannot walk – He stretched their feet to walk. Even those who have difficulty with their arms He again stretched them to be able to handle. Those who were with mental illnesses He also cured. There was something extraordinary with this Man. Maybe He really should be called God-Man. Or we can truly call Him Son of God, but here in the Philippines we also are called sons of God. Is it difficult to be called son of God?

The only mind boggling thing that His people and co-religionist did to Him was that He was tasked to be killed. But why? While I was reading the Holy Scriptures of the Spaniards, I learned that this Jesus has an Old-Religion that their parents and old people follow. The question now was; 'Why did they, His people, not accept Him? Although when I continue to read their book, I realized that it was also written in their book that He will come and that He must be obeyed by all Israel. But as I have said He was not accepted, and there must be a reason for that. All the world have accepted Him as their God and Savior yet His Co-Religionist cannot not.

When this Jesus died, He was just dead for three days and two nights. He was resurrected thereafter; death has no hold over this Man. Then He remained on earth for forty days showing himself to His disciples. Then thereafter He ascended to heaven in the eyes of His disciples. And because it was said that He went to heaven there could really be heaven, that this heaven was a very happy place. Before He ascended to heaven, He reminded and instructed His disciples to propagate the Good News that is he and the coming Kingdom of God. Then after ten days of His ascension, meaning going up to heaven, the Holy Spirit or the Helper that He promised to them came down and rested on each of His disciples including His Mother. The Holy Spirit rested in them in the form of tongues of fire on their heads. And then, as the time goes by, it was said that this descend of the Holy Spirit was the birthday of the Church, the Spouse of the Son of Man or Son of God or the organization of believers.

As I continue to read the books which the priests brought here. I was shocked in regards to the hardships that His disciples underwent, from the hands of the Jews and many other nations beside them, they called them Martires in Spanish or Martyrs. They went to different parts of the world to proclaim the work and Good News of this Person, Jesus Christ. That God sent His Son to the world, that He was born, lived, underwent the passion of the cross, died, rose from the dead and then ascended; and then He will be back the second time to judge the living and the dead. All those who lived and died will rise from the dead and will be judged according to their conducts here in this world: good or bad. This is truly the Good news.

Until such time that the Good news came to the Capital of the Empire, Rome or broadly Italy and Europe, it did grow but slowly, for the faith was just located in Judea in its infancy, and from Rome it conquered the world one by one. The One that that propagated

the beliefs about this Jesus Christ is also called the Church, an organization of believers. It was extraordinary; because that propagation of this Religion by the Church was quite fast, people easily accepted the beliefs. There were also things that were attributed to the Church in Her history that She did things that were not good. But these accusations did not prohibit Her to expand Her beliefs and add members or for Her to fail as Church. According to what was written in the Holy Scriptures, the Gates of Death or the Abode of the Underworld cannot prevail over the Church. In truth, they say, it will be Death that will be defeated by this Church or the New Jerusalem or Heavenly Jerusalem.

Although it was not told, I mean, the wealth of the Church, the Church became very rich in Europe. She has lands, monasteries, the church edifices, collections of the work of arts, the schools and they have so much gold and monies. Although this richness is not the life of the Church or of the people inside of it or Her members. The One that they say that is the center of the life of the Church is the Eucharist or the praising, eating and drinking of the body and blood of Jesus Christ. Where does their wealth go? The truthful answer to this is in the continuing propagation of the faith through missions overseas. When some people see the Church as corrupt there came also the reforms.

In this reformation, there came the division of the members of the Church. There were members who bolted out of the Church. There once only one Church and only one faith but they became fragmented, and real divisions happened. German named Martin Luther started it all, there was also a man named John Calvin and there were many others. In the year 1054, the Church was split in two parts of territories: the Western Church or the Catholic Church and the Eastern Church or the Orthodox Church. There were small differences between the two but these could be set aside if they really want to be united. But in Theology, these small differences were wide in spirits world. The differences between Western and the Eastern Churches were few but the ones created by Martin Luther in Western Churches have changed the faith and beliefs in the Western World. It also paved the way for the growing of different churches. [You've probably asking, what is Western world? It is the Western Europe. And the East? The answer is Eastern Europe going down to the Middle East or sometimes simply the Near East and the Middle East.]

These differences in the Western world made it possible for other Churches to grow and it created competition among the faiths within Christianity. This also made it possible to become the biggest Faith denomination in the world, I mean Christianity as a whole. The places that the priest and the proselytes went into did not happen in the long years when the Church remained to be only one.

CHAPTER II

SPAIN 1519 YEAR OF OUR LORD

Ferdinand Magellan was putting things and provisions on the ships after the King of Spain allowed them to sail under the banner of the Spanish Crown. The mission of the voyage was to make a way to the sea going to the East of the Indians using the way of the sea of the West of Europe.

‘Have we many provisions and things on the ships for our voyage?’ Ferdinand Magellan solicited to his crew. ‘We need food and many other provisions like water so that we will last on the voyage at sea.’

Ferdinand Magellan was the Overall Captain of the Ships going to the East by way of the West. He also was Portuguese and not Spaniard.

‘Yes, Mr. Ferdinand Magellan, we have enough provisions for the length we estimated it to be. The truth is that we have enough wine and drinks for the voyage. There are also fishing nets and fishing hooks for our voyage. Our number on the five ships is two hundred and seventy people.

Ferdinand Magellan then replied to all the mariners: ‘Let us go, sailors, we are now going to sail!

Then Ferdinand Magellan shared his thoughts to his mariners at sea: ‘That is enough for many months of voyage and if truth be told we can sail for more than many years but that needs the skills of the mariners. Because we can only sail for few months since the provisions, in literal sense is unlike in the land, people there can immediately replenish food and other provisions. We can only bring so much for the complete voyage for many months. May God the Creator bless our voyage. It is good that we have with us some priests so that they can guide our souls while we are at sea. I am not saying it will happen but mutinies do happen at sea when voyage takes longer than expected. We have to be prepared for it.’

Father Pedro Valderrama told Ferdinand Magellan about the wines and the Eucharistic bread that they are bringing to their voyage. ‘Mr. Ferdinand Magellan we have enough provisions for the masses that we will be doing at sea while we are in voyage until such time that we reach an island or soil.’

Then Father Pedro Valderrama gave a mass for the five ships and then they christened the ships. The ships got the names: Trinidad [Trinity], San Antonio [Saint Anthony], Concepcion [Conception], Victoria [Victory] and Santiago [Saint James]. The ships were huge enough to carry the provisions and the mariners just like the ships of their

time. The ships were beautiful and they have sails and masts that were fully designed with insignias of Christian World, like crosses and the Lion passant and other symbols of the Spanish Empire.

Every ship has Captain and they were divided into groups. There were many races that sailed under the Spanish Flag. There were Germans, Portuguese, Spaniards, Greeks and French. There was notable absence of the English people because of the ongoing rivalry between the British and the Spaniards. The mariners have different languages but they can still communicate because there was the Universal Language at that time which was Spanish.

It reached five weeks voyage before the five ships reached out to Atlantic Ocean. This was west of Spain. I will write down some of the Captains of each ship: 1) Ferdinand Magellan on the ship Trinidad; 2) Juan de Cartagena on the ship San Antonio; 3) Gaspar de Quesada on the ship Concepcion; 4) Luis de Mendoza on the ship Victoria who includes Duarte Barbosa; and 5) Juan Serrano on the ship Santiago.

There were other notable names on the ships: 1) Juan Sebastian Elcano, who became Capitan General; Miguel de Rodas; Francisco Albo; Juan de Acurio; Martin de Judicibus; Hernando de Bustamante; Antonio Pigafetta – the official diary keeper while they were on the voyages.

The time runs slow for the mariners. They see nothing but water and water and water of the sea, while during the night they see stars in the sky. Sometimes they were enjoying the view of the seas especially when they were seeing many fish and other big sea animals. However, their minds were affected by being away from their families and friends; they also miss the life on the shore, the land and life on the cities. On September 20 they finally went out of the San Lucar de Barrameda. This was south of Spain and to its west was the Atlantic Ocean.

SUNDAY IN THE DAY OF CHRISTIANS

‘**B**rothers, today, we have to hear mass and call on the name of the Lord Jesus Christ so that He will take care of us in our voyage and the continuing voyages.

They did actually said mass while on sea and having their voyage. It was still satisfactory to know that there is God even on sea. They also brought with them a Bible to guide them during their voyages. But the difference was that, despite that the ocean was so wide and away from the land, there was still the presence of Satan or the Devil. The devils were not left on the soils of Spain they were with the crews of the ships, wherever the crews go there the devils also. Why is the world of spirits like this? Could there be mutiny while on voyage? Nevertheless, Ferdinand Magellan has said this even before they started to sail. Can we also say that the devil is also within the person or that the devils are with us? Questions but cannot be answered as of yet.

There were islands that Ferdinand Magellan and his group were able to pass and they came down to them but only to get provisions for the continuing voyages. The reason to that was that their mission was to find ocean route toward the east from the west route. On December 13, 1519, they reached South America in the lake of Janiero in Brazil. They were not able to leave this place immediately but they stayed for some days. Ferdinand Magellan knew that Brazil was a territory of the Portuguese, like him, that was why he brought the mariners in there.

The Christmas of 1519 came and two days after Christmas day, they again sailed toward the southwest of the oceans this time they were in the southern Atlantic Ocean. It was downwards of the earth if will be looked on in a map coming from the North of the earth or map. The thing that the Spanish Empire wanted to do was very difficult because there was nobody during that time that had done it, to travel east using the way of the west. However, this task was on the shoulders of Ferdinand Magellan who was an experienced mariner and the mariners who wanted to become rich by discovering new lands or territories. They want to keep the voyages going despite the very wide oceans.

THE PHILIPPINE ISLANDS 1521 YEAR OF OUR LORD

There were many things that were not written here but in brief Ferdinand Magellan and his crew were able to reach the islands of the Philippines in the West of Pacific Ocean. On March 16, 1521 Ferdinand Magellan and his mariners were able to reach the islands which eventually named Las Islas de Las Filipinas. Successors of Ferdinand Magellan named it after the king of Spain.

When Ferdinand Magellan landed in Humonhon Cebu on April 07, 1521, there were only about one hundred fifty mariners out of the two hundred and seventy. Here in Cebu that Ferdinand Magellan was able to talk to the Rajahs of Cebu, particularly Rajah Humabon and his Queen Reyna Hara Amihan. They accepted the Christian faith and they included in the faith were their subjects in their kingdom. The Christian name that Rajah Humabon took was Carlos and his wife took the name Juana. The Spaniards' the interpreter in the kingdom of Rajah Humabon was named Enrique, he was a native of the place.

Ferdinand Magellan and his mariners made a look into the islands and they were captivated by the islands' beauty. The waters in the islands were crystal clear the fish in the sea could be seen by naked eyes while swimming in the colorful corals. There were many living creatures in the colorful corals. And if they were to look at the sands, they were white and very fine. Then there were green plants all over the place, this was virgin forest according to the Spaniards. When they looked more into the green trees and plants, they can recognize that many were fruit bearing and can be eaten by people. Was this paradise, pristine like during the time of father Adam and Eve? Then when it was night, the sky was not dark especially when full moon and the stars were seen like little twinkling lamps.

There were animals too when the Spaniards arrived in the Philippines, but mostly chicken, carabaos, dogs and water buffalos. In addition, there were many other kinds of animals that the locals were taking care of like birds, squirrels and monkeys.

FIRST CHRISTIANS IN THE PHILIPPINES

Since there were priests among the mariners it was but natural that the Spaniards would want the locals to become Christians or particularly Catholics. The Cebuanos were the first ones who accepted the Catholic faith. The Spaniards told them that they should be saved from their sins by no less than the Savior, the Son of God. But the question was: 'Do the people here have sins that they should be saved from the wrath of God?' There were many good people and there were bad people among the locals. It was because of the existence of their local laws for those who do iniquity that we can surmise that there indeed good and bad people alike. If that was the case, the devils were also present among the locals, and here was where the Lord Jesus Christ came in. To save them from their sins so that they will not go to a place where there is everlasting fire. So eventually, the people of the islands accepted the Catholic faith and they underwent baptism for the forgiveness of sins.

The first mass or Eucharist celebration in the Philippines was held on Easter Sunday March 31, 1521. It was very much appropriate since the priest Father Pedro Valderrama was there. The people could not have known the meaning of the mass but the priest gave them enough lessons before they attended it. For example, they first accepted baptism. Then eventually the Spaniards gave a statue of Santo Niño [or statue of the Child Jesus] to the people of the islands particularly the people of Cebu.

Now, the mission of the priests was to make all the people of the islands Christians and to which the Spanish Empire was so amenable and conscientious. The intention of Rajah Humabon and Ferdinand Magellan were good and honorable however not all the people in the islands understood them. Then there were discussions as to how this would be approached that resulted into misunderstanding. Ferdinand Magellan together with some people decided to attack the other kingdom in the islands of Cebu in Mactan. The kingdom that was led by Datu Lapu-lapu an enemy of Rajah Humabon.

THE BATTLE AT MACTAN, CEBU

The Spaniards decided to attack the enemies of Rajah Carlos [Humabon]. The Spaniards then went down from their ships and dipped into the water off Mactan. The water was not so deep just enough below the waistline. But still away from the shores, the people of Datu Lapu-lapu, a local chieftain, immediately spotted them. The locals then decided to strike them with arrows, but since they were still far away, the arrows did not hit them. The arrows were short of their

intended targets. Then the Spaniards under the command of Ferdinand Magellan decided to engage the warriors led by Datu Lapu-lapu. While they were into fighting, the locals and their chieftain realized that it was Ferdinand Magellan who was the leader of the foreigners, in that instant the local warriors of Datu Lapu-lapu then decided to concentrate their forces on him and killed him. The locals were successful in killing Ferdinand Magellan. The Spaniards realized that they would be overwhelmed so they decided to return to their ships and return to the place of Rajah Humabon or Rajah Carlos.

It was not easy for the Spaniards to return to their ships since most locals still would want to continue to fight against them and Datu Lapu-lapu's men pursued them. It took sometime before the Spaniards were able to board their ships. The Spaniards were very much disappointed with what happened, but what could they do? They left the body of Ferdinand Magellan because they all ran for their lives until the body vanished from their sight. Antonio Pigafetta wrote these events in his diary.

Those who were lucky to be alive then continued to sail their ships, along their route way back to Spain, they decided to trade with the local people since they were trying to open a spice trade in this area of the world, Asia. Juan Sebastian Elcano eventually became the Captain General of their expedition back home and in 1522; his group was able to return to Spain with the ship Victoria.

IN DATU LAPU-LAPU'S PLACE

‘We’ve won in that fighting, said Datu Lapu-lapu, we were able to repel the invaders. However, there were also many of us who were killed and injured but despite these, most likely Rajah Humabon and Reyna Rajah Amihan would like to conform with us. Especially that we’ve won in the fighting.’

One of Datu Lapu-lapu's men then said to him, ‘We cannot tell for now Datu Lapu-lapu. Are they not in the Religion of the Spaniards? Right now, we have known that Rajah Humabon is called Carlos and his Queen is called Juana. They were named after the King of Spain and his Queen mother Juana. That were what we’ve known from our friends in their tribes.’

Datu Lapu-lapu then said, ‘That is also what I am thinking. Is there a chance that our tribe will be at peace and friendly with their tribes? If not, I will continue to make war with their tribes.’

MEANWHILE AT THE PLACE OF RAJAH HUMABON OR RAJAH CARLOS

They were dismayed to what happened. It was like a premonition to them that the God of Datu Lapu-lapu was greater in power than the God of the Spaniards. But because of the statue of Santo Niño that was given to Rajah

Carlos and Queen Juana, they were hoping that the Spaniards will come back and will live in these islands.

‘The Spaniards lose in that battle with Lapu-lapu, said Rajah Humabon now Rajah Carlos. Would it be time to have peace with the tribe of Datu Lapu-lapu since the Spaniards were gone? Rajah Carlos asked. ‘But I now believe in the Son of God because if we are not sinners why there is no peace in our place? Was it not evidence that inside of us we were sinners and need the peace and savior from these sins? Rajah Carlos asked.

Queen Hara Amihan or Juana answered Rajah Carlos, ‘It is true that we need to have peace agreement with the tribe of Datu Lapu-lapu but what about the blood compact we did with the Spaniards?’

THE BLOOD COMPACT BETWEEN SPANIARDS AND THE LOCALS

There was such thing as blood compact between the Spaniards and those people of Cebu, who became Christians, when the Spaniards landed in the island of Cebu and in Bohol. There was a ritual made for the blood compact, the blood compact of the gods and the magical people. Heaven knew that there would be progressive and positive results when it comes to this blood compact. The truth was that in the spirit world, heaven and earth awaited it. Does this mean that there were angels who waited for this to happen, this intercourse of civilization of the Spaniards and the local people of the islands? In that day, that the blood compact happened there was a sign from the sky, a very colorful rainbow. Although the two groups still do not know about the opposite parties’ languages, the rainbow in the sky told them something was blessed by heaven in regards to their blood compact. Their bloods were put in a wooden cup, and then they drink the blood of each other while the other part of the blood was burned as a sign of the Holy Spirit in Fire or for the locals their god Agni.

After the blood compact of the people of the islands and the Spaniards, they then prayed over the remaining blood and then they again continued the ritual. San Miguel and his group of angels were conscientiously watching these activities of the two groups. Then the angels led by San Miguel and San Gabriel went back to heaven and told the happenings on earth to God the Father and God the Son, Lord Jesus Christ.

IN HEAVEN IN THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

It was San Gabriel who reported the event, ‘Lord Jesus Christ, we are happy to report to you that the blood compact of the locals, that we have been looking after, and the Spaniards of Europe had already happened.’

Then the Lord Jesus Christ answered them but particularly to San Miguel Arkangel: ‘San Miguel, you will be the guide of the will be fruits of this blood compact. This will be the mirror of heaven and earth. The fruits of these blood compact will become the Maharlikha

of the islands; they will become the Rajahs and maybe the Datus. The children that they will bore will become the children of my Spouse whom they also will call, the Church. May the angels of My Father guide them into goodness.

THE FORTY-FOUR YEARS OF WAITING

The return of the Spaniards was given signs by heaven to the people of the islands. It was said to the them that forty-four rounds of sun and the Spaniards will return and many will stay in the islands to make sure that their blood compact and crossbreeding of the Spaniards and the locals will happen.

RAJAH CARLOS AND DATU LAPU-LAPU PEACE PACT

But that week, Rajah Carlos made a peace pact with the tribe of Datu Lapu-lapu. It has become a good peace agreement between the two. Then peace prevailed once more in the island although Rajah Carlos did not give up his Christian faith thereafter.

CHAPTER III

SPAIN 1522 YEAR OF OUR LORD

King Carlos was happy that there were mariners who were able to return to Spain and they were the following:

1. Juan Sebastian Elcano, from Getaria, Spain
2. Francisco Albo, from Rodas (Tui, Galicia)
3. Miguel de Rodas (Tui, Galicia)
4. Juan de Acurio, from Bermeo
5. Antonio Lombardo (pigafetta), Vicenza, Italy
6. Martin de Judicibus, from Genoa, Italya
7. Hernando de Bustamante, from Alcantara
8. Nicholas the Greek, of Nafplion
9. Miguel Sanchez, from Rodas (Tui, Galicia)
10. Antonio Hernandez Colmenero, Huelva
11. Francisco Rodrigues, Portuguese, Seville
12. Juan Rodriguez, Huelva
13. Diego Carmena, Baiona (Galicia)
14. Hans ng Aachen, (from The Holy Roman Empire: Germany)
15. Juan de Arratia, Bilbao
16. Vasco Gomez Gallego, Baiona (Galicia)
17. Juan de Santandres, Cueto (Cantabria)
18. Juan de Zubileta, Barakaldo

The king of Spain King Carlos and his mother Queen Juana called the Mariners to them. They gave a banquet in honor of the eighteen who were able to return. Many delicious foods were served them. There were wines and many other drinks so that they will forget the hardships of the voyages for a while. To know more about the voyages, King Carlos decided to sit and talk near Juan Sebastian Elcano and Antonio Pigafetta. They talked about many things especially about the voyages. There were good stories and there were some bad stories. But what prevailed was that it was now firmly known that the world was round. That the Europeans who were westerners can have a route towards the west south and be able to reach South East of the world, particularly the islands of the Philippines.

SPICES FROM THE SOUTH EAST

The truth that Juan Sebastian Elcano and the crew were able to reach the South East of the world was verified by the existence of spices that the mariners traded with the people along the way of their route back to Spain.

THE GUIDES OF THE MARINERS

‘What were your guides in the voyages that you have had made?’ King Carlos asked to the mariners.

The mariners then told the king that the sky was their guide: the sun, moon, stars, the winds and the animals in the sky. In fact, when they were able to reach South East Asia they realized that the world could really be round. In the south, they can see different constellations of stars in the sky but there remained one and the sun remain the same. These arrangements in the sky were not normal at that time because the sun appears to different areas of the world. For example in China, the sun appears to be rising from the south while in the South East Asia and in the Northern Hemisphere, the sun rises from the East. At first, the mariners did not know if the world or the water has an end but they continued and persisted in their undertaking. They brave everything so that they would become rich. They were moved by their desires to be rich - the riches that the world can give.

The route that Juan Sebastian Elcano took became the route that Spain created in the succeeding centuries that they voyage the oceans of Atlantic and the Pacific. And the spice trade that they opened became very lucrative for the Spanish Empire aside from the gold that they would eventually discover in the islands and other territories. The spice trade was the one that European powers were fighting, since before this time, they were at the hands of the Eastern people of the Middle East and Near East going to Europe and when the spices reached Europe, they were already very expensive. Now Spain was able to bypass the different intermediaries of spice trade.

CONVERSATION OF KING CARLOS AND THE MARINERS

King Carlos I talking to Juan Sebastian Elcano: ‘What can you say Mr. Juan Sebastian Elcano, would it be enough, I mean the stipend that the crown would be given your group? Yearly you will be given enough so that you will become richer and richer. In no time we will be taking the islands for ours and I want you to have a share in advance in regards to that.’

The mariners told the king that they first want to have a long rest and be with their families. They assured the king of Spain that it would remain secret for a while because as the king knows the composition of the mariners were from different countries. Then Juan Sebastian Elcano, told the king that ‘The people in the islands were mixed people. There

were Moreno or brown skinned, there were short, tall, there were Chinese – who were in islands trading things with the locals and Muslims, but most of all the people must be converted to Christianity. ‘

‘In that case, said King Carlos I, ‘we should return and have a good trade with them and eventually we can claim the islands as ours. That we will plan to do, but in the meantime we have to ask signs from heaven in regards the islands and when are we returning there.’

Juan Sebastian Elcano said to the King, ‘You are right in that case o King Carlos I, but I am not in a position to know all the things that happened in the voyage. It was Antonio Figafetta who knew more about what happened in our travels because he was our official diary man.’

Then King Carlos I and Antonio Figafetta talked about the voyages that they did. The King then was so elated with the stories of the official diary man. They even consulted the diary once in a while. The king then expressed to Antonio Figafetta that he would want Spain to return to those places. The banquet that started at noon ended up at midnight. There were many stories that the king and Antonio Figafetta talked about. The king asked Antonio Figafetta as to how they are going to earn a living in those places. Antonio Figafetta then said ‘We can continue the spice trade with them or we add other crops for export. While the people there are not knowledgeable about money and trading with money. They do not have material riches except that they were happy. They were affected by Hindu, animists and Muslim beliefs.

Those that have control over trading in the area were the Chinese in the northern part of some islands and the Muslims in the southern part.’

The king knew that they could get revenues from the islands if it became theirs. If the people of the islands do not know much about agriculture, they will create more for them and for Spain. He just hopes that Portugal will not go in the place and create another trouble for them - fighting in the seas for the possessions of the lands. Time will come when they will be able to control the spice trade.

Are the maize in Mexico can also be planted in those islands? But what Antonio Pigafetta said was that there were differences in the climate between the Southeast and the Northwest. The maize of the land west of Spain can be brought to the islands and find out if they would grow and bear fruit.

During that time, the Pope in Rome was Pope Hadrian VI, the head of the Catholic Church. He gave a message to the king of Spain and it immediately reached the king of Spain. The message was:

POPE'S LETTER TO THE KING OF THE SPANISH EMPIRE

Seal of the Vatican

October 1522
Vatican, Rome, Italy

Beloved King Carlos I,

Greetings of Peace and Love.

The Church prays that you are in good health and in the grace of our Lord. I am also giving a humble praise to Spanish Empire for its help in propagation of the Roman Catholic faith and the protection that it gives to the people of the Church.

Thank you very much for making me know the arrival of the ship that sailed to Southeast Asia led by Ferdinand Magellan that was now led by Captain General Juan Sebastian Elcano. Just like what you have said to me, I would also want to know what would be the possible role of the Church in this discovery of the islands, just like in Mexico.

In your previous letter, you are encouraging the Church to be with your empire in propagation of the faith and in making sure that the Empire remains strong.

But I would like to express my condolences to the family of Father Pedro Valderrama and other priests who, unfortunately, were not able to return. I would like to give due importance to the Spanish priests who died along the voyages that the Empire undertook.

Although it was indeed good news that the Empire was able to discover the route of west to east and that they were able to reach southeast and were able to return, it was proven then that the world was round.

I also would like to ask and confirm that Captain General Juan Sebastian Elcano was able to return the eighteen, including him, out of two hundred and seventy mariners. We have to give enough credit and importance to the sacrifices that the mariners had underwent, wishing to talk to Mr. Antonio Figafetta as well.

Yours truly,

Pope Hadrian VI
Rome, Italy

King Carlos I immediately answered and delivered it through their Embassy in Rome.

Seal of the Spanish Empire

October 1522
Empire of Spain

To My Beloved Pope Hadrian VI,

The Empire would like to greet you a pleasant day and good health.

The Empire is grateful for the successful voyage that we have had conducted under the guidance of our Lord Jesus Christ, although very few were able to return. Yes, they are eighteen. But this is still successful because we learned that the world is round and there are many lands west of our continent. This only means that we can still make the Empire wider and the reach of the Holy Mother the Catholic Church as well. Together we will work this out.

The Empire is hurt that only few are able to return. In the meantime, we would like to talk to the Cardinals and Bishops of our Empire so that we can iron out the things that we will be doing for our return voyage to the islands. In addition, our Dear Pope Hadrian VI, we would like to know what should we do with the bars of gold from the continent west of our Empire?

As regards your request to talk to Mr. Antonio Figafetta, I will send a letter to him and talk to him if he can go to Rome at your request. It will not be difficult for him because he is an Italian. Although I believe, it is appropriate that he be given rest for a while since their travel was quite tedious and long. It was not easy in regards to the experiences that they encountered at seas, oceans and to some unfriendly people of many different islands that they sailed into.

I will cut short this letter. The Empire would like to thank you for the blessings that you have given to the people of the Empire particularly Spain.

Yours truly,

King Carlos I
Empire of Spain

MR. ANTONIO FIGAFETTA

After several days, King Carlos I of Spain asked for Mr. Antonio Figafetta. He made it known to Mr. Antonio Figafetta that the Pope would want to talk to him in Rome. There are many things that the Pope wants to know about the voyages and he wants to hear it first-hand. Mr. Antonio Figafetta was also told that the Kingdom of Spain would be giving yearly stipend for the successful voyages that they have had conducted. 'For your heroism', the King of Spain said accordingly to the mariner.

After three weeks, Mr. Antonio Figafetta decided to go back to Italy. He knows that it will not be easy to go back to Italy this time because he is carrying large sum of money. Although, it would be much easier to return to Italy than voyaging the whole world - Italy was just few miles from Spain and the roads were already passable at this time. Besides, the lands that he will be traversing have available transportations. Unlike in the places that they went into, he mean, the oceans. They were purely water and they walk when down on the shores. Although going back to Italy means the robbers and other bandits on the road waiting for victims. This was similar in some areas of the oceans and seas when they encountered thieves. But sometimes the people and merchants would want to see soldiers along the roads, they feel safer than when they were not available on the roads for the travelers.

Mr. Antonio Figafetta was able to return to Italy but he felt like that he has not seen any substantial changes in the living standard of Italians. Although there were already difference when it came to the thinking of the people, especially for him who knew how to read and write. He knows that there was a change in beliefs of the people than some hundred years before. The new outlook or thinking called the renaissance. This was the time and thinking that the classics were better than what was vogue. There was great difference between them and the general thinking of the Christians. Even himself, he changed a lot and in his thinking, his reason was that the authorities were proven wrong, that the world was actually round.

What would the Pope say? Would he be honest with him so that he will tell what were his feelings and what was on his mind? He thought that perhaps the Pope would not take it personally when he tells the truth about the Church and about the things that were proven by the voyages. He also thinks that perhaps things were proven by the voyages and that there were many souls that can be saved if they return to the islands. Because, the people of the islands still believe in their Anitos, Diwatas, Ancestor Worship and many other gods. There was wild gulf between what the Church teaches and what the pagans believe. For example, the animists believe in the god of water, god of soil, god of fire and many other gods, while the Church believes in only one God.

Mr. Antonio Figafetta knew that there is only one God and these gods of the animists are no gods at all but could be the fallen angels and he knows that knowing the One true God should be taught to the gentiles. Besides, the Empire of Spain could gain enough wealth to continue its strong existence including the Roman Catholic Church that is in his land, Italy.

Mr. Antonio Figafetta knew that he no longer wants to have a say in regards to the next voyage that the Empire is contemplating or role in it. The first voyages that they did were very tedious enough and perhaps what he can do is to propagate the knowledge that he got from the voyages itself. He can write the diary into a book.

CHAPTER IV

THE AKASHA, MAGIC & LANGUAGE IN HEAVEN

Meanwhile in heaven

We can see San Miguel looking into the Akasha. Akasha or Akashic Records are the repository of knowledge and many other thoughts that humanity, angels and gods have emitted, Akasha knows the past, the present and the future. This is also what the Hindus called ether or the fifth of the classical elements. All the technologies that the people invented were taken from the thoughts of the Akasha. Akasha is the visitor of minds too.

It was San Miguel speaking to the Lord Jesus Christ: 'Lord Jesus Christ, kindly forgive your servant but I have looked into the Akasha, and it was revealed to us that we can now give the whole of the continent west of Spain to the Empire of Spain and to the Roman Catholic Church. I will also ask the Akasha to know the future of these nations and countries that will be made out of conquering the continent.'

'The Akasha is My whole Spirit and that is why there is nothing that is hidden from the Akasha or many Hindus called Akashic Records,' said the Lord Jesus Christ to San Miguel. 'My dear San Miguel, We, are almost the same for your name means, "Who is like God". 'That is the meaning of your name and your ways, your manners and thinking. The battle that you fought against Lucifer was not won by strength, but by humility that came from the Father of us all. The Akasha won it for you,' The Lord Jesus Christ explained to San Miguel.

'In that case my Lord Jesus Christ, what are we going to call the lands and continents that the people discovered west and south of their territory? I know we already have names for these territories in our Books, but are we going to give it to them, I mean the name that heaven gives? If we give them that names they will become Sacred,' San Miguel said to the Lord Jesus Christ.

"Everything is sacred to the sacred." 'But just like before, it was the people who named the places and things that are on their sight and thinking. Do you remember what happened to them in the first place that we allotted to them? Did not we let them name the places? If you give the names here in heaven, they will have magical effects to the people. Let us let them name the places,' the Lord Jesus Christ said to the angels who are in front of him.

'In that case who among the new discovered lands will inherit the magic of the angels like me? If I will become the Patron Archangel of the people of the Islands, I will be able to enter their minds and they also can enter into my consciousness. They will be able to taste and know that there are angels like me and that there is such thing as heaven even on earth,' San Miguel explained to the Lord Jesus Christ.

'The truth is already known to you my dear Archangel San Miguel, but I would like the islanders to know our place, here in heaven that we are just in their place, I mean the Holy Spirit. It will not be difficult for them to know us because they have eyes keen on spiritual things. Just do not let them know our language in heaven. The language of heaven must remain secured and hidden from the people of the earth even from the other spirits especially those that were fallen on earths,' the Lord Jesus Christ reminds to San Miguel.

San Miguel informed the Lord Jesus Christ, 'There were few people or races who know some of our languages here in heaven and they are there on many earths or planets. These are the people west of the European continent, the Germans, the Vikings; in the East are the Aryans, Greeks and the Hindus.'

'The Church knew these languages. Many of them studied these languages and they learned things about you, angelic beings. That is why they know that the language of heaven has magic for them,' explained the Lord Jesus Christ to the angels. 'I just do not want to happen what happened in the Tower of Babel. Did not the Father and you and many others with you went down and confused the language of the people? That is the reason, according the Bible, that they were scattered to all places in the world,' continued the Lord Jesus Christ. 'And it was what was written in the Holy Scriptures about the Tower of Babel:

THE TOWER OF BABEL

T*hroughout the earth men spoke the same language, with the same vocabulary. Now as they move eastwards they found a plain in the land of Shinar where they settled. They said to one Another. 'Come, let us make bricks and bake them in the fire'. - For the stone they used bricks, and for mortar they used bitumen, - Come, 'they said 'let us build ourselves a town and a tower with its top reaching heaven. Let us make a name for ourselves, so that we may not be scattered about the whole earth.'*

*'Now Yahweh came down to see the town and the tower that the sons of man had built. 'So they are all single people with single language!' said Yahweh. 'This is but the start of their undertakings! There will be nothing too hard for them to do. **Come let us go down (avatara)** and confuse their language on the spot so that they can no longer understand one another.'* Yahweh scattered them thence over the whole face of the earth, and they stopped building the town. It was named Babel therefore, because there Yahweh confused the language of the whole earth. it was from there that Yahweh scattered them over the whole face of the earth. - Genesis 11:1 – 9.

San Miguel continued to talk to the Lord Jesus Christ about the Akasha and about the recordings of the Holy Scriptures. 'The Akasha is also your Spirit, the ones who showed it to them. It was You, Lord Jesus Christ, who reveal to the Church our language and that is because they are pure in heart. They have the right to know our language here in heaven and be not like the ones that you shared to us from the Holy Scriptures, the confusion of the languages in the Tower of Babel. They are also the ones who try to study our language or us

as a whole. They call their study, **science of the Saints**. There are lots of people who study there on earth but not about You or the Holy Spirit, instead the things that are not necessary in going to heaven,' explained San Miguel to the Lord Jesus Christ. 'The short time that they stay on earth were wasted.'

VATICAN & ROME, ITALY

Mr. Antonio Figafetta arrived in Italy and stayed in his place for a while. Then he decided to go to Rome to be able to talk to the Pope. While he was in Rome, he realized how beautiful Rome and the Vatican were and these were in his nation, Italy. If he would think about it, Rome, Italy is not a new city. It is an old City stretching from near the classical times. The Capital of Italy has been long in existence. But if it would be compared to other cities in other areas of the world: Rome was quite young when paralleled to the likes of Alexandria in Egypt or other places in Babylon and Persia.

Being the capital city of Italy and of the Empire Rome, it became very beautiful during those times. The civilization of the Roman Empire was the Light of the World. The reason being, Rome makes the life of the people easier, and that many learning were in Rome. It was even during the time of the Lord Jesus Christ on earth – that Rome was the Empire in ascendancy. Rome was destroyed when the Visigoths and the Ostrogoths decided to invade and sacked Rome. The Goths spiritually supervised by God, destroyed the morally decadent City of Rome.

The Pope in Rome learned that Mr. Antonio Figafetta has already arrived in Rome. Immediately he asked for him. When Mr. Antonio Figafetta was already inside the Vatican, he was amazed at the luxury that was in the Vatican, meanwhile the parishioners were poor or would want to remain poor, while the Center of the Church was very rich. 'Is this like this in this world of the Church of Our Lord Jesus Christ?' Said he while he was waiting for the Pope.

Thence Mr. Antonio Figafetta looked into the vicinity and the inside of the edifices in the Vatican. He was amazed at the beautiful art masterpieces that were inside, the ceilings of the Churches and many other things. These art masterpieces were the mirrors and windows to the Western Civilization, their thoughts, manners and ways.

When the Pope finally went out, he saw Mr. Antonio Figafetta looking at the things that were inside the Church. He looked at the man for a while and then he wasted no time to break the silence.

'Mr. Antonio Figafetta, the arts are truly beautiful, are they not? The Pope asked Mr. Figafetta. 'Even me was amazed at their beauty,' the Pope to said Mr. Antonio Figafetta.

'Yes, our Dear Pope, but I also would like to say something about these expensive works of art. But I will not say what Judas Iscariot had said about

the expensive perfumes that were pour to our Lord Jesus Christ for His burial,' replied Mr. Antonio Figafetta.

Then the Pope spoke again: 'Mr. Antonio Figafetta, I also would like to know what are you thinking in regards to these expensive works of art? The Empire of Rome and of Christianity created the Western Civilization and continuously being built by the Spouse of the Lord Jesus Christ, the Church. These works of art show our way of life, our thinking, culture, norms and habits and these were also the memory of our civilization. The Church is in the position to protect the Western Civilization and made these works of great artists her wealth. Being one of the leaders here in this part of the World I have to do this.'

Then Mr. Antonio Figafetta spoke too, 'These works of arts must also be protected aside from the living Western Civilization and be considered treasures of our children or our children's children might not be able to see them and be retained in their memories.'

The Pope then appreciated what Mr. Antonio Figafetta said. Then he replied, 'Thank you for your understanding Mr. Antonio Figafetta, we can now talk.'

The Pope continued to ask Mr. Antonio Figafetta, 'What do you think will be the role of the Church in the islands that you have been into? Can the Empire of Spain get it?'

Mr. Antonio Figafetta replied, 'The role of the Church will be huge. The people I saw there were animists. They believe in their gods who are not God at all but could be fallen angels. They also believe in their ancestors who have long been dead. We need to introduce our Lord Jesus Christ to them the living God. There are also wealth in those islands like gold. They also have spices to make food delicious and many others that could be traded here in Europe or in China.'

'The Moors, I mean the Muslims are already in the islands. To them that we see that there will be misunderstandings and fighting just like Southeast of Europe, South of Spain and North Africa. It already happened and the result was the death of Ferdinand Magellan.

CHAPTER V

THE AMERICAN CONTINENT AND MEXICO

But in the meantime in the west of their kingdom the continent that was now called America which was discovered by Christopher Columbus in 1492 but was known more after the name of Amerigo Vespucci was having revolutionary events.

Then the Spaniards came into the place and started to build colonies. They created towns and barrios to the places that they stayed-in. There were already many people there in Mexico and they already had their own civilization although not as high like in Europe. And if we look into the material wealth, the locals of Mexico covet the wealth of the Spaniards.

With covet feeling of the Mexicans to the material wealth of the Spaniards, the foreigners then decided to start trading with the locals, but not only to trade, most importantly to assimilate with them. This assimilation was already known to heaven and they know that it will give progressiveness to the races that would be created. It would be the bloods of the Spaniards and the bloods of the Aztecs, together. The result would be immediate increase in demographics.

1519 IN MEXICO YEAR OF OUR LORD

The group of Hernan Cortes and the other local groups were fighting the Aztec empire. The fighting took about two years, and on August 13, 1521, Hernan Cortes defeated the forces of Aztecs. Hernan Cortes took the kingdom of Aztecs for the crown of Spain.

1522 IN MEXICO

Hernan Cortes then ordered the building of houses and government infrastructures so there could be government in the place. He was made the Governor General in the new created colony of Spain. He did his best to make the place prosperous and he did all he can to be a good administrator. When there were enough peace in the place the mingling of bloods of the foreigners and the locals then happened. There were many beautiful Aztecs and the Spaniards were good looking too that was why it was not hard for them to get in love with each race.

The love that has happened between the Aztecs and the Spaniards had fruits and they called the fruit Mestiza when female and called Mestizo when male. The fruits of these love

were somewhat beautiful than their roots. They were the “in between” of two races. Those that were from the North and those that were from the South. They were not fully Aztec but they were also not fully Spaniards. Well, in between. Just like the position of the Lord Jesus Christ, God-man [Heavenly and earthly or according to the Holy Scriptures: North (Heaven) and South (Earth)].

The Spaniards improved the agricultural techniques of the Aztecs, there was improvement in the production of maize because of it, there were also additional plants brought to Mexico like the sweet sugar cane and the wheat. They also domesticated and multiplied the animals that Mexico has and because of these activities, there were wealth created in Mexico.

The Spaniards and the Aztecs made efforts to have good community relationship. This could be seen in the created culture between them; the catholic culture of Spain but Mexican style. The Spanish language was also well embedded in the language of the locals. They love the language so much, together with the catholic religion. And this love for this Religion and the conversions that happened was made possible by the birth of a certain Juan Diego. The conversion of Mexico happened this way: The Mother of the Lord Jesus Christ visited Juan Diego and told him that she is the mother of the Lord Jesus Christ, the only Son of God. This apparition of the Woman made possible the total conversion of the whole people of Mexico to Catholicism.

Briefly, we can say that the events brought the conversions: First, the Apparition of the Lady of Guadalupe, as the visit of the Woman then was eventually called. Second, when the Catholic belief was once into some of the locals they held a catholic procession and while they were having the procession, an Aztec took a bow and arrow and shoot it to the people who were in the line. One person was hit in the neck and the blood oozed profusely, but immediately they prayed to the Our Lady of Guadalupe, the Woman of the apparition, and the injured person was saved. There the story went to places of Mexico and it eventually made possible the conversion of the whole of Mexico.

But that was not all, according to Juan Diego the woman reminded him that they, including the Bishop and the priest, should build a Church in the place where she showed herself. Thus the Church of Mexico blossomed.

However in every community not all were good and beautiful for the people and for the Mexicans. There were times when drought happens and even the irrigations that the Spaniards made, modeling the ones made in Europe particularly in Italy, were dry.

What the Spaniards made really good were the discoveries of gold mines in Mexico. When the Spaniards learnt of the existence of gold deposits in Mexico they lose no time and the immediately organized people to mine the gold. The truth was that the Aztecs do not know the uses of gold at that time. For them it was nothing but bodily ornaments. The Aztecs, while mining the gold, were happy and sad because of the hardships in axing the hard stones. Although were also happy because they have something to trade to the

Spaniards who seemed to have all the good things of the world. The ore of gold were then turned into bars of gold.

IN ONE PORT IN MEXICO

The Spaniards and the Aztecs were pulling the carts of gold to be put into the ships going to Mexico. The crates wherein the bars of gold where in were heavy. One person cannot pull a crate of gold bars, so they asked for more hands to have it put inside the ships and eventually to end in Spain and probably to the Vatican. To have enough space on the ships the mariners carefully arranged the crates to make sure that the ships were balance in weight distribution.

The gold bars carriers were careful so that the people who had no right to know it were not given information as to its locations. The Spanish mariners took care of this since in the seas there were many pirates of other nationalities.

After several years, the Aztecs decided to know as to the use of the gold to the Spaniards, and they realized that it has so much value in the continent of Europe, that people like it so much as ornaments and repository of value in economics. Some Aztecs went to Spain and looked into the civilization that the gold created. Spain is beautiful so they say and the Aztecs return to Mexico to create such type of civilization too. What was more, the Aztecs gave value to gold that they once neglected.

Now that the Aztecs had given value to the gold, the price of gold eventually shoot up a bit higher than previously and because of this the lives of the people that mined the gold had also improved but just a bit.

The wealth from the gold bars were not long hidden from different powers of Europe. They learned that the wealth of Spain came from gold mines in Mexico. This was the reason why other countries of Europe decided to have their own colonies in the west of the Atlantic Ocean. They thought that the catholic priests were having great interest in the mining of gold. Although, little they know that the priest were busy propagating the faith. The great help that they were able to do was the easier communication to the locals via the priests.

When the Spaniards in Mexico had been in there for forty-two years, reckoning from the time of Magellan, heaven decided to have them go to the islands that Ferdinand Magellan and his group once visited; the islands that are located in the Southeast Asia.

CHAPTER VI

IN HEAVEN: THE SON OF GOD WITH THE ANGELS

The Lord Jesus Christ was speaking: 'My beloved Archangel San Miguel, it is now time that the Spaniards should go back to the islands of the Maharlikhas, or the blue blooded. Kindly influence the minds of the Spaniards to go back to the islands.'

'Yes, My Lord Jesus Christ. Right away we will go down to Mexico to let the people know of your will,' San Miguel replied.

Carefully, the group of San Miguel went down to earth. They were careful because of the devils that were lurking and patrolling too, the earth. They went down silently and they have rain as cover for that. While they were in the colony of Mexico, they decided to go down as gods in the flesh. Then they talked to the government people of the colony. Archangel Camael showed himself to a guardia civil – a government guard officer in Mexico. What the government guard saw was a light north side of the building. Then immediately there was a whisper to his right ear, his guardian angel, who told him to look into the vision.

The rain continues to pour while the angels were inside the government building where the apparition was happening.

The government official then carefully went to the apparition. There were gods in the flesh, the angels in his front with wings folded at their backs. They all look good to behold. They were truly angelic, more beautiful than that of Spaniards or the Aztecs. Archangel Camael showed himself and he was wearing red with blue, his face and whole body were shining.

Archangel Camael then said to the guard: 'May the Lord Jesus Christ be with you.'

And because Roberto was able to hear the Name Jesus Christ, he realized that the angel is a Christian and he speaks Spanish. He got afraid of the apparition although he knew that there is no way evading the will of heaven.

'So it is true that Our Lord Jesus Christ is alive and true? May the Lord Jesus Christ bless you too. What can I do for the messenger of heaven?' Roberto replied.

In that instant, the angels then showed themselves to the guard so that the seven could be fully seen. Roberto was so amazed with what he was seeing. In addition, he was asked to leave for a while to call the government officers of Mexico and the priests near the place. It was before dawn of the day and continuously raining. The people whom the angel would want to be with were woken up from their sleep.

‘Come on our beloved Governor General, let’s hurry. The visitors from heaven would like to be with you. They also want Father Emmanuel Gettaria to celebrate the mass for all of us,’ Roberto said to the Governor General.

It was still raining outside at that time, the angels then transferred to the Church nearby and the Church was glowing in the presence of the angels. The Spaniards saw them and in that glorious condition that the Spaniards would want to kneel but the angels did not allow them.

San Miguel who talked to them, ‘Do not you know that you will, at the appointed time, become higher than us. So do not kneel down to us only to the Lord Jesus Christ.’

‘We want you to celebrate a mass for us all and it should be done in the Latin Language or Greek if you know, Hebrew the better,’ one of the angels said.

Along with the angels they celebrated the mass in the Latin language. While they were celebrating the mass it came to the gospel reading wherein the Devil was tempting the Lord Jesus Christ:

T*hen Jesus was led by the Spirit out into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil. He fasted for forty days and forty nights, after which he was very hungry, and the tempter came and said to him, ‘If you are the Son of God, tell these stones to turn into loaves.’ But Jesus replied, ‘Scriptures says:*

*Man does not live on bread alone
but by every word that comes from the mouth of God.
Matthew 4: 1 – 4.*

When the priest said those words then the place illumined more brighter than before.

When the mass came into the singing and the giving of peace, the Spaniards could not understand the sensation that they were feeling. The angels sing so beautifully and while they were singing they have had a guitar with them. The guitar that they left to the Spaniards and the Spaniards called it Guitara de San Miguel. When it came to the breaking of the bread, the angels ate the body of our Lord Jesus Christ too. When they had finished the Eucharist the angels told them that they too eat since in the Holy Scriptures it was written:

H*e gave orders to the skies above,
He opened the doors of heaven,
He rained down manna to feed them,
He gave them wheat of heaven;
men ate the bread of Immortals [Angels],
He sent them more food than they could eat. – Psalm 78: 23 -25*

‘A good part of our food,’ San Miguel said, ‘are the words that came from the lips of our Lord.’

The Spaniards gave some more food and the angels ate them then said goodbye to them. The Guitara de San Miguel remained in the Church of Mexico because that was the reminder to them by the angels. The rain continues to pour and at this time it was bucketing, thus the people of Mexico did not go out and did not learn about the descent of the seven angels. The rain became the cover of the angels who came down and it was effective in making sure that the demons on earth would not see them.

But before the angels finally ascend, one of the Spaniards asked why it needs rain before they descend that dawn? It was Archangel Camael who answered: ‘The rain become our cover to the times like this. People do not see us much when it was raining. And the devils were afraid of water. Devils want the desert places. Do not you remember the Lord Jesus Christ whenever you eat or take a bath? Water is the element that the Lord Jesus Christ used much when he was still on earth. Do not wonder because all of us, seven, knew how to use this element. Do not you remember the River Jordan or the Wine at Cana?’

ON THE RETURN OF THE UNCLEAN SPIRIT

‘When an unclean spirit goes out of a man it wanders through waterless country looking for a place to rest, and not finding one it says, “I will go back to the home I came from”. But on arrival, finding it swept and tidied, it then goes off and brings seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and set up house there, so that the man ends up by being worse than he was before.’

- Luke 11: 24 – 26

When the angels were gone, the Spaniards then returned to each assigned homes. And because of this, the Governor General gave strict order to them that they should go to his office and they will eat there while they will talk about the matter.

LUNCH TIME AT THE PLACE OF THE GOVERNOR GENERAL

The Governor General called on his civil servants and they talked about what happened on the dawn of the day. Why there were seven who came down? Well, according to what was written there were seven before the throne of God but it was seldom that they come down, only on very important matters:

‘I am Rafael, one of the seven angels who stand ever ready to enter the presence of the glory of the Lord.’ – Tobit 12: 15

Then the Governor General decided that the Empire of Spain should know of the matter:

‘We need to let the Kingdom know of what happened here, about the descend of the seven angels. This should not be set aside or leave for tomorrow before we run out of time.’

Everybody agreed to what the Governor General said to them. Immediately it made a letter addressed to the King of Spain, King Felipe. They also decided to send those who saw the descend of the angels, they were three of them as witnesses to the King of Spain. That very same week they sailed for Spain together with the three. The angels they say would want Spain to return to the islands that were once visited by Ferdinand Magellan. The first reminder of heaven was to make sure that the islanders should become Christians and that the blood compact should be pursued, the mingling of bloods of the foreigners and the locals – cross breeding of races, to become the Maharlikhas.

Roberto was talking to Raul and Felipe: ‘We need to be able to explain this thing to the beloved King, so that the will of heaven will happen, in Mexico, people here are Christians so islanders also must be.’

Then Raul replied, ‘In that case we have to be in a hurry so that we can save time. Are the provisions for the voyage to Spain enough? Come on sailors to the ship so that we can start our voyage.’

It took them two months of voyage before they were able to reach the place of Spain. The mission was prompt and they went to the palace in Madrid.

CHAPTER VII

SPAIN 1564 YEAR OF OUR LORD

IN THE PALACE OF KING FELIPE

Raul was talking to a minister: 'Mr. Minister, we would like you to know what happened to Mexico, it was a supernatural thing. In our mind, we believe that you would be wondering as to why we are here. In Mexico, angels from heaven visited us. If you will allow we will tell the whole story.'

The minister of King Felipe then replied: 'What are your proofs that you were visited by angels? Are there things that can show the proof of visitation? There are lots of people who say that they are visited by supernatural beings. But where are the proofs? We were also visited in the mind but those in the flesh seldom visit us and the last ones that were recorded were during the time of Our Lady and of Our Lord Jesus Christ and the time of the early Church.'

Then Raul continued to spoke up to convince the minister: 'We have a proof, Mr. Minister, of something that came from the angels. The Guitara de San Miguel was left to us but there was a reminder that the guitar should remain in Mexico.'

THE GUITARA DE SAN MIGUEL

Then Roberto, Raul and Felipe showed the guitar that was left to them by the angels at Mexico. In no time, the Minister was convinced because of what he saw in the guitar. The Guitara de San Miguel was extraordinary.

'It is a truth that the make of this guitar was extraordinary. Here in Spain I can see nothing like it or maybe this was just something ordinary in Mexico?' the Minister asked.

'To test the matter, it will be better for us to call someone who knows playing guitar. We are not personally interested in this Guitara de San Miguel, instead we are more interested in the message that the angels had given us.'

The Minister instantly asked for someone who knew how to play guitar so that they will find out the truth about the Guitara de San Miguel. And they called on David Uriarte. After which those who came from Mexico showed him the Guitara de San Miguel. David Uriarte was amazed at the beautiful guitar that was handed over to him.

David Uriarte then made a favorable comment: 'There is no guitar as beautiful as this in this continent even in the East or Middle East. I will try to play and pluck this guitar. For it was said that the origin of guitars where from the Middle East.'

David then played the guitar from heaven and it was indeed true that the vibrations it was emitting were truly pleasurable to the ears, the people listening were being carried to heaven in every note that it emits. The minister was also amazed and he told to himself that: 'Could this be the sound of heaven?' The Minister decided to bring the three to the King's presence because he heard the sound of the guitar.

The Minister then decided to talk to the King of Spain: 'Our beloved King Felipe, there were those who came from the colony, in Mexico, and they brought good news for us. This is about the other islands and lands that we could have. There were angelic visitors to them at Mexico and we were given task to go immediately to the place in Southeast Asia to the islands that once visited by Portuguese explorer Ferdinand Magellan who was commissioned by late King Carlos I and Queen Juana of the Empire of Spain.

The King right there in then was convinced that Spain will go to the islands.

Then King Felipe was able to say this to the people in front of him: 'Is this how generous is our Lord Jesus Christ to His Kingdom here on Earth? That He would want to expand it more down to the Southeast Asia.

He did not think much but immediately he made an order for the sailing to Southeast Asia and be able to return to the islands promptly. The Minister was given order to do action on the said matter.

Immediately the three who brought the Guitara de San Miguel made preparations to be back to Mexico. This time it will not only be one ship but ten ships went to Mexico while the five will continue toward the Southeast. As natural in the voyage, the three were the leaders. But before they go, the minister asked for the guitar but to this that the three disagreed. It was reminded them that the Guitara de San Miguel will remain in Mexico. It should not be lost as a property of the Church of Mexico.

When they reached Mexico, they promptly went to the Governor General bringing the order of the King to set sail for Southeast Asia - the one that Ferdinand Magellan set foot into. They have to bring many sailors and there they will remain in the island or that the island will be administered from Mexico.

The Governor General said to his subjects, 'We know four what happened here in Mexico and this must be put on the records. But this will remain a State secret and a Church secret for us.'

To this Felipe agreed, 'You're quite right beloved Governor General, this must be put on the records of the Church and State here in Mexico.' But he continued with a question: 'And to whom should the Guitara de San Miguel be entrusted?' However, he answered his own question; he immediately suggested that the Guitara de San Miguel be given to the Church for proper safekeeping.

Priest Nicanor Calicia received the guitar from the four, "Thank you very much our beloved Governor General, thank you for the trust that you have given the Church. The Church of Mexico will have custody of it and the guitarra de San Miguel must remain in here.

After sometime, the ships then decided to sail toward the islands in the Southeast Asia. Governor General Miguel Lopez de Legaspi led the expedition and the first ship in front that was guiding the voyage was Captained by Andres de Urdaneta.

There were about four ships; it was decided then instead of five that sailed to the islands. There were about five hundred men on the ships. It took them around five months or more before they reached their destination. When they arrived in the Philippines, they anchored in Cebu then eventually they went to the island of Bohol. These happenings were written in heaven. Again, they made a blood compact in Bohol. Then heaven glorified God for the perfection of the prophecies in Akasha that exactly after forty-four years the Spaniards will return.

CHAPTER VIII

IN HEAVEN

San Miguel reporting to the Lord Jesus Christ, 'My Lord Jesus Christ, the bloods of the Spaniards and the Maharlikhas have again joined.'

'It only means that My spouse will have children here, I mean Spouse the Church. There will be fulfillment that after I prohibited the preaching in Asia, these islands will be the bastion of My Name. Unlike those Churches that were gone in the Near East,' The Lord Jesus Christ explained. Since it was written in the Holy Scriptures:

[THE CROSSING TO ASIA MINOR]

They travelled to Phrygia and the Galatian country, ***having been told by the Holy Spirit not to preach the word in Asia.*** – Acts of the Apostles 16:6

There was a second battle in Cebu but this time the Spaniards won against the locals and this time a real obliteration of the locals to break their morale. Then the Spaniards started to conquer the whole islands. They then named it Las Islas de Las Filipinas or the Islands of the Philippines [after the name of the Spanish King Felipe]. Moreover, the first Philippine Church was established in Cebu. That very same day a rock of the Church was put in place in Cebu Church edifice.

Still in heaven, the Lord Jesus Christ then uttered these words: ***'Here in this area of Asia that the My Name will be made above every other name. And here too that the Maharlikhas will be the governing people.*** Also the Church will reign here. Those that will own the islands are the offspring of the Maharlikhas. Why? Are there others who have the right to be here in these islands? Only them and no other. The Spaniards will come and they will add more of their likes here and they will interbreed with the Maharlikhas, the noble ones of the islands.'

San Miguel then said to the Lord Jesus Christ that they would now go down to see to it that all is fine in regards to the interbreeding of the Spaniards and the locals.

'You go down and go up immediately. I would want that the male children of the islands to grow up in San Miguel's group care,' the Lord Jesus Christ said.

Promptly San Miguel and his group went down and gave the foreigners and the locals the magic of love for each other so that the children will immediately be brought forth. As well as in Mexico, they were called Mestizos and Mestizas. The fruits of these were different from them but they look better than their parents. ***These children of the Church were not very good in exploiting opportunities from other people.*** They were blind and

innocent in regards to the world. What they have were the beauty that came from their parents although these were not the measurement of heaven.

INTERBREEDING OF SPANIARDS AND THE LOCALS

Because of the interbreeding of those races the Church immediately reached the other places of the Philippines or may be the other way around. As to which is which, only the results were important. Then they immediately look for gold in the Philippines. As they got more wealth from the Philippines, His Spouse allotted this to their children in the Philippines.

The firsts to be born among the intercourse of Natives and Spaniards were called Mestizos and Mestizas. Meaning crossbreeds of local and foreign people. They were good to look at and they have different countenance than their parents. Should they be called the children of the angels and daughters of men?

If they were to be described, their skin was not hairy unlike their European forebears. Their eyes were usually black and their hair usually black also. They grew tall; almost the same as their fathers, if European, or more beautiful than their mothers, when locals. Eventually the meaning of Diwata became more understandable to local Filipinos for they associated the person to the beauty they were experiencing among the mestizas.

MINING OF GOLD IN THE PHILIPPINES

It was in Cagayan de Oro where the Spaniards promptly started to mine the gold in the Philippines. There were also mining activities in Samar, Masbate and Panay islands.

The mining of gold and its uses did not stay within the Philippines. They usually ended in Spain. Not that there were nothing that remained in the Philippines, the fact is that Spanish authorities of that time have to retain some gold and silver for establishing the Philippine economy.

THE ANGELS

‘I think we should go up now to heaven. We have seen now the fruits of our efforts. These people will be a light for their people here in the South and light for their ascendants there in the North. In both ways, we have married Heaven and Earth,’ Saint Gabriel the Archangel said to his co-princes archangels and angels.

Instantaneously, they were back to heaven. But San Miguel promised that from time to time he would go down to earth to see what of their progress. Through their subtle ways,

the angels were able to teach the people of the islands the techniques of the gods and the Europeans taught their children and the people of the islands their skills.

THE YIN AND THE YANG

The Chinese have a language term for the phenomenon they were now seeing in the islands. They called the Church Yin [Earth or Tiger], while the Civil Government Yang [Heaven or Dragon]. It was not easy for the Europeans and the Filipinos to understand the meaning of the two Philosophies since the Church stayed as it was; with being Orthodox in Her beliefs about Her and Jesus Christ.

THE YIN AND THE YANG

From the European, Hindu, Malay and Chinese forebears; to them were born twin sons, children of the people of Cebu. One took the road of the Church while the other one took the road of being civil servant. However, the situation in the islands were not easy. If there were mestizos and mestizas of Spanish origin there were also Chinese mestizos and Chinese mestizas. Both were of fair skin and not hairy but these Chinese mestizos were keen in business than their European counterparts, after several years of cultural intercourse the sharpness of the Chinese in business has become apparent.

The first to be born between the twins was Juancho and the second to be born was Juan Miguel. Juancho was named after Saint John while Juan Miguel was named after Saint John and Saint Michael. Juancho and Juan Miguel grew up together and they were fond of each other. But as they grew up one of the twins became closer to his mother while the other one was closer to his father. As usual, almost Biblical in story, eventually there comes competition between the twins. Although the one who took the civil government service becomes more intense in competing than the one who took the Church as his path of choice.

The twins grew up to become lads and there come to a point when they fall in love with the same girl. It was not easy though at the start but the competition did not become intense. The girl was Selena also a Mestiza.

CHURCH & DIWATA

Ricardo one of the locals said to the twins: 'Is not Selena a representative of Diwata for she's beautiful, that is what we have known about the Diwatas here. Old people of the islands say Diwatas are beautiful, they are fair skinned and they protect the people and other inhabitants of the islands including the forests, rivers and seas and the mountains and plains.'

The twins said: 'Yes, she's a Diwata for she came not from far-away place just to be here. Meaning, her forebears or at least a forebear is original of these islands then a foreigner also is her forebear. As we learnt from you locals, she can be rightly called Diwata.'

'What about your Church or our Church. Why do you call her a she? Is She also our Diwata? Ricardo asked.

Juan Miguel answered, 'As it seemed she's truly a Diwata. As regards to your inquiry whether She's our Church? She can truly be our Church since all Ladies for that matter are Churches of different sorts.'

At first, Juancho cannot relate, 'I don't understand the Church side of Diwata?'

'My twin, in the Holy Scriptures, it is said that the Church is the Spouse of our Lord Jesus Christ that is why She is rightly called a She and the Church or a Church. She is the Wisdom of Our Lord while the Lord is also our Wisdom,' Juan Miguel explained to the two.

'Do you think it is necessary to learn that the Church is a Diwata or that She is Our Lord's Spouse? Juancho asked.

Juan Miguel explained again, 'It is. It is difficult to understand but they have practical value. Or if you understand it, you learn that She, the Church, is also like us although the true Jerusalem our Mother is in Heaven and a Spirit or what do we call the Bride.'

'Is it necessary? Juancho asked. 'You just have to live a straight life and all that there is to it.'

Juan Miguel and Ricardo: 'We agree. Just live a straight life and all will be well with the person. If we want more than that, it's up to the person,' continued the two friends.

After the conversation the three decided to go home for they were in a river at that time. It was already late in the afternoon when they decided to go home.

RIVERS, SEAS AND THE LANDS

The river was wide, about one hundred meters wide and the water was crystal clear since stones can be seen underneath the water. Beside the river were trees and some tall grasses. As they go home, they now realize how beautiful the place has become. They now see the plants that the Spaniards have planted. They were in rows and all fruit bearing. There were other plants that were flower bearing.

The Spaniards became the landed aristocracy in the Philippines for the locals do not know how to give value to the lands that were untilled. The Spaniards decided to give most of their time in making other stuff for market purposes and they planted sugarcane and abaca for sea market. But it was the locals who decided to plant rice and other rice like plants. But there was something in the islands that the other rice-planting people do not have, the glutinous rice. This glutinous rice was really good and tasty though yield not much. The locals call it 'malagkit' for sticky/glutinous or gelatinous. From this malagkit that they do their rice cakes with sugar or molasses from sugarcane.

The place of the Spaniards and the other elites were secluded from the other inhabitants of the islands by ways of walls. Their houses and other way of living, their daily lives, were done inside the walls. These walled cities were near the sea or river edge since the Spaniards came from the sea and that they do their commerce near the sea edge and for distant commerce, they also do it by sea. Just like in Spain and Mexico then Mexico and the Philippines.

According to writers and historians, people usually live near the waters, either rivers or seas because it is the source of their livelihood and many other things. Water is also vital in human survival, especially water as a source of fluids for humans bodies. Why water as source of livelihood? The answer is simply because the people living near the sea or rivers harvest the fish, edible plants and other living species under it.

Outside of the walls where other people were: the locals and the Chinese, while the local chieftains enjoyed many privileges from the rule of the Spaniards.

Juan Miguel to their mother, 'Mama, what would we become me and Jauncho? Do you think we will become successful here than what our father is telling us about Spain? I mean, materially speaking. Are the lands that we have ours? Look, I do not look like the local people. They own the lands they were here first.'

'Juan Miguel, you have to understand that I am a local just like them. We own the lands as much as my people own the lands. While your father and I are in love, we also know that our children can claim the lands because you have local bloods. Do you remember the Blood Compact they accomplished when they landed in the island of Bohol? That is what it meant my son,' Monica said to Juan Miguel.

'Or I just have a claim half of what the locals can claim?' Juan Miguel respectfully replied to his mother. He is still in the quandary in regards to his status.

'No my son, you are a Filipino just like others. You have a claim to be a descendant of Spaniards like others. You have the best of both worlds. What you are now, age fourteen? Yes, you now have the world for the taking. You can become ambitious and become rich. Or you can stay in the Church and serve our Lord,' Monica explained to Juan Miguel her favorite of the twins.

'I would want to serve the Church.' Said Juan Miguel but although still unsure.

'My son, I do not know much about the Church but I would want to know more about Her, the belief that the Spaniards have brought here. For sure that Our Lord Jesus Christ has good things to say about His Spouse. Besides, He did not live us orphans. He left the Holy Spirit to us. Remember Bathala? He is the Creator and that we locals know and the Spaniards accepted Him as the same Father that Our Lord has. The question is: Is Bathala and Our Lord the same? The answer is, yes. That is the function of the Spirit. That is why we have many Saints, with the capital S. The Indians and the Rajahs here know it. They brought Bathala to us,' Monica explained to her son Juan Miguel.

'They say that the Lord Jesus Christ is the Father of the grandfather? If the grandfather is the grandchild it is then true that Our Lord Jesus Christ is the Father of the Grandfather,' Juan Miguel explained.

'How do you know such thing, about the grandfather and our Lord Jesus Christ?' Monica questioned to her son.

'The Baybayin script, when we write down the name of Bathala and we read it, it reads, Batahala, meaning, the Creator. He is the bata or the child,' Juan Miguel explained.

'Ah, it is then well my child. By the way, your father wants you to check on the cattle that were brought here. You have to see them and find out if you can take care of them. Clear?' Monica commanded to her child.

'I have seen some of cattle but I wish to take care of just few. I will let others take care of the rest. Three the most,' Juan Miguel replied to his mother.

'Well, good then. You will take care of some of the cattle. I would suggest you take care of around three cows so that it will multiply under your care,' His mother said.

'How do they multiply? Animals multiply just like human beings do?' Juan Miguel asked to his mother.

'Yes my child. It will take nine moon rounds then a calf is brought forth into the world. It will wean to its mother for about two years then it will go on its own. You will then take care of it like an adult cow,' his mother explained.

Just before dinner, Juancho came to their mother and requested her for a dinner. It was about time for dinner, although the light of the sun was still visible outside because it was summer. The chirping of cicadas can be heard and it made enough noise to know that it was about time to go to bed and sleep.

Cebu is such a good place teeming with fruit bearing trees and animals, chicken, pigs and boars, dogs and cats. It took time before the pigs and boars became acceptable to some

Filipinos because they were converts from Islam. Many who became Christians were from animist beliefs and from the Tagalogs up North of the islands who have some semblance of Hindu beliefs. It was easier for them to accept the Lord Jesus Christ because of acceptance of the Spaniards of Bathala too.

'Juancho, could you also look about the cattle that your father has brought here. He wants you two to take care of them. Juan Miguel has already pledge that he will take care of at least three cows,' said Monica to Juancho lovingly.

'I will go tomorrow when the sun breaks,' replied Juancho with respect.

After the short answer, Juancho and his family eat their dinner and went to bed for the night. Outside their home the existence of evening beauty became apparent as clouds were very thin. The moon was almost full while the stars were shining light like little lamps in the sky. Some stars were near while others seemed to be very far but just the same they gave white lights. The trees and other animals were visible. The cattle were chewing their cud while others were simply asleep. 'Could this be the scene during the Nativity of Our Lord Jesus Christ? It was a beautiful Creation, the universe,' Juancho said to himself.

Inside their home the family of the twins were now fast asleep, there were no lamps that were lit. The darkness was all they have to contend but it was actually good when taking sleep and rest at night. There were simple beds and the twins have their own beds too. There were no animals inside or below the house unlike what the locals have. The Spanish type homes were imported realities from the West where their father comes. So the idea was to separate the home from trade houses or commercial activities. Spaniards brought these customs to the islands.

Then the cocks crow. It was time to work the day. First, water the plants and then feed the animals. The twins were happy doing their chores at their farm. Their father has, from trading in the market place, abaca ropes for the cattle. Although they have a ranch for the cattle, some were still being tied to long ropes so that they cannot go much from other cattle.

Now it is time to go home and eat their breakfast. The foods that they have were from the farm that they have, milk from cows, eggs from their chicken and white cheese from left over milk. Rice comes from trading with the locals and other places other than from the islands.

'Miguel, come on let us eat our breakfast. For sure there would be egg, meat or fish, boiled rice and milk on the table,' Juancho said to his brother happily.

'Yes, I am also a bit famished. Let us eat so that we can also take our rest,' replied Juan Miguel

At age sixteen, the twins were taller and bigger than their counterparts. Ricardo, although, is much taller than them. He also has darker skin than the twins. Ricardo anyway,

is not their brother. He is from a local rich family with lots of animals and large rice farm operations in Cebu.

Ricardo is typical of Filipino Malay that is the equivalent of the Maharlikhas' Mandirigma [or Warrior caste with its equivalent in Hindu Kshatriyas]. Kshatriyas is where the Disciple of Krishna came from and his name is Arjuna.

CHAPTER IX

NATION BUILDING BEING DONE BY THE SPANIARDS

But what now 18th Century? Well, just the same for them, the development has been slow since the place was far from Spain. The climate made the activities more sweltering than what you will expend in Europe for the activities that you will do here. Nevertheless, since they came from well off place the tendency was to achieve the same standard of living that the mother country has. One by one, the conquerors were uniting the islands into one nation. But there were difficulties downward southwest of the islands. Muslims were there. They do not want conversion to Christianity, they would want independence from Christian rule, but the Muslims were also divided among themselves since they were clannish by disposition. The Muslims have a trading system and connection downward south of the islands including Sabah and Borneo and that made them somewhat independent.

Despite having low population that the nation the Spaniards was building was growing in economic activities and the unity from south to north was slowly being achieved. However the Roman Catholic Church carried most of the jobs in creating the national unity through conversion to Christianity. The Priests of the Church were in forefront of uniting the nation. As the Church in the Islands was growing, so thus the penetration of civil authorities.

The Spaniards copied the European style government and implemented it in the blossoming nation. As the population of the Spaniards and the Mestizos grow in the nation so thus the national consciousness of the Filipinos, from south to north. After sometime the capital was transferred from Cebu to Manila. Tagalogs then of Luzon have become the ascendant ethnic groups in the islands. The Spaniards have observed that the Tagalogs were rich in material sense. They also have good disposition in regards to their local authorities. Though some resent the way the Spaniards carried their governance.

EDUCATION IN THE COLONY

The twins got their education from their father and mother but more from their mother who remains at home to take care of everyday duties. There was established education but this was more on religion and governance. Practical stuff like growing animals and plants were not much in the offerings of the Spanish government though in Europe they have been advance in regards to these topics and activities.

In Europe they already have big cities while the Islands remain a rural place. The capital Manila was being made into a city yet not that fast. There were universities in

Europe while the Islands need more. There was one established in Manila, the capital, the Universidad de Santo Tomas. It was established in 1611. While in the South in Cebu is Colegio de San Ildefonso.

The twins then attended Colegio de San Ildefonso when they reached the age seventeen. From this time on they have to use their mind more than their physical prowess. The twins stand around six feet tall slender and now they were more brown than white like the rest of the Mestizos and Mestizas. Their clan decided to mingle with rest of the people of the Islands or it was a choice to remain in the islands than leave. Perhaps, it was already decided by heaven that they should remain in the islands.

JUAN MIGUEL AND SAN MIGUEL

One time when Juan Miguel was studying while in a dormitory, San Miguel Arkanghel showed himself to the lad via a light that comes from the windows. He talked to Juan Miguel not via the voice but through the intellect. Juan Miguel recognized that an archangel was talking to him.

‘Juan Miguel, do not be afraid, it is I, San Miguel Arkanghel talking to you. I have been your guide since you were young together with the personal guardian angel of your twin brother Juancho. My message to you is this, ‘There is Guitara de San Miguel in Mexico. Try to find it and know then that when it exists the angels exist and Heaven exists and the Lord Jesus Christ is real.’

‘Where would I start to look?’ Juan Miguel asked the Archangel.

‘Try to communicate to your local Church and to Mexico’s Church. There you will find the Guitara de San Miguel. However before you go there, practice your guitar skills and find out the difference between the guitars. May the Lord be with you,’ San Miguel reminds Juan Miguel.

‘But of course, I have to finish my studies first before I go to Mexico? I have to fulfill my duty to my parents also?’ Juan Miguel begged to the archangel.

San Miguel, ‘Yes, be practical too. Then do the will of Heaven. The will of your parents for you is the will of heaven too. But always remember, it is the Lord Jesus Christ who must be obeyed at the end, farewell my friend. I have to return to heaven but I am always seeing you and seeing the Father. With regard how it happens, it is a secret of heaven that you are about to discover.’

In an instant San Miguel Arkanghel was vanished from the place. This was the way of angels. They can show themselves in the flesh, or they can communicate in the intellect or they can send messages and communicate via natural phenomenon such as dancing lights, weather, the classical elements, etc...

Just in an instant that San Miguel vanished here comes Juancho.

'Miguel, we have been looking for you. Where have you been?' Juancho asked to his twin brother who has just experienced an angel's apparition.

'San Miguel Arkanghel showed himself to me and told me to go to Mexico. And find something,' Juan Miguel share to his twin brother.

'You know brother, I believe in angels but not that they will show themselves to you at this time. Take it easy, you may be hungry. Let us eat first, it is dinner time,' Juancho said to his brother teasingly.

Juan Miguel said, 'Brother, it is the first time, as far as I can remember that you did not believe? Was the vision unreal for you?'

'Of course you are believable. It is different to you and to me. I mean the impact of the vision. It is first hand to you while it is not to me. Come on let us eat,' Juancho said to his brother while pulling him in the hand.

'First, believe me. Then we eat,' Juan Miguel said to his doubting brother.

'Okay, I believe you but let us eat,' Juancho said to his brother while still pulling his brother's arm.

The twin brothers proceeded to their mess and eat the served meals, just like the many good Catholics, they start their meal with thanksgiving. They prayed before they eat.

The day was getting into a close, the brothers then decided to go to bed. But before they finally sleep, they talked about the vision. Although it was already dark the twins continued their conversation. Eventually Juancho believe in truth about Juan Miguel's vision and visitation. Juan Miguel did tell what item he was to look for in Mexico.

'The item is interesting. It seemed many in our beliefs will be confirmed by that discovery,' Juancho said but still in a bit of disbelief.

'It was said by the archangel that, that was the cue that the Spaniards in Mexico got when they finally decided to sail here. It was told us that Miguel Lopez de Legaspi sailed, in 1564, together with nearly 500 men to these islands for good and established settlement here,' Juan Miguel explained to Juancho.

'Come on let us go to sleep now,' Juancho said to his twin brother.

The twins took a restful sleep so that they could prepare themselves for the next day. That night it took little time for Juan Miguel to sleep but his twin brother thought the things that were told to him by Juan Miguel. Though eventually he also falls to sleep.

The next day, early on before school, the twins prepared and eat immediately. They prayed in a chapel within the school. It is obvious that their parents have grown them good Catholics. Although at this time there were only two organized religion in the islands; the Roman Catholic Church and Islam in the South of the islands, all the rest were disorganized animist beliefs or some that are ancestor worshippers.

Who were the ancestor worshippers in the islands? Up North in the largest island those who reside in Baguio and the Chinese who were already well assimilated among the local inhabitants. But this ancestor worship was not new or that the Roman Catholic was alien to the belief and practice for She herself is into Saints veneration. Thus even the Chinese could not resist to being with Her. She would also want them to be with Her in proclaiming the arrival of the Son of God on Earth. In fact She knows that John the Baptist idea was very much into the beliefs of the Chinese when Our Lord Jesus Christ spoke of return of Elijah before the coming of the Son of Man. The coming of "The Prophet" will be ushered by the second coming of prophet Elijah thus the truth of the reincarnation. To see that all things are as they should, and it was it said in the Holy Scriptures:

THE QUESTION ABOUT ELIJAH

As they came down from the mountain Jesus gave them this order, 'Tell no one about the **vision [Transfiguration]** until the Son of Man has risen from the dead'. And the disciples put this question to him, '**Why do the scribes say then that Elijah has to come first?**' 'True,' He replied 'Elijah is to come to see that everything is once more as it should be; however, **I tell you that Elijah has come already and they did not recognize him but treated him as they pleased; and the Son of Man will suffer similarly at their hands.**' The disciples understood then that he had been speaking of John the Baptist. – Matthew 17: 9 - 13

'I am really interested in religion things. That is why I would study religion particularly our beliefs. I would want to know more about religions. But of course, foremost of all is to know more about the Roman Catholic Faith,' said Juan Miguel to his brother.

Juancho explained to Juan Miguel, 'I would want to study civil service, looks like here is my belief in action. I do not know if you will agree with me but I see faith in action to be good.'

THE TOPIC: GRACE

This time the Subject of a teaching Priest was the topic of grace. As in, the Hail Mary full of grace as salutation of angel Gabriel in the Annunciation.

'Grace is a gift from God. An unmerited forgiveness of sins for the

guilty, peace when there is no peace, love when there is no love, and most importantly Salvation for humanity since there was fall,' explained the Priest who was teaching them in Colegio de San Ildefonso.

The Fall of Man follows the fall of angels as revisited by the Priest as lecture to the students.

'It is a good topic to engage in, to revisit the "Fall of Man." According to Hebrew Scriptures particularly the Genesis, it was said that there was no sin yet before the fall of man. Man is in communion with God. It was paradise for the man, Adam, and his wife, Eve. Although the spouses may eat of all fruits in the Garden of Eden, they were told not to eat of the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. But in this mandate they were deficient for they did eat of the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil. But this was only possible with the urging of the Devil or the Serpent who was also called Satan.

The Serpent was the most beguiling of all animals in the world and he seduced the woman into eating of the fruit of Tree of the knowledge of good and evil. After such act of the first parents of humanity, God knew that hardships would be unto the first family of people but after saying the prophecies against the couple God now turns to the Serpent. The Serpent was cursed and God told of a Prophecy about the seed of the woman and the seed of the Serpent that will fight. In Holy Scripture's wording as God was speaking to the Serpent:

I will put an enmity between you and the Woman, her seed and your seed: He will strike your head and you will strike for His heel.' – Genesis 3:15

In Heaven, after the Creation, there was a battle, First Battle, if we may, between the angels loyal to the Father and rebellious angels against the Father led by Satan. It was said that one third of the angels fell together with Satan to Earth and they become what do we call demons and two thirds remain with the Father in Heaven led by San Miguel Arkangel whom they remained the loyal angels of the Father.

So obviously, there were angels who became demons and together we have seen the fall of man and the fall of angels. The mission of the Son of Man was to restore humanity to be in communion with God once more. This was accomplished through the death and resurrection of the Son of God. According to the Church Fathers, The Son of Man did not accomplish it for the angels but for the sinful humanity. Although humanity was lower in terms hierarchy of creation it pleased God to redeem them and give the Kingdom of Heaven to them.

What then are the lots of angels in Heaven? Angels are rightly called Princes of Heaven, although they are not as high like the Son. They are still sons of God for they subjected themselves to the authority of the Father. Thus they are included in the reign of the Father and eventually of the Son too.

Are the Princes of Heaven subject to the Son of God? Yes, for the Son of Man become lower than angels for a while but when He was resurrected and ascended He took Himself the glory of the Only Son of the Father. It was said that He did not redeem the fallen angels although He joined Heaven and Earth in Him or what Saint Paul said: **'He reconciled Heaven and Earth in Him.'**

He has let us know the mystery of his [God] purpose,
the hidden plan He so kindly made in Christ from the beginning
to act upon when the time had run their course to the end:
that He would bring everything together under Christ, as head,
everything in the heavens and everything on earth. – Ephesians 1: 9 - 10

In fact the story of God meeting people was not new. It has been told about in the promiscuity of Zeus and his philandering among humans. But these activities of Zeus were myth and had nothing to do with salvation of man while the Story of the Son of Man was real and the truth itself.

'Any questions from your end, children?' the priest asked to the students in front of him.

Juancho raised his hand: 'Father, why would it be necessary to redeem us?'

'Because we have sinned and to sin is to be separated from God for there is no sin in Him. It was written by Saint Paul that animal sacrifices cannot extinguish sins for if it were efficacious there would no longer be a daily or yearly sacrifice for sins. The Offering and Sacrifice of Our Lord Jesus Christ in the Calvary was enough for us. Although we commemorate His passion and sacrifice weekly and every day in a mass,' explained the priest.

'Juancho, when you have become conscious of your sins you will realize how good and gracious The Father and Our Lord Jesus Christ to us sinners. But do not sin against the Holy Spirit so that you may not be guilty of everlasting sin,' the priest continued his explanation.

When there were no more questions raised, the class was dismissed.

'That was a very good question, my twin brother,' Juan Miguel expressed to Juancho.

'You know in our faith, though you have professed to serve the Church. You and I have the same knowledge when it comes to salvation history since we went to the same school and raised by the same parents,' expound Juancho to his brother who was awaiting his good knowledge about religion.

Now it was time to eat their lunch. The mess was just a small part of the whole school though here they serve food that were for the twins very good. Although it seemed that they cannot eat all that they want unlike when they were at home.

'How was it then that Mama Mary was called: "full of grace." Juan Miguel asked to Juancho who was still thinking about his previous statement to Juan Miguel.

'It simply means that she has found favored with God and she was called to be in communion with Him. How could the Holy Spirit join with Her if she were not under God's grace? She therefore was favored by God not only in serving Him but in carrying His Son, the Son of God, all throughout the term of nine months in her bosom,' Juancho explained intelligently.

'That's amazing! Thinking of the glory of God, I would want to be Mama Mary's child too,' Juan Miguel says excited to what he was saying and realizing.

'That has already happened and happening as we speak. We are considered brothers to Our Lord Jesus Christ and children of God through water baptism, although we are also children of the Lord Jesus Christ,' Juancho explained to his brother.

After another four years of studying in the colegio the twins eventually graduated. One with a degree in civil government while the other in religion.

'Juancho, I am into a quandary as to the meaning of the word of God with regard to the "seed of the Woman and seed of the Serpent?" Juan Miguel asked to his brother.

"As in the one written in Genesis 3:15? I am not in a position to say anything about it except that the seed of the Woman must be good and He is Our Lord Jesus Christ while the seed of the serpent must be bad and him, I do not know," explained Juancho unsure about the seed of the serpent.

'Thank you very much Juancho, I need to study more about it to enlighten me. I will also ask some Priests about it,' said Juan Miguel realizing that he knows nothing about the topic much.

'I think you should study it first in the Book of Genesis.,' Said Juancho with some certainty about the place of the verses in the Holy Scriptures.

'The way you spoke to me, it seemed that you know more about religion than I do?' Said Juan Miguel to his twin and amazed about his knowledge.

'Not so my brother, you still know more than I know because you studied religion in organized manner. What is better than that?' Juancho explained to his brother who seemed wanting to appear humble.

'Perhaps I should rather focus on that task that San Miguel had asked me to do. Anyway, we already have finished studying and now we can go to places we want.

Remember the angelic guitar?’ Said Juan Miguel, remembering the tasks assigned to him by the Prince of angels.

‘Yes, by that you have to go to Mexico and find the guitar.’ Said Juancho pushing his brother to do the tasks assigned to him by the heavenly being.

Without wasting time, Juan Miguel decided to prepare to travel to Mexico. But to be able to be there he has to talk to local Church authorities and discuss the possibility of communicating with Mexican Church authorities. Immediately he went to Manila and went to the Manila Church authorities.

Juan Miguel went to a Church inside the walled city, Intramuros, and talked to Priests about the vision he had about San Miguel. He inquired about the angel guitar. To his surprise the Priest at Intramuros has a scant knowledge about the Guitara de San Miguel. That guitar was one hundred fifty years old according to the Priest! The guitar was also attributed to the voyage of Miguel Lopez de Legaspi to the Philippines, though the current Church authorities do not take it so seriously since they also know that the custody of the guitar will remain with the Church of Mexico. Juan Miguel took counsel with the Manila Church authorities and decided to sail for Mexico once the galleons arrived.

Galleons were ships of Spanish built that sail the routes of Manila to Acapulco, Mexico and vice-versa. They sailed once or twice a year of one or two or group of more ships. The products that the galleons carry were usually from China when coming from Manila and Mexican and Spain’s products when coming from Acapulco, Mexico. To protect the ships, Spanish authorities provide armed ships for galleons as escorts, or they call armada. This is the

way it was from 16th Century to 19th Century. Almost 300 years of galleon trade between Manila and Acapulco, Mexico.

‘Mr. Juan Miguel, this will be a three or more months voyage. I hope you’ll be able to withstand the rigors of the voyage. Voyage from Cebu to Manila is a short distance compared to Manila – Acapulco, Mexico. There are lots of things that could happen along the route so be ready for many things and anything,’ explained Captain Hernan Agoncillo to Juan Miguel.

‘Yes, Captain. I am aware of the things that can happen along the way to Acapulco, Mexico,’ Juan Miguel assured to the Captain.

The ship now sailed from Manila to Mexico. Juan Miguel has with him a letter from a Spanish Priest from Manila to a high priest in Mexico for a look to the Guitara de San Miguel. It took the Galleons three months and three weeks before they reached the Acapulco, Mexico. From there Captain Hernan Agoncillo told Juan Miguel to proceed to the place of the religious. There he handed down the letter of the priest from Manila so that he can proceed and find out the truth about the Guitara de San Miguel. The priest who took

him to the religious home was Father Conrado Abellar. Here Juan Miguel explained the vision of San Miguel during the late afternoon that he was in school in Cebu.

The priest could not believe what he heard it seemed that The Lord Jesus and heaven were confirming their existence. And it was no less than an island boy several thousand miles away as their messenger. Now in front of a Catholic Priest from Spain who now resides in Mexico.

'I think I have heard of this Guitara de San Miguel. But I do not really have seen its existence. There were no longer living people who have seen the Guitara de San Miguel and that would be our problem for now but there are places where you can try to find this Guitara de San Miguel. It has been more than one hundred years now since the last time that it was played, they say so. Would you want to have your meal first before we start looking for your Guitara de San Miguel,' invites Father Conrado Abellar.

Juan Miguel did not hesitate to agree with the aging priest about eating their meals since it was already past noon when he arrived in the place of the religious. While eating their meals the priest would like to know the knowledge of the lad about his religion. So he asked some questions and find out how good the religion education in the islands that was administered from Mexico by the Authority of the Royals in Spain. They did not talked much about the Lord Jesus Christ but much about His Mother.

Juan Miguel explains, 'Mama Mary was called full of grace by angel Gabriel because the favor of the Lord was with her. It is not to be in the nature of the Holy Spirit to unite Himself with a sinful human body or else the body will be destroyed. If Mama Mary were not favored with graces from God she would not be chosen by God to carry His Son. My twin brother Juancho explained this favored and full of grace topic to me. He knew it more than I do before but now, of course I know more that he knows. Only because I studied in a catholic school about religion while he pursues civil service as his career of choice.'

'Nice to hear that you have a twin brother, said the priest. 'Well, as regards to the word "grace"; that is also the reason why we are saved - by the grace of God. It is unmerited and we are urged by God to dwell near Him and be with Him,' replied the priest.

By the way, how are the schools in the islands?' the Priest inquired.

'I can only speak for one my dear Father Conrado, Colegio de San Ildefonso, and it seemed it is good since I can talk to you straight in the universal language, Spanish. Little Latin and I still have with me a Cebuano dialect,' Juan Miguel explains with respect.

'After this meal I will let you know of a person who can help you with your quest. His name is Andreas Calderon. He is a good person and he will surely help you with your tasks. Also, I would want to know how does San Miguel Arkangel looks like,' the priest excited yet skeptical about the looks of San Miguel.

'It was a silhouette Father and it seemed he only wants me to see him in that condition and the conversation was in the mind,' Juan Miguel wanting to explain that the angel was a bit elusive.

'In the mind? That is truly probable. Angels can communicate to us through the mind. Their existence can also be in the nature of the mind too. Mind and Spirit can be the same but who knows?' The Priest explained about the nature of mind and spirit.

'Can angels reason like the Lord Jesus that we have had? I mean He is not merely God, He is also human and Human has rational soul and spirits do not have rational soul?' Juan Miguel asked the priest.

'Good question. According to Church Fathers angels do not have rational soul like us or our Lord Jesus Christ. Angels are pure intelligence beings, they are pure spirits and they do not have corporeal bodies like us. That is our difference to them. Remember that angels are ministering spirits. They help us in our spiritual battles,' Father Conrado Abellar said knowing what was written in the Holy Scriptures.

'Is it true that we will be higher than angels in the last days at the judgment day and other stuff about the last days?' Juan Miguel asked the priest who was very much willing to give knowledge to the boy.

'According to the New Testament writings of Saint Paul, we will be higher than angels and that we will be judging some of them. With regard to San Miguel Arkangel, he will also be included in the judgment day and he will be leading us in to righteousness. He is a prince that will help us to know the Lord Jesus Christ and he will fight the devils who prowl in the world. Besides he is the leader of the good angels,' Father Conrado Abellar expounded to the boy.

'Is there a count of the angels in heaven and the devils?' Juan Miguel asked the priest, now asking something impossible.

'None to be exact but the Holy Scriptures gave us some starting point to count the number of good and bad angels. In the book of Revelation it says:

The vision of the woman and the dragon: *Now a great sign appeared in heaven: a woman, adorned with the sun, standing on the moon, and with twelve stars on head for a crown. She was pregnant, and in labor, crying aloud in pangs of childbirth. Then a second sign appeared in the sky, a huge red dragon which had seven heads and ten horns, and each of the seven heads crowned with a coronet. Its tail dragged "a third [.33333333... or 33.33333333%.....] of the stars from the sky and dropped them to the earth," and the dragon stopped in front of the woman as she was having the child, so that he could eat it as soon as it was born from its mother. – Revelation 12:1-4* The Priest quoted from the book of Revelation.

Here it says a third of the *stars [angels]* in heaven or angels in Holy Scriptures' symbolisms. ***What remained in Heaven are the two thirds [or .66666666.... or 66.66666666666666%.....] of angels that are loyal to the Father.*** And it will remain so that way until the end of time,' firmly believed by the Priest as he shared it to Juan Miguel.

'But I have not heard the name of San Miguel Arkangel in that passages from the Holy Scriptures that you quoted?' Juan Miguel asked inquisitively to the priest knowing that San Miguel was important in the count of angels in heaven.

The Priest who was really aging and very knowledgeable about the topic that he was sharing with Juan Miguel explained it more. The priest gave a wry smile to the boy and sensed that heaven really could have sent the boy here in Mexico to know about the Guitara de San Miguel and about heaven itself.

Father Conrado Abellar, 'Oh yes. I have not told you yet. There is a continuation of that in the Holy Scriptures:

'And now war broke out in heaven, when Michael with his angels attacked the dragon. The dragon fought back with his angels, but they were defeated and driven out of heaven. The great dragon, the primeval serpent, known as the devil or Satan, who had deceived the world, was hurled down to earth and his angels were hurled down with him. Then I heard a voice shout from heaven, 'Victory and power and empire for ever have been won by our God, and all authority for His Christ, now that the persecutor, who accused our brothers day and night before our God, has been brought down. They have triumphed over him by the blood of the Lamb and by the witness of their martyrdom, because even in the face of death they would not cling to life. Let the heavens rejoice and all who live there; but for you, earth and sea, trouble is coming – because the devil has gone down to you in a rage, knowing that his days are numbered.' – **Revelation 12: 7-12**

'It seemed that the war in heaven is already over? And that the empire has already been won by Our Lord and His angels? But what about the rage of the dragon? It seemed the battle is over in heaven but not on earth and on the sea? Why is it so?' Juan Miguel inquired to the priest who is obviously knowledgeable about the topic.

'Let us continue quoting the Holy Scriptures, said the Priest:

'As soon as the devil found himself thrown down to the earth, he sprang in pursuit of the woman, the mother of the male child, but she was given a huge pair of eagle's wings to fly away from the serpent into the desert, to the place where she was to be looked after for a year and twice a year and half a year. So the serpent vomited water from his mouth, like a river, after the woman, to sweep her away in the current, but the earth came to her rescue; it opened its mouth and swallowed the river thrown up by the dragon's jaws. Then the dragon was enraged with the woman and went away to make war on the rest of her children, that

is, all who obey God's commandment and bear witness for Jesus. – Revelation 12:13-17, quoted again by Father Conrado Abellar from the Holy Scriptures.

'You are a lucky boy to be here since the sea is the place of the dragon. How many months did you count before you arrived here? Three right? Father Conrado Abellar asked to Juan Miguel, 'that's a three months danger from the dragon. But of course the Spirit of our Lord is everywhere so you are also protected.'

'So it seemed that, we, the children of the Woman, is also in danger. Because as you have said: Satan is enraged with the children of the Woman,' explained as heard by Juan Miguel.

'Now you know the reason why the children of Mama Mary are being persecuted by the children of Satan. In fact there will come a time when Satan will himself father a child of his and will fight the child of God or the seed of the Woman. As written in the book of Genesis 3:15,' explained and shared by the Priest.

'Y***ahweh God said to the serpent, 'Because you, the serpent, have done this, 'Be accursed beyond all cattle, and wild beasts.***
You shall crawl on your belly and eat dust everyday of your life.
I will make you enemies of each other: you and the woman,
Your offspring and her offspring. It will crush your head and you will strike its heel.' – Genesis 3:14-15

'So it's true then that one day the seed of the serpent will come out of this world and try to wipe out the children of the woman?' Juan Miguel asks knowing what he was asking could be true.

'That is what God has told us so it will be. By the way, here is our friend Andreas, he will help you to go to the place where the Guitara de San Miguel is probably located. It is all for now. We can talk later in the evening after dinner.' Said the priest then he excused himself after turning over Juan Miguel to Andreas Calderon.

'Co mo esta?' Mi nombre es Andreas Calderon. I am here to help you locate the Guitara de San Miguel. It has been accounted here in a very long time ago, about one hundred years, that there was such thing as Guitara de San Miguel and it was left here in Mexico to serve as reminder to the people of the existence of heaven and that because Mexican people were fond of guitars. Hehehe. Yes, let's find out if it is still doable to find this Guitara de San Miguel... it was told us that one rainy night, angels came down from heaven in a form of humans, seven of them, and went to this place and talk to civil guards and priests and the Governor General at that time. They celebrated mass at night and that the angels said to have participated in the Eucharist and they sang some songs made in heaven. Then they told the authorities here that they must immediately go back to the islands and claim the islands as Spanish owned. Before the night was over the angels left here the Guitara de San Miguel,' Andreas Calderon explained to Juan Miguel.

'I play guitar. Do you play guitar?' Andreas Calderon continued.

'I do play guitar, why does the guitar has six strings? Is it because they originated from the angels?' Juan Miguel asked to Andreas Calderon.

'It so it seemed. Because they say six is the magic number of the angels although what came down here were seven and that seven were the angels before the throne in heaven. We cannot really know about it for now,' said Andreas Calderon to Juan Miguel, 'six they say is the universal number of angels.'

'Well, Miguel has six letters. Hehehe! And the angels who remained loyal to the Father in heaven are around 66.66%. Does this give us some breakthrough about the angels?' Juan Miguel shared to Andreas Calderon.

'May be, who knows? Our knowledge is small and scant. Juan Miguel, the best thing to know is that they exist for us,' Andreas Calderon explained reassuringly.

'I agree with you,' Says Juan Miguel confidently.

'It says that a guardia civil saw the angels in this chapel. Then they went to tell the priest at that time and then they told the Governor General. Here in this place it said that they celebrated the mass,' Andreas Calderon continued to explain.

The place was now a medium sized edifice of the Church and it has concrete structures with designs of the Churches like that in Europe. The ones that could be seen in the drawings on the books from Europe. The Church structure is beautiful although there seemed to be designs that did not originate from Europe but something that of from outer space. It seemed very old or very new design not current in the islands or in Europe except here.

Whatever the designs were it seemed good to inquire from Andreas Calderon.

'Sir Andreas Calderon, can I know these designs. Where do they come from?' Juan Miguel asked to his host still hoping that the guide could help him in his quest.

Juan Miguel looking at the designs in the entrance of the edifice was amazed at the intricate designs. The arches of the structure in front were towering for Juan Miguel since there were very few of such in the islands. There were cuts from the stones that were different. They were sort of originals or copied from something existing.

'Andreas Calderon, Sir, where do these designs came from?' He then again inquired from Sir Andreas Calderon.

'Church authorities here say that the designs in that stones came from the Guitara de San Miguel. There they say that angels left some form of heavenly beauty. In fact they

created 12 entrances here to tell of the twelve tribes of Israel and then the designs were walled in the edifice to tell of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. These were simple designs yet they elicit emotions since they were different from the rest that can be seen in this world. Only the pyramids of Egypt have this quality type of designs and some Cathedral in Europe,' Andreas Calderon shared to Juan Miguel.

Juan Miguel telling Andreas that he has seen some of this: 'From my studies, it was. But for now let us find the Guitara de San Miguel.

In the other building very near the Church it can be heard that Father Conrado Abellar was talking to someone that cannot be heard from the outside or the other building.

'What did you tell the boy, Juan Miguel? You know that this Guitara de San Miguel must not come to the possession of humans or people who do not know the power of it!' Satan said and at the same time shouting at the Priest.

Father Conrado Abellar told Satan: 'You have no power over this Guitara de San Miguel, Satan. It is not yours to take or choose as to who will possess this guitar or who can see it. The real owners of this guitar are in heaven and that means it was entrusted to the good angels and not you.'

'I do not care. Do you know what happens to those who oppose me? They are like the Israelites of the Old World of the East. They become slaves. They worked for some people who know the Secrets more than you know!' Satan shouted again to the Priest.

'No, it must not be entrusted to you. This Guitara de San Miguel belongs to humanity as posterity left by heaven to tell of its existence. That it is here to protect the people from disbelief. You will none even a piece of it,' said the priest, Father Conrado Abellar, while he is hiding the existence of the guitar to the demon.

'Hahaha! Let us see who will have the Guitara de San Miguel. It is mine. It belongs to me. Hahaha!' Laughingly Satan said to the aging priest.

Satan left the old priest and went outside. This time Satan showed himself to other people other than the priest and they run away from the sight of him. People shouting were heard by Juan Miguel and Andreas, they looked at each other and then they ran outside to find out what was happening in the place of Father Conrado Abellar. They have seen Satan too and they shouted in their loud voice a prayer against devils. Then Satan shouted at them.

'Hahaha! Juan Miguel, you will not have a piece of this Guitara de San Miguel. It belongs to me. Yes it exists. I have seen it many times in heaven. I have played my hands and fingers on it. Now here on earth it should belong to me. Hahaha!' Satan shouted to them once more.

The priest said while still hiding the existence of the Guitara de San Miguel from Satan, 'No it will not be yours. It belongs to the Church of Mexico. Juan Miguel is here not to take the Guitara de San Miguel but only to see it and have some notes about its existence and share it to the people of the Philippines.'

'Let us see Father Abellar as to who will control the Guitara de San Miguel? I am an angel and it rightly belongs to me. Who among you has played with it? None. Do you think Juan Miguel will be able to play the heaven's rhythm on it? No. Only me can do that here on earth,' boast Satan to Father Conrado Abellar.

'Run Juan Miguel, run Andreas and go inside! We need to pray since Satan is a powerful fallen angel!' Father Conrado Abellar shouted to Juan Miguel and Andreas.

The two run to the place where the old priest was and they closed the doors as they go to the prayer room. Then suddenly heaven darkened and lightning could be seen and claps of thunder could be heard. The whole place was dark and in the prayer room was just a simple lit oil lamps. Father Conrado Abellar lit some more of the oil lamps and tried to illuminate the place brighter. The whole place became brighter. And they started to pray and the prayer goes like this:

Christ the first-born of all creation and first born from the dead
*Let us give thanks to the Father, who has qualified us to share
In the inheritance of the saints in light.*

*He has delivered us from the dominion of darkness
and transferred us to the kingdom of his beloved Son,
in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.*

*He is the image of the invisible God,
The firstborn of all creation, for in Him all were created,
in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible.*

*All things were created through Him and for Him.
He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together.*

*He is the head of the body, the Church,
He is the beginning, the first born from the dead,
that in everything he might be pre-eminent,*

*For in Him all the fullness of God was pleased to dwell,
and through him to reconcile to Himself all things,
whether on earth or in heaven, making peace by the blood of His
cross.*

'He is the firstborn of all creation; He is supreme over all creatures,' Father Conrado Abellar said. 'Did you hear that Prayer, Satan? ***Our Lord is supreme overall creatures and you are just a creature.*** You were created beautiful and perfect until one day that iniquity was found in you and as time progresses you created all the ugliness that is in you because you go farther and farther away from the source of all Good who is God.'

Satan said, 'I should not have that lectures from you, Father Conrado Abellar. It is not mine to take lectures. I lecture you: 'Since the time that the humanity was born I am already witnessing what will happen to these people. I have the privilege of knowing what human nature is. They also want to be God. But they come short of the fullness of God. And then the Hebrews were chosen, the Israelites, God wants me to bow down to them, the chosen race. But what did happen to them. They become slaves of Egypt for 400 years.

Hahaha! Then came the Deliverer, Moses, assisted by his brother Aaron. They went out of Egypt yet Moses himself was not able to go inside the promise land, the land of plenty, actually it was Joshua who was able to enter. Now, kingdoms after kingdoms subjugated the Israelites until they separated into two Kingdoms, the Northern and the Southern Kingdoms. Then came the Jews and to them that the Christ was to be born. Do you think I did not take notice of it? Of course I did. I tempted Him thrice and thrice I failed. What was with that Son of Mary and Joseph? What was with the Son of God? I know heaven I know earth and its history,' Satan boasts to the three.

Father Conrado Abellar retorted to the Fallen Angel, 'You killed the author of life and you did succeed but God the Father had more plans for humanity than you who would only want us as slaves, slaves to sin, slaves of the devils! But we have the true liberator His name is Jesus Christ and He defeated Death and gave us life in the Spirit. He resurrected after the third day that he was killed and He was now in heaven, unlike you who were thrown down to earth.

Satan continued to speak: 'I noticed the empty tomb and I know that my time is short because He will return to judge the living and the dead. However the victory is ours, with my angels. Hahaha! I have read your book of Revelation and it says there that there will be a great battle to be fought here on this planet earth. Yes, I will see you in Megiddo, San Miguel Arkanghel.

Huh. San. If in heaven they were two thirds of the force here on earth we will be the two thirds of the force. I will make sure that we will win. Hahaha!'

Father Conrado Abellar said to Satan in a loud voice while praying in his mind, 'So, now you know that our Religion is true and that the Son of God and at the same time the Son of Man came to liberate us from the fear of you and your death dealing. He was raised from the dead on the third day, He rose again from the tomb and ascended to heaven. And He will come again to judge the living and the dead and that includes you who was already condemned.'

'This Juan Miguel is a son of your Lord Jesus Christ. What a name?

Phew!

That is why I have to stop him and his Holy Mother the Church,' Satan said to them while belittling the name of Juan Miguel because he was named after his adversary, San Miguel Arkanghel.

Father Conrado Abellar then shared something from the Holy Scriptures to Satan: 'You will not be able to stop His Church or His son. We have the promise from the Lord Jesus about His Church. This I will quote to you:

MATTHEW 16:19

'When Jesus came to the region of Caesarea Philippi He put this question to His disciples, 'Who do people say the Son of Man is? And they said, 'Some say He is John the Baptist, some Elijah, and others Jeremiah or one of the prophets'. 'But you, 'He said 'Who do you say I am? Then Simon Peter spoke up, 'You are the Christ, 'He said 'The Son of the living God.' Jesus replied, 'Simon son of Jonah, you are a happy man! Because it was not flesh and blood that revealed this to you but my Father in Heaven. **So I now say to you: You are Peter and on this rock I will build my Church. And the gates of the underworld can never hold out against it. I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: whatever you bind on earth shall be considered bound in heaven; whatever you loose on earth shall be considered loosed in heaven.**' Then he gave the disciples strict orders not tell that he was the Christ. – Matthew 16:13-20

'I should know better, I mean the humans. I know how they deal with each other. I am winning. Hahaha!' Satan knew the nature of humanity and he knows their weaknesses so he was shouting and laughing.

The Priest humbly asked the devil but firmly. 'Not to all. Why do we have Saints?'

Then the group of Father Conrado Abellar continued praying until it rained outside. Then suddenly came out from the rain are the seven angels lead by San Miguel Arkanghel. They look magnificent and towering and comely in appearance than Satan and his angels. Also came the angels of Satan and again they battled it out in Mexico. They go run all over the place while it was raining. The bad angels do not want rain or water so they flee the place.

'This is not the time or the place! Retreat my angels!' Satan shouted to his bad angels.

In an instant Satan and his angels were gone.

Father Conrado Abellar prayed to the Lord Jesus Christ. 'Oh, my good Lord, thank you very much for sending us your good angels.

'Here is San Miguel in our midst. What shall we do Head of all Angels?' The priest questioned to San Miguel.

Father Conrado Abellar knew San Miguel Arkanghel who was the head of the seven who came down from the heaven through the rain.

San Miguel instructed, 'This morning, kindly offer the mass for Juan Miguel, so that he will be successful in telling the story of the Guitara de San Miguel to his own people as what Our Lord Jesus wants us to tell them. Your people and Mexico should be one with the people of the islands. No worry, here is the Guitara de San Miguel. Kindly show him it so that he knows what sort of thing is this. He can play this guitar. The guitars that you have here on earth were replicas of the Guitara de San Miguel that was once in heaven. ***'As above so below, as below so above,'*** San Miguel shared to the group for something that they cannot decipher from the Our Father or the Lord's Prayer.

Then eventually morning came and they prepared to say the mass. All those that saw the devil and his angels came to the Church to celebrate the Eucharist. They discussed it among themselves as to what happened during the darkness of the night. They cannot seemed to understand why Satan would show himself so blatantly without apparent warning from nature. But luckily for them they were not possessed or anything. Father Conrado Abellar and the rest were able to defeat the devils with prayers.

As they celebrate the mass, Father Conrado Abellar knew that Juan Miguel knows how to play guitar so he asked him to play some for the Eucharistic celebration. The altar servers sent the guitar from Father Conrado Abellar to Juan Miguel. The guitar was still in its case and it really looks good. He has not seen anything like it in this world. Or others can ever produce something like it. He touched the guitar and felt the weight of it. Then eventually Juan Miguel was playing the guitar in the mass.

Father Conrado Abellar, 'Now I know why everyone was after this guitar. It sounds like you already heard heaven.'

'I never played a guitar like this since I started playing guitar. How can this be like this? It is really from heaven. Wow! This is an amazing guitar. Thank you Lord for letting us hear heaven while still on earth,' Said Juan Miguel yet still in unbelief and so happy that he is in ecstasy.

After an hour, the Eucharistic celebration ended and the people went from each place. They know that the devil is not yet finished with them. They have to be careful and take notice of what the devils will do to them. The devils have no comely stature as they showed themselves that night. Unlike the good angels, they were awesome, good looking and truly magnificent to look and behold. They know that angels are from heaven and they come only to save people from their physical and spiritual battles.

'Juan Miguel why not you join us for the morning meal? We have lots of things to talk to about. From your studies you learned salvation history. It is important that you should know it more fully,' invites Father Conrado Abellar to Juan Miguel with the intention of knowing more about the islands that they are administering.

Juan Miguel: 'I know something about salvation history father. It was in your conversation with me and with Satan last evening. It seemed that the devil is good in history. He perfectly knew our nature.'

Juan Miguel surely has heard Satan that night and took notice of what Satan can do.

Father Conrado Abellar gestures to Juan Miguel to start the recitation of Salvation History: 'So just like the Jews, kindly tell me our Salvation History.'

Juan Miguel then looked to heaven and closed his eyes then opened his eyes again and started to speak:

'First, God Created heaven and earth, then He created all things that are here on earth and all things that are in heaven, visible and invisible. Then lastly He created our first parents. Then our first parents disobeyed God by choosing the lure of Satan and wanting to become like God. That was the theologians call "The Fall". It was then necessary to give back salvation to man. So thus the Genesis 3:15 was uttered by Our God, the battle between the Woman and her seed against the Seducer and his seed. It was necessary that God had to reveal Himself to them by choosing their race to beget the child of God, the promised Messiah the deliverer from bondage.

After sometime Abraham came out of the face the Earth and it was through him that he would beget the line of the Messiah. He begot Isaac, the one who was sacrificed by his father but was replaced by a ram caught in a thicket at the mountain. Then from Isaac he fathered the twins, Esau and Jacob. Then Jacob became the father of the twelve tribes and the name Jacob was replaced by the name Israel, thus the twelve tribes of Israel.

From the twelve children of Israel God sent Joseph to the Egyptians sold as slave. However he became governor of the Egypt by virtue of being able to interpret the Egyptian Pharaohs dream, that there would be famine. Because Joseph was able to interpret the dreams of Pharaoh and the Pharaoh thence made him governor of Egypt. Then famine came to all of the land but Joseph was an able Administrator. He foresaw that famine would come so he made preparations for the calamity and then was able to preserve the lives of the Egyptians (eventually his own family). Israel and Joseph's brothers came to Egypt and they were reunited. Pharaoh of Egypt gave them the land of Goshen for them to till but the later Pharaohs who have not heard of Joseph made them slaves. And for four hundred years they were slaves in Egypt until Moses came and liberated them while Joshua son of Nun brought them to the Promised Land.

Then Yahweh, their God, appointed judges among them but not for long for the Israelites want a king of their own just like the rest of the other nations. Against the advice of Prophet Samuel they anointed Saul son of Kish to be Israel's first king.

Israel produced kings of lineage, first was Saul then he was replaced by King David. King David produced the famous King Solomon. It was through the line of King David that the Messiah would be born. Then the kingdom became strong but eventually they split up in two, the northern and the southern kingdoms. The ten tribes were the northern tribes but they vanished while the southern tribes were composed of the tribe of Judah and Benjamin and some Levites, some remain in Judea up to this time. The Israelites were once again enslaved by the Assyrians and the Babylonians and most of them were exiled to their captors' nation.

Then Israelites prophets predicted the coming of the Messiah and all that will happen to Him and what He will undergo.

The Messiah came out from the tribe of Judah or the Jews, as they were called by that name. Born of the Virgin Mary, He preached the word of God by accompanying it with signs. He suffered under the Roman rule, was crucified, died and was buried. However on the third day he rose again. Then he showed Himself to His disciples. Then he ascended into heaven and seated at the right hand of the Father from then he will come again to judge the living and the dead.

Then the Holy Spirit worked miracles in the Church as He is building the Church of the Lord Jesus Christ and here we are the children of the Church.

Father Conrado Abellar said that the recitation was excellent. The education was very good. Then the priest changed the topic.

Would you want to practice your guitar fingers on the Guitara de San Miguel?

Juan Miguel said: 'I would want to.'

Instantaneously Juan Miguel was playing the Guitara de San Miguel. As he continuously play they realized that the guitar did not only bring down to earth a sound in heaven but it also ***builds up "non-living thing structures"***. Now they suspected that the edifice or the church structure that has unusual designs was actually a product of the musical instrument. The three of them went outside and Juan Miguel started to play the instrument again. At once it builds a structure beside the previous structure. Slowly the structure is being built but different from the other.

'Could it be because I play the music different and that the structure that is being built is also different?' Juan Miguel inquired to the people near him particularly Andreas Calderon and Father Conrado Abellar.

‘That is a good explanation. We cannot find any reason so far.’ Said Father Conrado Abellar, but why not during the Eucharistic Celebration?

Slowly the building is built but this time not as a church but a support to the church structure. It has intricate designs that seemed to have not originated in this world. It is of different sort of designs but evenly and uniformly spread over all the structure.

‘How can this be? By merely strumming and plucking this guitar and we can already build structures. We can build a city out of this, Father.’ Wonder Juan Miguel to the capability of the Guitara de San Miguel.

The priest said to Juan Miguel, ‘Churches may be but not a city yet. Would you want to finish your music lessons from heaven?’

‘Oh, yes Father, I really would want to.’ Juan Miguel said to the priest without reservation.

It took Juan Miguel six days to finish the medium sized structure and after this he started to covet the Guitara de San Miguel. He does not know where that feeling of covet is coming from. He wants to bring the Guitara de San Miguel to his native land so that he could build structures too. But as far as the rule of heaven is concerned they cannot bring out the Guitara de San Miguel from Mexico. Does it matter or the islanders will be building structures like this without the help of Guitara de San Miguel?’

As the day goes by and Juan Miguel stays in Mexico he seemed to be having different temperament. And Father Conrado Abellar took notice of it.

‘It seemed you have different temperament as the days go by? What is it that is affecting you?’ Father Conrado Abellar inquired to Juan Miguel.

Juan Miguel did not hide his feelings toward the Guitara de San Miguel. ‘I will tell you honestly that the guitar affects to the point that I want to bring it to the islands. But I know that we cannot do that since the good angels told us that we should not bring out the guitar from the Church of Mexico,’ Juan Miguel answered to the priest.

Father Conrado Abellar, ‘So what do you now proposed to do?’ Inquiring about what are the plans of Juan Miguel as regards the Guitara de San Miguel.

Juan Miguel did not speak much but the Priest knew that the lad would also want to build structures like what are here in the Mexico. But obviously the building that he will make was not out of the rhythm of the guitar but out of the strength of manpower and the labor of people. From his own mind he has to create the plan and have it put into the structure stone by stone.

Father Conrado Abellar proposed that they divine the will of heaven by praying. 'Why not we pray together with you and Andreas so that we would discern the will of heaven?'

Then they prayed and asked heaven to show them signs or give them reasons to choose certain paths.

On the spot they are praying silently asking for signs that will guide them in deciding which path to take with regard to the guitar. But Juan Miguel eventually resigned to the will that was even before he came here. That the guitar should stay with the Church of Mexico.

After their prayer, Juan Miguel talked to Father Conrado Abellar.

'Father, I am resigned to the will of heaven about this Guitara de San Miguel, that it should not come out from the Church of Mexico. I do have valid reasons to bring it out but not enough to merit disobeying the will of heaven. It seemed that we will build our churches in the islands hand by hand, stone by stone with the strength of the people.' Shared Juan Miguel to Father Conrado Abellar while saying firmly that he no longer covet the guitar.

'By labor of love; the Church in the Philippines would be loved more by Her people and that heaven will be glad that you will be building them up piece by piece. You can copy these intricate designs here that were brought by the Guitara de San Miguel. We do not know how the sound built it but it does build as we know.' Father Conrado Abellar said while wondering as to the supernatural capabilities of the guitar.

This is how advanced heaven is by merely strumming a guitar of heaven that structures on earth can be built. But they also recognized that living things are untouched by the sounds of the guitar, except their minds and feelings. It seemed that it only affects the non-living beings, the stones and dead woods, the soil and earth beneath and the other building materials.

After some more conversations the three went back inside the Priests' residence and they planned the next move that they will do as regards to the return home voyage of Juan Miguel. After they have planned the return voyage Juan Miguel decided to scribble some words and drawings in regards to the Guitara de San Miguel.

After another month the galleons were ready to sail and Juan Miguel was part of the party that will go back to the Philippines. This time the galleons of five were full of products from Mexico. It will be fruitful for the traders but for Juan Miguel this was something that goods and material stuff could not afford, experiencing the Guitara de San Miguel was better. He will be back to the Philippines accomplished as to his mission in Mexico and he has now some scribbles and ideas with regard to building edifices for the Church of the Philippines.

There was also a time when he and Father Conrado Abellar discussed the mystical beliefs of the locals of the Philippines. Juan Miguel told the priest about the Diwatas and anitos of the locals in the Philippines. We brought them a foreign God yet they accepted readily and it seemed they compliment. They or we have Bathala and then they accepted Lord Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior without having Him foreign to them. The Hindu influence, it seemed, became it easier for them to accept the Noble One. **Bathala or the title “Noble Lord” came from a Sanskrit word Batthara meaning the Noble One, the Creator.** They also have their own alphabet that was obviously influenced by Sanskrit, the Baybayin sometimes (wrongly) called Alibata.

The Diwatas on the other hand are female and male deities who protect the mountains and forests and all that live in there. Since they are deities they are considered to be very beautiful and that they have magical powers or supernatural powers. They are not omnipotent for omnipotence belongs to Bathala the Creator. But most likely they are Elementals for they have power over elements.

‘We do not judge but they could be the fallen angels?’ Father Conrado Abellar said simply because he does not know the psyche of the Filipinos.

‘They are benevolent beings according to the locals and for them, before Christianity, there is no such thing as fallen angels. Angels are Judeo-Christian reality and ideas,’ Juan Miguel explained to the priest.

Father Conrado Abellar insisted to the lad, ‘That is why we have to teach them about them, the fallen angels. You have heard it in the book of Revelation that there are fallen angels and that you witness them, particularly their leader, in an instant some nights ago.’

‘Yes, I have witnessed them few nights ago. But let’s see what they have with regard to the Diwatas of the Philippines’ locals,’ Juan Miguel in low tone of voice replied to the priest, yet still trying to convince the priest about the matter in the Philippines.

Juan Miguel requested Father Conrado Abellar to write something for the Church in Manila. The priest did not hesitate to write something. It took him one hour to finish what he was writing. Then he sealed the letter and hand it over Juan Miguel.

‘That is for Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros. He is a friend priest of mine, a little younger than your servant Father Conrado Abellar. I think he resides in Manila, in the walled city.

Yes, I was not able to talk to him before I left Manila but I think I should see him one of these days,’ Father Conrado Abellar said while convincing Juan Miguel that the Diwatas could be the fallen angels.

In no time Juan Miguel finds himself inside the galleon going back to Manila. This time he knows he can handle the voyage better since he has underwent it going to Mexico.

The goods that are in the galleons are many. There are live cattle and huge bulls spread over the five galleons.

Juan Miguel once more saw the magnificence of the universe at night. He cannot but contemplate the greatness of the Creator that made it. How cannot Satan remain in heaven if such were beautiful place full of happiness and beauty? Pride, they say, made Lucifer fight God and the good angels. Pride is really difficult to counter. Humility is the first rule of virtue.

It took them three months to reach the Philippines. It was easier this time because the winds were favorable to returning to the Philippines. The route they took was the route opened by Miguel Lopez de Legaspi. Although at that time the voyage route of galleon was already established.

CHAPTER X

MEANWHILE IN CEBU

Juancho was tending their cattle and it seemed easier as the days go by. The cattle now have single mind. They follow their leader as they go from pasture land to another pasture land. But Juancho would want to work as a civil servant so one day he went to the seat of civil government in Cebu near Colon Street, it was the representative of the governor general whom he approached.

‘Sir Manuel Gaudencio, Good morning, I would like to know if there are available positions in your offices. I have graduated from a school here in Cebu and would like to know if there are available positions to be filled with the qualifications as mine?’ Jauncho inquired to Mr. Manuel Gaudencio.

Mr. Manuel Gaudencio is a tall man of mestizo race he has been in the government for more than fifteen years. Prior to his assignment in Cebu he has been to Manila and built infrastructures there.

‘There is a position available for one who is qualified. Civil Engineering services are the ones that the Gobierno Civil will pursue. It also includes infrastructure and other civil works for the benefit of the people. If you are amenable you prepare your papers and you can start tomorrow,’ Manuel Gaudencio replied to Juancho.

‘Thank you very much Sir Manuel Gaudencio. I will prepare my papers and then come back here as soon as possible,’ Juancho assured to the head of Gobierno Civil in Cebu.

Juancho return to their home and look for his school papers and Diploma. He can now prepare for tomorrow. He knows that this will be crucial for his future and the family that he envisions to have, the career that he wants to build, the family name that they want to perpetuate. He knows he was accepted because he still looks like some of the Mestizos or that because his father wants him in the government and he has connections or that his family is known in the place. Whatever it is that let him in, he is happy to be in the government.

The next day he was happy to be back and start his work as a supervisor in a government civil works bureau. He went inside the building of the bureau and reported to Manuel Gaudencio.

‘I am happy you are back here, there is a current project that we are undertaking, making this city of Cebu into a livable city just like the model cities of Europe. Have you been to Europe?’ Manuel Gaudencio asked to Juancho – who is still elated for the acceptance of the Gobierno Civil of him to their office.

'Have not been to Europe Sir, but I would want to be there someday, for a vacation, sir,' Juanco replied with some confidence.

'The earlier the better, you have to see those structures in Europe so that you can apply those here in your native place. We want to make Cebu a Queen city too,' Manuel Gaudencio explained to Juancho.

'I have seen some drawings sir but I know these are not enough to teach me of the beauty of structures in Europe. In the meantime that is all that we have. I have not been to Manila either, sir,' Said Juancho, and he included Manila since there were already good structures there.

'Well, let's see what do we have for you to do today. Ah. There we are finishing fortified government offices. Let's call it Fort San Pedro,' Manuel Gaudencio informed to Juancho.

'Fort San Pedro is good and it seemed the construction is fast. Walls are defensive barriers against the Moros downward south,' suspected Juancho and shared it to Mr. Manuel Gaudencio.

Manuel Gaudencio explained to Jauncho why Fort San Pedro is necessary: 'Just like in Spain. We have to contend with the Moors or Moros. Because we are of different religion and it seemed we cannot agree with them, although we have the same father, Abraham.'

The fort is huge for Juancho's estimate but he believes that there were lots like this in Europe that were even bigger, with higher walls to keep the enemies at bay or outside. There have been numbers of attacks that came from the Moros on this island and he knows it coming from news from people he knows. The news has wings they say and that the ground has ears. He believes that the Europeans have this type of defences that can defend them from outside attacks. There were also stories from their father about this stuff from Mexico.

Juancho took the first day as his longest day for after the first day it becomes much easier for him. There were times when he remembered his brother who was somewhere in Mexico doing his search for the fabled Guitara de San Miguel. He was unsure but he hopes that his brother will succeed in his quest. It was just simple but it was more than one hundred or one hundred fifty years since the time that the fabled guitar was seen there according to some priests who have some of knowledge about the guitar. But why delve on those thoughts for now he has to be busy with his new job.

Juancho now is seeing how the locals build the fort under the supervision of the Spaniards and some people like him. They seemed not to like their tasks but they still do build for some important goods come from the Spaniards and they also want to have a piece of the galleon goods when a vessel finally docks in their port in Cebu. Galleons continue to go to Cebu because it was once the capital of the colony. Galleons from Manila

also sometimes were called, in Mexico, ships from China, since most goods that come from Manila were made in China.

Juancho informed the head of the Gobierno Civil in Cebu, 'Sir Manuel Gaudencio, it seemed that the people do not like their tasks? We need to do something about that, do not we?'

Manuel Gaudencio replied, 'We need to give them their salaries for now. If we do it all by ourselves we will not be able to finish it since we are too few. They do not have the planning skills so we give it to the Malays I mean the tasks that they can do. By the way what is wrong in putting on one stone after another? Besides, we give them security from the attacks of the Moros. We also give them agriculture so that they can have plenty and many other good things to trade with other people. Later, when this nation has become conscious of its unity or oneness then we will see that the Spaniards were after all correct too.'

'Sir, how many years will this take to finish this fort San Pedro?' Juancho inquired to his superior Mr. Manuel Gaudencio who is busy with the ongoing structure completion.

'It will take some time but not that long as to wait for more Moro attacks,' Mr. Manuel Gaudencio replied to Juan Miguel.

It took them ten more months then the fort was finished. It looks good to see to finish one project. Juancho knew then that there would be more forts that would be built by the Spaniards so that they can expand their empire in this far flung place, downward south of the colony near the Muslim Moros. It has been a frustration for the Spaniards not to conquer the Muslims of the southern part of the nation. They have been resilient to conversion to Christianity and they do it with the use of arms. Unlike their Muslim brothers in the Central Philippines and the North, who became Christians.

The Spaniards would like to pattern their whole system to the one they know in Europe although there were difficulties since the culture were different and understanding of matters pertaining to life were also different. It was a success here in Central Philippines and up North of the colony but not to all places. Juancho knew from news that Manila is a successful place and it was becoming a city. The administrators in Intramuros seemed to be knowledgeable and they know how to handle the place. They say that Tundo, Manila is becoming a big market place wherein many goods coming from galleons and China are peddled and marketed. They say that there are many Chinese in Manila and they have a huge chunk of business in the place as a whole.

MANILA, NEAR CHRISTMAS DAY

There the galleons finally arrived and people particularly traders were happy to see all the ships docked. The government officials particularly those that were in the customs posts were happy to get the share of the government of

Spain for the goods that were brought from Mexico to the Philippines. These were five galleon ships and it will certainly take time to unload the cargoes and find out the prices of the items and goods in them. So in the customs house they asked for more hands to help in unloading the goods and the counting of prices for customs fee. All in all the total amount that was due to the Gobierno Civil was twenty thousand silver pesos. The money was enough to finance the whole government operation for the whole year while the next galleon to sail will be for the mother government in Spain. Galleons sail once or twice a year with the same route to Acapulco, Mexico.

Juan Miguel is happy to be back to the colony. He wants to return to Cebu immediately but he knows he has to deliver the letter to the Priest named in the letter by Father Conrado Abellar. He does not know what were written on the paper but he does hope that it is about the Guitara de San Miguel. Besides, he will also talk to the Priest to tell of his search and tell what happened. He can also tell that he saw Satan and his angels but at the same time that San Miguel Arkangel came to their rescue and rescued the Guitara de San Miguel. He also has some scribbles about the edifices that they saw in Mexico. The letter he was carrying is for Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros, 'Nice to see you to be back here Juan Miguel. How was the search in Mexico?'

'Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros. How are you Father? It was a tedious event in my life Father. This Guitara de San Miguel exists and here are my proofs,' said Juan Miguel to the middle aged priest who is a friend of Father Conrado Abellar.

Juan Miguel handled the letter of Father Conrado Abellar to Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros. It was sealed with the original seal and the Priest was glad that it was that way when he received the letter. The Priest read the letter and was happy to know that his friend priest in the other side of the ocean is still alive and happy to share to him this knowledge about the guitar from heaven. This time Juan Miguel can confirm to him this Guitara de San Miguel from heaven. Why it was sought after by the spirit world and of the religious.

It took sometime before Juan Miguel showed his scribbles while in Mexico. Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros could not believe his eyes, the scribbles are familiar with him, there is a book here that has the same topic in one of the chapters that says of the same item and of the drawings. He admits though that only the first edifice was drawn the other was not yet in the book. So he invited Juan Miguel to also see what he got.

'Juan Miguel, you have to join me for dinner at our residence and find out if the drawings were similar with the one I have in a book,' Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros said to the lad who seemed to be a bit famished now.

'Really? So are we confirming notes and scribbles with written long before I know of the existence of the Guitara de San Miguel? It seemed that piece by piece we are knowing the truth about the Guitara de San Miguel?' Juan Miguel said to the priest.

'It is like that in heaven my son. When we are obedient to the promptings of the Holy Spirit and the guidance of our Guardian Angels we come to the right place at the right time. Let us eat our dinner and once we have finished I will take out the book and we can read and find out the similarities among the drawings and the edifice. You will really like it here in the spirit world among the religious,' Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros explained to Juan Miguel - who was still trying to comprehend all the things that happened to him in Mexico.

'Can Satan travel here in the colony and find out what we would be doing with regard to the evidence that we have about the Guitara de San Miguel?' Juan Miguel asked to the priest. Then he added: 'I saw him in Mexico, Father.'

'My son, Satan it seemed is also everywhere and he can take form in any place here on earth, just like any other angel. You know, he is a spirit a very powerful spirit at that. Although he is powerful and pure spirit, still he is a creature and not the Creator,' Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros explained to Juan Miguel since he seemed to be forgetting the knowledge that he got from Father Abellar.

'When we encountered him in Mexico he was also after the Guitara de San Miguel. At first we do not know why he was after it but eventually we realized that it was because the Guitara de San Miguel was from heaven and the likes of him that were from heaven were still very much interested in the things that come from heaven,' shared Juan Miguel to the priest who can only agree to what Juan Miguel shared. There is no reason to doubt the story of the boy.

'Let's eat our dinner and talk while we are eating. There is nothing bad in talking over a meal it was designed to be like that by the designers of the table.' Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros requested Juan Miguel who would really want to have the first small bite of the food.

The middle aged priest then said the prayer before meals and then they eat and talked about the topic. But since they were both excited about their findings they finished their food easily and but not faster than usual and they go to the library of the priest to look for the book that Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros was talking about.

The Priest was not much in a hurry walking but he lit two oil lamps, one for him and one for Juan Miguel. Then he led the lad to a doorway to the right of the dining room and immediately they were inside the library of the Seminary. The Priest looks to the left to find the book, and finally, as if in full knowledge of the Priest, they easily got the book they were looking. But when they opened the book it seemed there were nothing written on them. Juan Miguel was anxious to know why there was nothing written on the book.

'Is this the right book Father?' Juan Miguel asked to the priest who was also becoming anxious with the book.

'That is the right book my son. You have to wait and then the angels writings will show them to you. It does not show it immediately to those that are unworthy. This is a secret of heaven so that at some point they can still hide themselves from the clutches of the devils in this world,' shared Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros to the lad since the priest knows the secret of the book in their hands.

Juan Miguel waited for some time then finally he saw some scribbles from the book. He immediately told Father Juan about what he is seeing.

'There I can see the writings on the book. The scribbles were almost the same with the one I got except that these drawings were somewhat have colors. It can show its colors, the red and green precious stones, the blue sapphires and the edifice of stones! How could this be Father Juan?' inquired Juan Miguel to the priest, they were both astonished to what they are seeing.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then said, 'You see, the heavenly book is so advanced that we cannot really show it to all the people in this world. They will not believe and we may even be putting them in the praising of angels which is forbidden. We only talk to our angels we do not give the praises to them that is due to our God alone.'

Juan Miguel replied to the priest, 'Now I know why it was like that. Father, I will be going home once a ship going to Cebu docks here. I will bring my brother here so that he too can see the truth of the Guitara de San Miguel.'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros asked, 'Is there really a need? But you know too that this book cannot be brought outside. This book was also a product of the Guitara de San Miguel. See, there are many uses for the Guitara de San Miguel in this world. It is right that items like this should stay with and within the Church.

Juan Miguel spoke that he was amazed, 'Heaven is amazing in that case Father. This is just a single item producing so many impossible things. How could this be?'

'You see. That is why the Church always focuses Her attention to Heaven and not here on Earth. Although of course, we have to be practical too. We need to eat, have clothes and shelter, but that is all there is for us priests. We have to cultivate our spiritual strengths and our knowledge about heaven.' Explained the priest, who is also as amazed as Juan Miguel in regards to the things of heaven.

'Can I read the scribbles Father? And what type of scribbles are these? The only one I know are the Spanish Alphabet and a little about the locals' Baybayin Script. It seemed not of this world Father?' Juan Miguel asked to the priest who at this time has not studied the writings on the book.

'They are angels' writings. We do not have knowledge much about the communication of the angels, their language much more their writings although we can know if they teach us. Do you remember the mythologies of Europe? As always, the technologies that we have come from the angels or the gods, if they want it that way. Prometheus took or stole the fire from Olympus to give it to the people. Other metallurgical technologies were also provided to us by the gods and so on and so forth. We cannot really know for sure but we have to be able to discern the ideas and thoughts that we have because from there that heaven communicates with us,' Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros explained to Juan Miguel who continuously looking and trying to read the writings on the book in front of him.

'There are still lots of things that I would want to know from you, Father, but it is enough for the time being. I will be bringing my twin brother with me once I come home to Cebu,' Juan Miguel promised to the priest.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros made a request from Juan Miguel, 'That is very much okay with me but in the meantime you think on how the Church will benefit from what you saw in Mexico.

Juan Miguel replied that, 'I would want to build an edifice according to the patterns that was shown me in Mexico and what I have seen from the book.'

'That will take some time if not a lifetime but I am here to encourage you to build such an edifice. While strengthening our spirits we should also be able to leave something for posterity's sake,' The priest explained to the lad.

'I will just would like to confirm that the book was just simple papers? And what came out were replicas of the drawings in colors?' Juan Miguel making sure that there were no tricks that happened inside the seminary library. That what the book showed were all by magic or supernatural.

'That is also what I know about the book but with regard to the technology, what I see are just the results. The cover becomes colored I can see the precious stones in real life colors. Those sort of stuff that you can imagine about a book. Yeah, as far as I know these are just simple papers made in the colony,' explained and assured the priest to Juan Miguel.

Then Juan Miguel asked, 'And who gave us such technology to produce papers Father?

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros replied and explained, 'These were imported from Europe, I mean the technologies to produce papers. It has long been done in the Middle East even before our Lord was born. During the time of Moses in Egypt there was already some sort of papyrus materials made from papyrus plants.'

'It seemed Egypt is also a cradle of technologies?' Juan Miguel agreed to the priest in front of him in regards to the papers.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then gave a mini lecture to Juan Miguel about Civilization, 'Not only was Egypt a cradle of technologies, it was also a cradle of civilization. Many of the knowledge that we have were also derived from Egypt. India could have borrowed from her and then China borrowing from India. Remember that China's civilization was still in its infancy when they borrowed from India the knowledge about numbers, how to be able to count in tens: ten, twenty, thirty and so on. And if you will study India, you will learn that they have so many gods teaching them so many things including counting, although our civilizational intercourse with India is still young. But Alexander the Great had certainly visited this place of the Hindus, and who was this Alexander the Great? He was a Greek Warrior Hero who led the Greeks in victory against the Persians. He also conquered the Middle East and went as far as India. Rome just inherited the world that Alexander had conquered.'

Juan Miguel was excited to listen to the priest while he was giving his mini lecture, 'That was a full length of a lecture about civilizations Father. I am happy that you are here to share that to me.'

Then suddenly a sound broke into the library. The two check who it was or what it was. They took the book and in a hurry put it back to its place so that whoever comes it will not know where is the place of the angels book. Then when the light of the lamp illumined the place of the sound, it was the helper from the dining area.

'Agatha, what comes you here?' Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros asked to the helper.

'Father, I was looking for you in all places Father.' Agatha said in state of wonder and elated that she now finally found the priest.

'Sorry for not letting you know that we are here. You know, Juan Miguel, I usually tell them where I go from place to place in here so it is natural that she will look for me,' Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros asking understanding for the helper.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then told Agatha, 'Agatha, you go ahead and we will follow you in a while.'

Juan Miguel made a suggestion to the priest, 'Father, let us go back to the seminary so that we can sleep early. The discussion has been fruitful for me and it seemed that most knowledge that I have has already been known to many in the Church.'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then explained, 'Do not be surprised because if we will look at the promise of our Lord with regard to His Church, She is also endowed with means to protect Herself and that includes protection from spiritual and physical harms. She is also ready to protect her children and give them some spiritual and physical comforts. Example of spiritual comfort, when we sin we have the Sacrament of Reconciliation.

Sacrament of reconciliation is kind of a laborious baptism wherein the penitent is given time to return to the fold of the sheep and be reconciled with the Father. This is only possible through the reconciliation made by our Lord in His Passion and Cross.

Then the two went out of the Library and proceeded to the dining area and then return back to the seminary. The passage way was not known to all but only to the priests and some close in people of the seminary. As they walked they carry with them the lit oil lamps.

It took another month before Juan Miguel was able to catch a voyage to Cebu. It took them ten days to reach Cebu and when he came out of the ship he immediately went home. At home he took the scribbles that he has and waited for Juancho to come home and he will show the item. In after three hours of waiting, Juancho came in to their house. They embraced each other and said some greetings.

Juancho was so happy to see his brother, 'So you are here. How were your voyages? It is sure to be tedious, three months at the ocean. That was very long but worth the trouble?' Juancho jokingly told his brother.

Juan Miguel then told Juancho what he knows so far about his occupation, 'It seemed you are busy now. You are with the Gobierno Civil now? What sort of activities that you do there? Papa and Mama told me that you work for the Gobierno Civil?'

'We finished the fort San Pedro. A walled enclosure to protect the place from Muslim Moros. You know how they do things in Europe. Even in Europe there are Moors,' Juancho shared to his brother who could only agree with him.

'So the Moros are now the outsiders?' Asked Juan Miguel to Juancho who seemed to be aloof at the question.

Juancho then canned his answer to his brother, 'They have been outsiders since the Spaniards came in here. By the way, how was the Guitara de San Miguel? I was praying that you find it. What was the news for that thing for all the troubles?'

'Do not be surprised, the Guitara de San Miguel exists. There is also an evidence of what it can do, right here in the colony. I'll show you some of the scribbles that I made while in Mexico. I mean there's a magical book that it created here in the colony,' Juan Miguel shared to his brother Juancho.

Juancho asked Juan Miguel, 'Let me see please?'

Juan Miguel showed him the scribbles that he made. They were well protected from the rigors of voyage from the ocean and he made sure that they were also well protected from the eyes of the inquiring public.

Juancho could not believe his eyes, 'These are incredible! These designs are very much intricate. How can a mason create such a kind of artistic expression? I am amazed my brother. And, the guitar seemed to be the source of the intricate designs? Was it not? Juancho asked to his brother.

'Your guesses are good. They were all true as far as I can remember them. Look at the edifices that were built. Would you believe that they were made out of the sounds of the Guitara de San Miguel?' Said Juan Miguel to his brother who at this point in time still could not believe that the Guitara de San Miguel exists and that it has these capabilities.

Juancho inquired more, 'I do not know but you can tell me more about these structures and this Guitara de San Miguel?'

Juan Miguel told Juancho that, 'I built this smaller edifice in six days of strumming and plucking the guitar. Look at here, this was the one made hundred years ago and it was never followed up with another one except when I came in there and tried strumming and plucking the guitar. I could not believe it, the stones were having **self-assembly** and they built the second edifice to the right of the church. Would you believe that?'

'Look Juan Miguel, I am into building the fort San Pedro and I cannot find anything that will build such stuff just like that?' Juancho shared to his brother - who knows that Juancho indeed is in the civil works of the Gobierno Civil.

'But it does? I did it in six days.' And these scribbles are the proof. I would want you to see it yourself in Mexico.

Juancho inquired again, it might not be necessary to go to Mexico, 'And the proof that you are saying about the Guitara de San Miguel that is here in the colony?'

'With regard to that we need to go to Manila and talk to Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros. He has the proof. It is a book written by the Guitara de San Miguel if not the angels themselves. In fact, I saw the angels and the evil angels too. It was a scary and fulfilling voyage,' Juan Miguel encouraging his brother to go to Manila so that he can see the Angels book first hand. 'There,' he said, he will find the truth about them.'

Juan Miguel then told of their story while he was in a quest to find the Guitara de San Miguel. Juancho could not believe what he was hearing but he has to believe. There was no reason to doubt the story of his twin brother. There was no reason as far as he knows. They have been truthful to each other as far as he knows.

Juancho then told Juan Miguel in excitement, 'I will join you to Manila and find out about this book that you are saying. I will just ask permission from my superior from the Gobierno Civil.

After another three months the two decided to travel to Manila and find out about the book. Juan Miguel already knew about the book but the curiosity of his twin brother

Juancho must be satisfied. Not only a simple curiosity but a real inquiry to find out the truth of his voyages and the scribbles that he did. He might as well find a craft from these voyages that so that he can maintain himself and his would be family if ever Selena will agree to be with him.

The two took the next nearest voyage going to Manila and immediately they are with Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros told the twins, 'I know how it is not to be believed but it is a good quality of inquisitor to study many angles before making a conclusion. Come on let us go and let us see this angels book.'

In no time the two lads were following the middle aged priest going to the seminary library. Again they took a lit oil lamp to the library this time they were three of them. There were no people in the place except them, and the Priest urged Juan Miguel to take out the book from the shelves. It was in the lowest of the shelves, so Juan Miguel has to stoop down and took the book out from the shelves, and then they went to a table and put the book down. Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros and Juan Miguel already knew what was happening in the outside hard bound cover of the book, it is showing its many colors and the stones that were embedded on it.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then asked one of the twins, 'Can you see anything from the book Juancho?

Juancho replied in the negative fashion but eventually he has to admit something, 'All I can see is the dark cover but wait I think I am seeing some colors. Are these stones of different colors? Oh yeah, now I see something is changing on the cover of the book. Is that the Guitara de San Miguel book?'

Juan Miguel answered, 'Yes it is.'

Then they opened it to the topic they were discussing, the Guitara de San Miguel and the edifices. Once again the book showed its different colors that were evidence of its uniqueness and out of this earth printing for it was merely 18th Century. There were colored paintings of course but colored printings have not yet been invented, the color printed books. It was a unique of its kind. Now Juancho also noticed the different fonts that were scribed in the book.

Juancho inquired the more, 'What are these letters, what alphabet was used here?'

The two could not answer but Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros tried to give a short answer:

'What we are seeing is the language of angels. We do not know how they communicate but most likely they communicate in many mediums and one way of doing it is through writing. Now, **angels are fighting angels**. I mean the **good angels versus the**

bad angels, so they have to keep their communications guarded, from one end of the line to the other end of the line. If the angels cannot know the writings of the other angels then there is a chance of making their communications and existence secret from the other group. Remember lads that we are in a middle of war, spiritual war against the forces of evil,' Explained the middle aged priest.

Juancho has now believed the two not because they told him but because he saw it himself and he was not dreaming, 'Now I believe you two. What shall we do then Father? Juan Miguel, what shall we do after knowing this stuff?'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros answered the two and explained what they should do in a priestly manner of viewing things, 'You now have to do your respective missions.

What is your mission Juan Miguel?'

And you Juancho, what is your mission? The priest asked the two.

Juancho answered first, 'I think that my mission now is to know the will of heaven for me and for my family.'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros continued his questioning to find out the knowledge and resolved to the twins, 'And how will you know it?'

Juancho answered him again, 'It could be through you Father.'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros turned to Juan Miguel this time, 'And you Juan Miguel?'

Juan Miguel tried to answer eloquently, 'First I was tasked to find this Guitara de San Miguel and I have found it. Now there are things that the guitar can do and we have seen the proof of it. My mission now is to build edifice for the Church using the sounds of guitar as we copied it from the Guitara de San Miguel. Before we return to Cebu I would asked you Father to give me a chance to know any craftsmen here who know how to craft a guitar and I would like to be taught under him. I will bring it to Cebu and I will try to replicate the Guitara de San Miguel.'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros friendlily answered him, "There are very few who can teach you that trade but why not start with a carpenter then with a craftsman later?"

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then turned to Juancho and explained what he must do, 'Juancho, continue with your Gobierno civil works and find your mission in there.'

Then Juan Miguel returned the angels book in the shelves. Then they went out of the library and get back to the seminary. As they walk toward the seminary they noticed a person walking towards them. She seemed to be very beautiful and dressed differently than them. She has leather sandals on her feet and a beautiful blue gown. She has fair skin and beautiful face. She seemed to be at the age of twenties. She is almost as tall as the three

people, she is towards them. Is this a Diwata according to the local beliefs? Our women do not dress like her and her clothes seemed to be really different than what can be bought here in the colony, said the three to themselves.

Then Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros broke the silence; 'Can we be of service to you our Lady?'

Her name is Mayumi and she is in a mission to be here on earth. 'Father, we are here to tell you that we have been tasked to protect what the angels have been given to you.' Mayumi said to the priest.

It was Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros who answered safely: 'And what are the things that are given to us by the angels?'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros inquired from Mayumi to find out what she is talking about. Then the priest realized that there are many of the kinds of Mayumi at the back of her hiding behind the trees and grasses of the field.

'You know Father that we, the Diwatas, and our kind are here before you come and established your buildings and other edifices. And it seemed your activities will not be stopped unless you learn that it is not in our culture to just destroy and cut trees at will,' Mayumi said to the priest.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros was amazed with the answer of the Diwata. 'You know our language?'

Mayumi then again gave an answer to the inquiry of the priest; 'We have been observing you since the time that you arrived in here. We have seen how you improve or destroy the places that you go into. Besides, you brought with you a strange God and His Son who is there hanging on a tree. You know Father that this is an abomination for us to be hanged on a tree, it seemed He was sacrificed. You know that we do not sacrifice people in our beliefs. Maybe are you allied with the **Halimaws** who are prowling the countryside, **Halimaws are ugly monsters!**'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros realized that the Diwatas are here to protect what their own; 'We have been here at the urging of the Noble One. Besides, the people have in fact accepted us and our religion. With regard to the sacrifice of human person, our religion prohibits sacrificing people and animals. It was only once in our New Covenant, the Son of God the Noble One, the Son of Bathala the Creator,' said the priest to Mayumi.

'How could that be? In our Kingdom we have had a visitor who was the Noble One but that was around 1,000 years ago, or one Arka year, as per our reckoning. He seated on the throne, teach, for two nights and three days and then left our place. But that is all that I can tell you,' Mayumi said to the priest.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros inquired and shared that; 'Only if our Lady will learn our language and be able to read our books then we will be able to let you know of our beliefs, culture and customs that we celebrate.'

The two lads remained silent to these conversations but they remain attentive to what are being said by the two communicants. They also surveyed the field wherein the companions of the Lady are hiding. There are many of them, mostly males but it seemed that the Lady is their leader since she is the one talking to Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros. Besides, she does not look like a messenger of their Kingdom. She looks like a leader, with stature in their Kingdom for she wears better pieces of clothing than the others with her. Clothing can tell what kind or rank of persons they are. Just like what Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros is wearing now. He has the soutane while the twins were having simple clothes.

At this point in time the trust of Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros has been gained by the Diwata. 'My Lady if you may we may invite you and your companions to join us in the library,' invites the priest.

Not all were called by Mayumi to join them, only eight of her other companions are with her when they entered the library. The twins decided to follow them toward the library. They do not really know what is happening but it is good to join Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros for he did not dissuade the twins to join them in the library. Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros seemed to trust the visitors so easily because he invited them to the seminary library. Could it be that he already encountered the likes of them and talked to them before? Are Diwatas the elemental forces and creatures that local people talk about when they talk of their Diwatas and anitos? Could they really be the fallen angels that the Mexican Priest was talking about? They are beautiful creatures and seemed that they also have good countenance unlike the other creatures that the locals are talking about.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros reiterated once more to the Diwata: 'My Lady, it would be good if you can learn how to read and write our language so that you can understand who we are, our religion and culture.'

The Diwata did not utter a word about the language instead have her known by the three.

'By the way, Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros, my name is Mayumi and we usually do not have a family names unlike you who love your family names so much. Besides, what learning will you give to us that we do not know?

Do you think we did not take notice of your arrival?

'When Datu Lapu-lapu defeated Magellan in the battle at Mactan we already knew that your group will leave and will come back some other time since they already knew the way here in these islands. Now we were proven right for you have been here, I mean your race, for one hundred years now. Luckily for us we do not age like you do. One thousand

years is just like yesterday to us. Your reckoning of days is also different from us. We have eight days unlike you who have seven.

Why is that?

‘Because we believe we have been the ***New yet Older creation***, and that I would also want to share to you when you have your time out from your seminary. You also talk about the Noble One, I am already here when He visited us. He somewhat looks like that One that you hanged on a tree, the one that you call cross, although He was very much alive when He was here, unlike that dying one.’

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros continued to talk to Mayumi to convince her of their religion. ‘My Lady, if you may we would like to tell you of our religion so that you may understand why it is like that and why it was so. It will take some time to study our language, I mean the written ones, and the religion and the culture. If you observe, Our Lady, the people and us have already similar culture. The culture that is a fusion of European and local cultures and the glue that made us as one in the belief is the Noble One.’

In no time they reached the seminary library and the group went inside. The Priest prohibited the twins to tell where the angels book but the Diwata knew what to do. She summoned her powers that are in the elements of the air and then the angels book that is in the shelf glow and it then gently went out of the shelf and suspend in the air. Then the book put itself on the library table as if it has a mind of its own. The three could not believe their eyes but Juan Miguel thought that if the Angels book can build inanimate objects it is also simple for it to suspend itself in the air and go where it wants. Now this time he has seen the power of an ***Elemental Creature, this Diwata***.

The book glow more and it showed the silhouette of blue colors. Could this be because the Elemental One who is summoning the book is colored blue in her gown or it is the true color of the book? This could be the person that can read the writings on this book? These are the thoughts of Juan Miguel to himself as he is watching the events that are unfolding in their presence.

Then the book opened by itself and now the Diwata gently went near the book and started to read the first page. She uttered unintelligible words then the book’s writings glowed but not much, so as, to permit the reader to see and read its contents.

It was again Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros who broke the silence, ‘Mayumi, our Lady, what does the book say?’

No one among us knew how to read the content in this book and it seemed you are the only one who have the knowledge of reading the contents? The priest said to Mayumi.

Mayumi did not utter a word to the priest but she continued to read what are inside the book. While reading the book she is as if in an ecstasy. She felt that the book has a lure

of different sort that she alone can understand. She knew that this should be her book for she knows the color and the color silhouettes follow her.

Mayumi then declared to the group, 'This should be my book!

Mayumi revealed to the group, 'There is another book very similar to this one but the color of the silhouettes is red and it is not in this world.'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then inquired, 'May we know the existence of this angels red book?

But we cannot give you this angels blue book. This angels' book belongs to us here and we are the proof that it came to our possession by the will of heaven and no less than the angels brought it to us,' the priest talking and sure of his statements.

Mayumi knew that the book was not work of the humans but of some higher beings even higher than them, Elementals, 'I believe you Father and I am not into covetous mood as to take it from you. As you can see it will return to its place in the shelf as has been for one hundred years of your reckoning,' said simply to him by Mayumi.

Then the book in the bidding of the Diwata hang on air and then it returned to the shelf.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros asked again, 'What does it say?

The book seemed to be friendly to Mayumi and she can read them easily. 'It told of how the people of this earth will end its existence or the Judgment Day that will come. The Noble One will descend once more in this and together with the so called San Miguel Arkanghel and their angels they will judge the living and the dead. The dead therefore will be brought to life once more and will be judge according to their conduct in their lives, this will happen before the end of the Arka Age in our reckoning. And that must be an age of me plus four or another 4,000 years in your reckoning,' explained Mayumi to the group.

Knowing the truth about the last days and the Judgment Day, Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros asked the Diwata, 'Would it be a terrible judgment day?'

Mayumi gave an exposition to the content of the book: 'It says that your religion encourage praying to the Noble One, therefore pray to Him that He will be lenient to you as He judges each one of you for your conduct. For the good there is nothing to fear as regards this judgment day but for those who do iniquity, judges unfairly, unforgiving and did not show love while living will be judged severely. There are penances for our sins and it should be availed while still available or because the time is short. There will be continuing progress to your earth and this will be time of plenty for many and shortage for some. People will quarrel over the resources of this world and nations will fight nations just to secure their continuing existence. Then the two witnesses will stand up and condemn the generations that went and then the Judgment Day will come. Rich and poor, old and young,

those who are in bondage and those who are free then those that are judged to be not worthy to join the Noble One and His angels will be brought to the abode of the dead in the ***Book of the Dead*** as its gate. Then the world as you know will be restored to its full glory wherein the humans, the Elementals and angels and Heaven will meet. With regard to us, Diwatas, we will then join the rest of the population as we learn more about the Noble One and His Spouse. Spouse, that should I become.

Then they remember the existence of the angels red book. Mayumi encouraged them to join her, 'And if you want to know, the angels red book is in our possession in our Kingdom.'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then immediately decided to join the Diwatas, 'If such is the case we should be in a hurry to go to your kingdom and find out what is written in the angels red book.'

'Come on let us go so that we can save, together with their religion, some more of them,' said Mayumi while being in a gesture of being in a hurry.

They went out of the seminary library in a hurry and they followed the Diwatas to their place of abode, it was just beyond a hill after the river to the North that they stopped together with the whole companion of the Diwatas. Then Mayumi put her arms up and waves like something she is feeling something but she could not feel it. From far south before the river they could see the Halimaws, the monsters shorter than them but fierce looking and together with them are their weapons of battle, clubs, long knives, swords and javelins. The Diwatas knew that they must be in a hurry and find the gates wherein they emerge from or else they might be overwhelmed by these Halimaws.

It was fear that comes to them as they struggle to find the gate of their Kingdom, the male Diwatas then turn their backs and took their weapons ready to defend their positions on the hills, but the Halimaws cannot go beyond the rivers and they cannot see what was happening on the other side of the hill.

Mayumi is still trying her best to find the gate of their kingdom but to no avail. Then the other Diwatas tried their best too to locate the gate of their Kingdom and then finally Amihan, one of the Princesses, is able to locate the gate by her power. The gate was purple colored and with stones blinking knowing who will enter it. Then the group promptly entered the gate including the three. Then the gate banished from the sight of the outside and it only can be seen from the inside.

Inside the kingdom of the Diwatas the three could see how beautiful it was. Very clean and there seemed to be no problems, for people are all smiling and singing. The edifices are familiar to Juan Miguel but in this place most of the edifices are in white while those that are on earth are stone colored. What actually they can see are palaces in very grand designs, towering the views. Birds and animals are somewhat different than what can be seen on Earth and they are docile animals, it is summer as per Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros' reckoning for the flowers and fruit trees are in full bloom.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros could not help it but ask, 'Is this like this always, summer?'

Amihan answered them, 'Yes Father, it is always summer here. We have not changed season for the last 1,000 years unlike yours. Summer is the season when we were born. Although there is a prophecy that if the Noble One and His angels did not arrive in allotted time the Kingdom could be overwhelmed by a very long winter. Just like the one that you are experiencing in your kingdom, that is Earth. You have four very short seasons. We dread such winter to come to our Kingdom as well.'

There must really be something different here sensed Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros: 'And what will prevent the coming of a very long winter?' He asked Mayumi.

The arrival of the Noble One, Mayumi said, 'and we will have to close the gates to your world so that the Halimaws could not go inside and destroy the balance of summer here. They say that they are the winter people although we do not agree since we have seen the true winter people and they are not of such kind. They are benevolent but always with fire to warm them although they prefer to stay indoors to prevent the winter overwhelming them. Since they are winter people they like water so much, and ice is something that they liked to be with also. They are tall as tall as you father and they are good swordsmen. In fact they visit us here from time to time. It was said that when the Noble One arrives their Kingdom will then be like summer with so much water that all of their plants will grow like ours if not better.'

Near Mayumi and Amihan are their parents. Mayumi and Amihan are sisters and they contrast their colors since Amihan wears red silhouetted gown. The names of their parents are Matikas, the father, and Malumanay, the mother. They look strong but aged too and still beautiful in Earth's reckoning of beauty. They have been ruling the Kingdom of the Diwatas since the last time the Noble One visited them.

Being interested about the Noble One, Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros asked about Him, 'Can you tell to us about the Noble One? Is He the same that we call Lord Jesus Christ?'

Matikas answered Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros, 'According to reports coming from the other side, from your Kingdom Earth, there are similarities if not Him. In your belief you do have His second coming, was it not?'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros the quoted from the book of Revelation: 'Yes, He will return soon as He says:

The one who guarantees these revelations repeats his promise: ***I shall indeed be with you soon. Amen; come, Lord Jesus. May the grace of the Lord Jesus be with you all. Amen. – Revelation 22: 20-21***

Malumanay then told her daughter, 'Amihan, I think it is about time that we all should know about the angels red book that you have.'

Amihan immediately obeyed her mother, 'Yes mother, here earthlings, that the future is being foretold. What will happen to the Kingdoms in the future, ours and yours. It was said that Heaven and Earth will be together forever and ours will also join your kingdom under the rule of the Noble One. He will govern the world with an iron fist and then a ladder and gate to heaven will be made visible so that earthlings and all creatures can go in and out of heaven. Earth will produce crops for cure of those who do not believe the Noble One or the God who is His Father. Then the Noble One will be married to His Church who is a Spirit and The All will be in all.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros inquired about the, 'Who is that All in all?'

Matikas then answered in the sublime of all answers that they could have; 'The All is the All pervading Spirit, it is the Spirit of the Lord, His Father and He will be in all, including us, Elementals. In the hierarchy of Creation there are many kingdoms, many earths, that were created one is ours. Do you think you alone in this world? Just like having neighbor planets, there are other planets that have people although they may be not really like us but they are intelligent beings like us. They could even be higher in the process of creation. Just like us being higher than your world for we can command elements which you have difficulty doing.

Then Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros continued, 'It is the same as our Holy Spirit if you have ever heard of it from us. I mean the principle is the same. That is one being in all. [Like being tongues of fire to all disciples during Pentecost].

Matikas then realized that they could have been talking about the same thing, 'It so it seemed, they are the same.'

At this point in time the twins decided then to join the conversation. They have been quiet for a time and it was necessary that what were on their minds should be known to the group since it was to them that the Guitara de San Miguel was revealed. With regard to what the Guitara de San Miguel can do and where it can be found. At this time Juancho was thinking of making copies of the Guitara de San Miguel as he sees in the books but it was Juan Miguel who promised to create the guitar craft making.

Since Juan Miguel knew of the existence of the Guitara de San Miguel he gave this information, 'I know where we can find that Guitara de San Miguel and probably destroy the enemies for good, I mean the enemies who are the devils.'

But Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros has different idea, 'My dear Juan Miguel, it is not for us to destroy the enemies for good. It is reserved for the glory of the Lord Jesus Christ, the Noble One.'

Then Juancho interrupted, 'If such is the case Father, what shall we do?'

Juan Miguel eager to know the contents of the angels red book said, 'I will live in this place for a while and learn the angels red book contents then I will return home when I have learnt the meanings of it to our world.'

Juancho then asked Juan Miguel, 'What will I tell our parents if they find you not to be with me?'

Confidently, Juan Miguel told him, 'I will make a letter and tell them of the truth of our findings. Then you also tell them the truth of us. Brother I will be with you in Spirit.'

Mayumi then said to them that, 'It will only take at least a month in your reckoning to learn what are in this book. Besides this was a creation of the Guitara de San Miguel and not by the book itself. The more important thing is to protect the Guitara de San Miguel from the clutches of the devils, although I am not the one who will teach you about it but my sister.'

Juancho now in a hurry because of the Revelation about the contents of the book, asked the priest to be with him, 'Come on then Father we have to go and be in a hurry to be back to our home.'

Immediately the two hurried back to the stone gate and many of the Diwatas joined them in their journey back to their home. They have to do it because they know that the Halimaws could be there looking for the three and to be able to enter the gate of Diwatas' Kingdom. It took them an hour before they were finally at the gate. When they were there the twins embraced each other and then the priest, Juancho and Diwatas banished from his eyes. They were already on the other side of the Kingdom. Juan Miguel meanwhile remained in the Diwatas' kingdom.

Amihan and Juan Miguel did not waste time and promptly they took the angels red book and tried to read from them.

Amihan told Juan Miguel, 'Before you can read that book I have to teach you of its alphabet and language. Once you have mastered the language then you can read it loud in my hearing so that I can tell you if the readings are correct.'

In the language of the angels it took two full days before Juan Miguel can utter the words written in the book. Then he also has to study the translations to his native language from the language of the angels. When he has to break from his labor the lad was led into a river wherein he can see in the water the people outside including his family, the priests and the other kingdoms. He tried to locate the Guitara de San Miguel and he saw it with Andreas Calderon in the seminary where he once went before, in Mexico. There he saw the priest and that helped him locate the guitar. He also sees the structures that the guitar has built. Only two are what he knows but the Diwatas told him that the structures he was in now were also creation of Guitara de San Miguel.

Juan Miguel was uttering the written scripts in the book and Amihan was listening. She agreed with most of the utterances of Juan Miguel but from time to time she also corrects the pronunciations of the lad. It was important that he be able to pronounce them correctly since the angels language was delicate to be heard by other people who do not know the meaning.

Then Amihan interrupted the learning session by testing Juan Miguel of what he learns so far, 'Okay tell me what you have read so far about the book of the angels.' She asked Juan Miguel.

Juan Miguel then told her the contents of the book, 'The book tells of the glorious future that the Kingdoms will have under the strong rule of the Noble One. It also says about what are the things that could be in there, goodness, fairness, love, healing and laughter. Progress will be in our world and people will live forever to see the other planets and galaxies populated by human beings. We will have technologies that are capable of doing those stuff so that the limitations of matter may be overcome. The glorious nature of our Lord will also be ours so that we can enjoy the resurrection of the righteous. There are details here of some technologies but I cannot fully comprehend them. I will just jot down some of them and will show them to craftsmen in our place so that they can, may be, make sense of them,' said Juan Miguel.

Amihan losing no time said to Juan Miguel, 'It is about time that you should go home. I just have question about the visions that you saw in the river. Are they good for us and your kingdom? And the City of Devils?'

Not knowing much of the future except to what he read from the angels red book, Juan Miguel then told the Diwata, 'We are both waiting for the Noble Lord to come and our hopes are anchored in His teachings and appearance. If He comes soon then that will be good for both of our worlds.'

Amihan inquired further, 'It says in the angels blue book that He will return after four thousand years of your time's reckoning. Do you think it is accurate?'

Being honest Juan Miguel said that, 'It is not accurate. In our religion we are being taught that no one knows when He will return not even Him but only the Father, the Creator, not even the Angels. Those are only estimates. So we have to be always ready for His coming.'

Amihan decided then that there were no certainties even from the Angels red book, 'We will be ready for His coming. By the way, I will show you a painting wherein the visit of the Noble Lord was documented.'

Amihan brought Juan Miguel to a place on the throne of her father and showed the painting of a tall and handsome person sitting on the throne of her father. He has long strands of hair and good penetrating eyes.

Juan Miguel then exclaimed, 'I cannot believe I am seeing a colored representation of the Noble One! Are all of these things happening to me real? Please wake me up if I am dreaming.'

Amihan then tell Juan Miguel, 'You are not dreaming Juan Miguel, these are all true as far as our kingdom is concerned. You have to believe all the things here and bring them to your world and tell them of the truth that is here. We have been protecting your place for a long time now and you have to believe that. Go! Return to your home and we will continue to communicate with you although you cannot come here in our place at will. Diwatas have to fetch you to be able to come here. Or maybe you can put a sign.'

Juan Miguel then agreed with the Diwata, 'No problem my Diwata, it will be done as you say.'

Juan Miguel then with several Diwatas go to the gate of the stones and then suddenly they banished from the kingdom of the Diwatas. He is now near in the place of the walled city in Manila. He was out from his own world for around twelve days. He then proceeded to the place of the priest and look for Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros. There were no Halimaws in the place only trees, grasses, wild animals and the birds of the air. In the walled city he can recognize the faces of the people but he did not greet them instead he went straight to the place of their friend priest. He was in a hurry.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then recognized Juan Miguel from a distance and said to him, 'Ah, Juan Miguel, welcome back to our world. What now of your studies in the kingdom of the Diwatas? Now, at least for us they are real.'

Juan Miguel loses no time, he told the priest of what he read from the book, 'The book father, it told us of what will happen in the future, after the Great Judgment Day, this will be a promising future for us. If to us we only have one world or one Earth for them there are many, many planets similar to our planet teeming with intelligent life.

What about that as an introduction to the contents of the book?' Juan Miguel happily informing the priest of what he read.

It is 18th Century father and we have to do away with superstition but believe in the things written for us and the search we have made.'

Believing the lad Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then asked, 'And who will believe us?

Juan Miguel answered despite the pessimistic outlook of his friend priest, 'We believe each other father and that is enough to us for now. We will convince them later. At least the Church of Mexico has the proof and if need be we can go there.'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros gave then an optimistic outlook, 'Yes, besides I also have the angels blue book here, although we cannot read it. I hope Mayumi will come and teach us how to read the contents of the book.'

Though the language of the angels was now known to Juan Miguel: the angels blue book has different language, a security made by the angels themselves. 'I was given learning to read the contents of the angels red book but not the blue one. I do believe it is reserved for Mayumi only and to whom she will teach the language of the book,' said Juan Miguel to the priest.

Juan Miguel then continue to tell him of the contents of the book and how the rivers in the Diwatas kingdom can give view and scenes from the outside world, other kingdoms and their kingdom. He also told him of the painting of the Noble Lord that was made inside the Diwatas kingdom how He sits on the throne magnificently. To this that the Priest said he missed the opportunity to see the painting while they were inside the Diwatas kingdom although he also told the lad that that was not the last time that he would visit the place.'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then uttered these words, 'God, Bathala, willing I will be there again.'

Then Juan Miguel requested the priest for permission for him to have a piece of paper and ink pen so that he can write to their parents in Cebu and he might still catch Juancho in the pier going home since this is just 30 days since Juancho left for Cebu. There could be some delays of the ship. The priest give his agreement to the wish of the lad and he went back to the seminary. Juan Miguel then proceeded to the pier and find out if he can still catch with his twin brother.

He is still a hundred meters away when his twin brother Juancho caught sight of him. Juancho ran toward his brother shouting. Juan Miguel! Juan Miguel! Then Juan Miguel straightened his look and found his brother running towards him.

Juancho immediately asked him on what are on the other side, 'What's the news on the Diwatas' kingdom?'

Still catching his breath Juan Miguel told Juancho, 'The angels red book was about the kingdoms after the Great Judgment Day, the glorious days of planets not only of earth. See the Diwatas are open minded they know that there are many planets and galaxies in the Universe and they say that those planets are also teeming with intelligent life. There are proofs of other kingdoms in their rivers. Their rivers can let us view some scenes of the outside world and we can also verify this for I look for our place in one of their rivers and it revealed our place to me.'

Juancho then told his brother, 'In the meantime that we are here, what are we to do? Will you be the one to become a craftsman for the creation of Guitara de San Miguel replicas?'

Juan Miguel think for a while and then said to Juancho, 'I would want to. I will talk to Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros and find out the craftsman or carpenter that he was talking

about. I will study and learn under this carpenter and become a Journeyman then if I have mastered carpentry I will then start doing replicas of the Guitara de San Miguel.

Then they hear from people that the ship will go to Cebu that evening thus Jauncho has to say this thing to Juan Miguel, 'This evening the ship will be leaving for Cebu do you have anything for our parents?

Juan Miguel replied that these are what he has, 'Only this letter, the hugs and the kisses for them from me through you.'

Without wasting time Juan Miguel returned to the walled city and looked for Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros. This time he would want to learn carpentry and find out if he can make of the Guitara de San Miguel replicas. He was also thinking if the replicas would also have some magical powers. He does believe that the replicas can have some magical powers because the structures in Mexico were different than what he saw inside the Diwatas kingdom while it was the same guitar that built it. There could be some variations with regard to the outcomes.

CHAPTER XI

THE TENTH GUITAR FOR MR. CABALLERO

When Juan Miguel caught sight of Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros he then discussed the previous conversation that they have had about the carpentry job. The Priest could easily remember that they actually talked about the carpentry job.

The priest then knew that he has to fulfill his promise to the lad. Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then said, 'Oh yes, I remember we talked about that because you want to create Guitara de San Miguel replicas. So, yes, come with me and we will go to Tundo and I will introduce you to Mr. Enrique Caballero.'

This time they took a Kalesa, a horse drawn carriage, for the place was be a bit far for the priest and he knows that the sun will sweat them much. After a few minutes of riding the Kalesa they reached the intended destination in Tundo. There they found Mr. Enrique Caballero doing his carpentry. He was already tagged as the Master of his Craft.

It has been a long time before the priest last visited the Master Carpenter. Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros told Juan Miguel, 'Just remember the Lord Jesus Christ in His humble occupation. You also must learn with passion about this occupation. Though you studied religion, this one is quite different for it will involve your skills using your hands and artistic mind.'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then greeted the Master Carpenter, 'Good noon Mr. Enrique Caballero. It has been quite a while when the last time that I saw you. I have a friend here who wants to learn from you your craft and he would want to bring it to Cebu and then he will create guitars for local market in the Visayas and Mindanao.'

Mr. Enrique Caballero then looked at Juan Miguel and asked, 'How are you lad? You are still a young man. It is the right place for you to learn the trade and the craft.'

Juan Miguel then greeted the Master Carpenter, 'Good noon sir Enrique Caballero. I am humbled to be here in your place to learn your trade. I really intend to create guitars in our place and I do believe that your trade will help me achieve my goals. If I may ask sir, would there be a tuition fee while learning from you, I mean the trade?'

Mister Enrique Caballero then replied, 'Since it was my friend priest who brought you here, there would be no tuition fee. But once you have your guitar craft shop you have to send to me the tenth guitar that you create.'

Juan Miguel wondering about the answer of the Master Carpenter asked 'Why the tenth guitar replica and not the first one?'

Mister Enrique Caballero replied, 'Well, my friend, we of course would want to have the best guitar, the fabled guitar of Juan Miguel. Hehehe.'

Since the Master Carpenter gave a small laugh Juan Miguel then suspected that the man could have known something, so he asked the man about it unhesitatingly, 'What do you know about the guitar?'

The Master Carpenter would not want to give impression that he knows something he gave this reply to Juan Miguel. 'What guitar? We have not produced any guitar yet.'

Despite the answer of the Master, the Master Carpenter obviously knew something about the guitar but Juan Miguel could not ascertain what it was.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros interrupted the conversation of the two and asked them for him to be excused.

'I would like to leave Juan Miguel to your care my friend,' said the priest.

Mr. Enrique Caballero immediately answered the priest, 'Oh, yes, Father you can leave him to me.'

'Thank you very much,' said the priest.

'You are welcome Father.' Then he gives his attention to Juan Miguel.

The priest then left Juan Miguel to the care of the Master Carpenter.

'I was like you also when a fabled Guitara de San Miguel was said to be somewhere in Spain, Mexico or the Philippines, but none could really ascertain the exact location since the three places told were huge although we could have start looking at some institutions that most likely to have such guitar. We believe it will take huge amount of money before we can find the fabled Guitara de San Miguel. There were friends who want to go for a journey to find the guitar and that includes Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros, so you cannot really keep the knowledge of the fabled Guitara de San Miguel away from us. Father Oliveros has evidence in his keep that the Guitara de San Miguel exists. There is a book, Guitara de San Miguel book, a blue book, in his possession that is said to be a product of Guitara de San Miguel,' shared and explained by Mr. Enrique Caballero.

Juan Miguel knew that he could not really hide the existence of the Guitara de San Miguel not to these group of people. Besides why hide the existence of the guitar? They only hide it from the devils and not to the people that need the presence of the Guitara de San Miguel. In fact, it is necessary that good people should learn of the existence of the guitar.

'Sir you know of the Guitara de San Miguel book then you will also know the existence of the guitar. I have been to Mexico at the urging of San Miguel and actually found out the existence of the Guitara de San Miguel. The Guitara de San Miguel sir is true and we can find it at the Church of Mexico. It is a heavily guarded secret because the devil wants it for himself. He would want to create the City of Devils,' Shared Juan Miguel, who obviously knew the existence and location of the Guitara de San Miguel.

'City of Devils?' asked Mr. Caballero unsure of the truth of what he is hearing. This is something new to his hearing and that it makes the guitar even more important to be seen by good people.

'Yes, the City of Devils.

A civilization based on hate, on what is ugly and devilish. There the people would be different than when they are in Churches the ones we are trying to build. In the City of Devils, sensuality will be the norm. There would only be hate against God, hate against His sanctuary and all that dwells in it. Satan will rule them and will provide the citizens of the City of Devils with all means that he can create out of the Guitara de San Miguel to destroy each other yet they will not die for that would be their curse, the perpetuity of their destruction.' Juan Miguel explained to the Master Carpenter who by now has learned that Juan Miguel has personal knowledge of the fabled Guitara de San Miguel.

'That was recorded in one of the books of the Guitara de San Miguel as relayed through us by the Diwatas. In the City of Devils, if they took control of the Guitara de San Miguel, they would make the people of the world to be their slaves, the devils will create a civilization opposed to what we call good and then they will try to conquer the other planets that the other Guitara de San Miguel book has written about. They could be stopped of course, but only on the last day and in the meantime they will be conquerors of places and souls. The other planets can rightly be called earths also since they are composed of materials like the ones that we have. The angels red book wrote about the other side of story if the devils take possession of the Guitara de San Miguel. That is why they must be stopped by the likes of us, mortal men, who only want good for the people for our families,' continued to explain by Juan Miguel to Mr. Caballero.

'I know of the existence of the angels blue book but not of the angels red book,' said Mr. Caballero with happiness in his countenance since truth about the guitar from heaven is validated by existence not by one book but of two books. It also therefore validates the existence of heaven.

'The angels red book is not in this world or our kingdom as we know it. It is in the possession of the Diwatas. It is in their kingdom wherein the gates or passages to them we do not know although they can invite us to come to their kingdom. One of these days they will invite me to come again to their kingdom and if that happens I will ask you to come with us,' Juan Miguel said it from his heart but he does not know if he truly can invite someone unknown to the Diwatas.

‘That is very generous of you Mr. Juan Miguel. We should know what would happen in the future even if it were just a scant knowledge so that we could prepare for any eventuality. We cannot allow the devils to rule us in our lifetime here on earth,’ said the Master Carpenter yet still unsure to what will happen if the devils take a hold on the Guitara de San Miguel.

Juan Miguel explained the knowledge that was shared to him by the Diwatas, ‘It was also said that the devils have already emissaries to other planets to find out what do they have there for only the earth was the said place that they have, for ***in the Holy Scriptures and it was said that the Fall of Man was preceded by the Fall of Angels.*** If man will go to other kingdoms, there we will also find the devils, but without the Guitara de San Miguel it would be difficult for them to establish and construct their City of Devils.’

‘There was also a book written by one of our revered saints in the Church: the City of God and the City of Man. These two cities are different; one is a supernatural city while the other is a city just like any other that man has built,’ Mr. Caballero was actually referring to the book written by Saint Augustine, but this one was not elemental unlike what was written by the Guitara de San Miguel book.

‘It was Saint Augustine who wrote that City of God, but this city of man is not the city of devils. The city of man strives for man’s ideals while the city of devils is for its enslavement and destruction. Though all will have a use for construction of structures not all will use it in similar manner.’ The City of man that Juan Miguel was referring to was actually the city that governments were building and the City of God that he was saying was the Church or the Heavenly Jerusalem.

‘So it follows that there are four layers of the cities. The one in heaven and Heavenly Jerusalem; the other one on earth, and another the city of those who descend and the other one reserved for the devils. We cannot think of the City of God if it does not exist in the mind at least or the Heavenly Jerusalem while the city of man is obviously among us. We can see the structures of the city of man, there are palaces, schools, and many other structures that are in use by man. While the city of the devils, this one we cannot see yet,’ these according to Mr. Caballero.

But Juan Miguel knew that the City of Devils should not have place in this world or in any place above earth or below earth. For Underworld belongs to the dead. Underworld is the abode of the resting dead although those who are purportedly alive and descended are with it also.

‘This city of devils is the one that we are trying to stop from happening. We cannot give them their sensual comfort while the rest of their slaves would be wallowing in misery and destruction.’ Juan Miguel knew that the devils will build it on earth and will conquer it through the serpent seed or seeds.

MEANWHILE IN HEAVEN

Lord Jesus Christ was talking, 'See My San Miguel Arkangel, we are successful in the mingling of the bloods of the locals and of the bloods of the Spaniards. Juan Miguel and Juancho will certainly be able to carry out their missions and see to it that the devil is defeated. It is not yet the time for them to go to the place the Hebrews called Megiddo.

'My Lord Jesus Christ, we need to intervene one time so that the guitar will remain in human hands and in Mexico and not in any place that we do not want it to be,' San Miguel informing the Lord Jesus Christ of what happened in Mexico when seven of the angels have to go down and take the guitar from Satan.

Then San Miguel Arkangel asked permission from the Lord Jesus Christ that they, the angels, will now start patrolling the world, 'We will now resume our patrolling of the world and my Lord, it has come to our attention that the Diwatas have learnt the meaning of Earth. That it not only mean their dwelling place but other planets too that are composed of matter or of soil. The one they call planet Mars for example is another Earth full of elements of metals and irons. It is in the book that they have produced out of the Guitara de San Miguel. The people of the earth one day will discover that there are many suns and that there are many planet earths and they will find out that heaven is just beside them.'

The Lord Jesus Christ knew of what the archangel was talking about, many earths in the universes, 'But the Church is accurate in saying that there is only One Son of God. There are many sons of God for sure but the only begotten Son is only one, just like in our saying that the Holy Spirit is one. I am in a hurry to descend to earth but only the Father knows when the Son of Man will come down to earth for the second time.'

San Miguel Arkangel repeated to the Lord Jesus Christ his asking for permission, 'We will go now my Lord and once we have the news we will immediately bring it to Your attention. May You bless us o Lord in our patrolling and the Spirit remain with us.'

The Lord Jesus Christ then made a reminder to the archangel, 'Continue showing yourself to the children and make sure that we have enough force to stop the retaking of heaven by the fallen angels. For the Father has told us that the devils are hatching plot to retake heaven once they have become very strong.'

'Yes my Lord, we will see to it that all entrances to heaven are sealed, the way it was sealed with your blood.' San Miguel was of course referring to the Second Testament that the Lord Jesus Christ has instituted. That is when the Lord shed blood for His spouse the Church and Her children or people.

Then the angels who were conversing with the Lord banished from His sight and they are now on earth patrolling the planet for any possible encounter with the devils. Just

like when they were patrolling the vicinity of south of North America particularly when they found the trouble in Mexico about the guitar.

CHAPTER XII

THE GOLD OF OPHIR

Not far from the throne of the Lord Jesus was Archangel Camael, another leader of the good angels. He was there ready for any bidding by the Lord Jesus Christ. He has not been to earth for a time and he seemed anxious to go down and find out what have happened to the Guitara de San Miguel that they have left in Mexico.

Seeing Archangel Camael the Lord Jesus Christ gave an instruction to the angel who by now was enthusiastic to go down to earth too, 'By the way, My Archangel Camael, I would like to know what happened to the gold mines that the Spaniards have opened in the New World and in the Philippines. Kindly find out what happened to the mined bars or pieces of gold, not that we have need for that here in heaven. Actually, it is for the Empire and the Church own good that we account where the gold goes. When we finally have to reside on earth we need those to build our palaces, worship places of religion and government offices. Remember these passages in the book of Isaiah:

In days past he humbled the land of Zebulun and the land of Napthali, but in the days to come **he will confer glory on the Way of the Sea on the far side of Jordan, province of the nations.**

*The people that walked in darkness
has seen a great light;
on those who live in a land of deep shadow
a light has shone.*

***You have made their gladness greater,
you have made their joy increase;
they rejoice in your presence
as men rejoice at harvest time,
as men are happy when they are dividing the spoils.***

*For the yoke that was weighing on him,
the bar across his shoulders,*

*the rod of his oppressor,
these you break as on the day of Midian.*

*For all the footgear of battle,
Every cloak rolled in blood,
Is burnt,
And consumed by fire.*

***For there is a child born for us,
a son given to us
and dominion [government] is laid on his shoulders;
and this is the name they give him;
Wonder-Counselor, Mighty-God,
Eternal-Father, Prince-of-Peace.
Wide is his dominion
in peace that has no end,
for the throne of David and for his royal power,
which he establishes and makes secure
in justice and integrity.
From this time onwards and forever;
the jealous love of Yahweh Sabaoth will do this. – Isaiah 9:1-7***

Then angel Camael told the Lord, 'My Lord Jesus Christ, I will go down together with my group and find out about the bars of gold that have been mined.

Are we to change appearance or remain in spirit form?' the Archangel asked the Lord Jesus Christ.

The Lord Jesus Christ gave His advice to the angel since He knew how to be human, 'The best is to change in appearance, be like the people who are there but your identity must not be known since the gold must also remain secret. Your inquiries will raise suspicion with regard to the destination of the gold. You may try to rendezvous with San Miguel Arkanghel.'

Archangel Camael bid farewell to the Lord Jesus Christ and left His presence with the word, 'As you say my Lord Jesus.'

Then instantly the archangel left the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ. He went down using the West gate to the area of the world that was called, South America, exactly at the place where local people of Mexico were mining gold. There they talked to the locals about the gold as to what they do about them. The locals do nothing about the gold but simply as adornment to their bodies and faces. They told them that it was the foreigners who have the use with regard to the gold although they do know what were the uses. There were other people like them that went to Europe and inquired about the uses of gold, they returned not satisfied in regards to the use. They say it was about economy but they do not really know what economy was all about. They simply mine the gold and have something in return.'

Archangel Camael, though not into economics since that is alien in heaven, told them that having in return for gold is economics.

Archangel Camael told the locals of Mexico that: 'though I do not seek to trade with you I will leave something for all of you.' The angel knew that he has something for the locals of the place.'

Here he gave a blue stone that will react and inform the archangel as to the whereabouts of mined gold in those areas. The stone can also detect the other destinations of all the gold as long as they already have established contact with the stone. They called it in heaven entanglement of material things, however far the material things are from each other. This one is a secret of heaven that could not be fathomed even by the angels as of this time. Though, the angels are also studying the depths of God but only in so far as He allows Him to learn about Him.

The trail of the gold eventually brought them to Mexico City where all the gold mined in Mexico eventually resides. As Archangel Camael and his team surveyed the place of gold they noticed that it was made of concrete stones similar to the structures built by Guitara de San Miguel. He then instructed one in his team of angels to go inside and survey the place of gold.

Archangel Camael saw the structure where they bring the gold. He therefore asked them, 'What do they call this structure?'

Angel Sanbael answered the archangel, 'They call this structure bank. This is where most of the gold that come from the mining pit go after which they transfer it using crates and carts to the pier there in the northeastern side of the country.'

Archangel Camael knew then that the gold bars are in danger from the devils, 'There are dangers from the devils in regards to the transport of these bars of gold. How do we know that the gold bars are not track by the devils?'

Angel Sanbael told the archangel that the blue stone can tell whether a gold has been touched by a devil or not. The blue stone reacts by emitting different silhouette of colors other than its natural color. The blue stone usually turn into black and emits dark light and then if a devil made a hold into it it can turn black for long and if they retrieve it they can return it to its natural color.

Then there was sound coming from the outside of the building. It was a Spaniard with large keys in his hands opening the front door of the bank. He was a Caucasian, like the physical appearance that the angels took in their human form. Though unlike them who were pure spirit intelligences, the Spaniard has, like the Lord Jesus Christ, a rational soul and or a spirit soul. But the angels know that being not constrained by material entanglements and purely spirits they were thousand times more powerful than the humans. Material entanglement makes the humans weaker than their counterpart spirit creatures.

The Spaniard then was able to enter the bank and looked for some papers that need to be filled up for the accounting of the bars of gold. The bars of gold that need to be transported to Spain, to his country wherein Catholicism was so strong and that the energy to propagate Catholicism was still strong. He was not hesitating to give all his energy and life just to make sure that his beloved country remain strong and continue to be the bastion

of Catholicism. These bars of gold he believes will perpetuate their ascendancy in the world. He knows that they were in competition with the Protestants in making sure that the riches of the world will remain in the hands of the Catholic Empires and that includes Spain and Portugal.

Outside there remain some people who were waiting for the Spaniard to go out and give them instruction in regards to the transport of the gold bars. The angels inside were immediate in their thought and in a hurry entangled the other blue stones in their possession with the gold bars that were about to be transported. The Angels knew that the gold could now be traced wherever they go. The blue stone will learn of its location in the whole of the world, but not only that, the blue stone will also emit signals when the physically manifested devils were near the gold or if they were in possession of it.

Then the Spaniard came out of the bank and gave instruction to the people outside who were mostly Spaniards too. He told them that there were one hundred fifty crates of gold bars that will be transported using twenty bull carts. The smaller bulls will carry six carts while the bigger bulls will carry eight carts. There will be escorts of six bull carts with soldiers and ten horses with mounted soldier officers. That is how important the gold for them. But the angels were not much impressed with regard to the importance that the people were giving to the gold. Does the Lord Jesus Christ have the peoples' covetousness too in regards to the precious metals that the people wanted badly to be in their possession? There must be uses for these gold bars as he would be finding out. Then he suddenly remembered that the Lord Jesus Christ has left a Church here in the world and that His Church has to survive just like any other institutions that use worldly means of survival.

Then the angels communicated their thoughts with each other. The bars of gold were important to the Empire and the Church. Somehow, because of these bars of gold they could command their will to the peoples and nations. However the angels were aware that up North of Mexico was a nation being born strong and will make use of gold only for a time but not forever in her economy, this nation was a tinkering nation. They will remain strong in so far as they can command the use of modern technologies at their disposal unlike the Spaniards who have their faith in their bars of gold. But then again angels too know that technologies would also falter eventually since they rely on the strength of the people doing them. For the Holy Scriptures said that the only refuge that people have is their reliance on Yahweh Sabaoth. They cannot rely on other people or horses or any other technology.

The people outside of the bank then entered it. Two by two like ants they were carrying the crates of gold bars into the parked bull carts outside of the bank. They were heavy for the people for their strengths were limited. The crates weigh almost one hundred kilograms each but since they can cooperatively carry the crates, they were able to load them in the bull carts outside of the bank.

The angels inside the bank were looking at them, at that juncture the angels realized that people were actually strong when it comes to cooperation. The Lord God was right when He descended one time when the people of Babel were building their tower, the famous Tower of Babel in the Holy Scriptures. The undertaking has to be discontinued or that the people with one language and one Mind, can then do all the undertakings that they want to do. In the words of the Lord Himself: "Nothing will be too difficult for them." Thus the Lord decided to confuse their language in Babel and the people not understanding each other discontinued building the tower of babel and went each to his own way. Then the Lord God succeeded in stopping the one language of the world and One Mind.

The One Mind that the Lord was also concerned was actually a Hermetic teaching that the angels were also aware of, for they knew that Elementals were also part of Creation. That many of the angels that left their proper abode in heaven actually were affected by the elemental forces and as a result of the attraction they had with the daughters of men and they had intercourse with them and produced beings stronger than man but weaker than their fathers. These offspring of the angels and daughters of men then became heroes and men of renown during their time. But Archangel Camael and Angel Sanbael knew that these angels descendants still exist in the world. They joined the exodus of people when they discovered the New World. They went as far as the Philippines, Mexico, South America, New Zealand and Australia. The only weakness that these descendants of the angels have was on being passionate with their own kind. Although the Lord Jesus Christ encouraged the mingling of their blood with the locals it was because it mirrors His conception, while His Father, being God, was in Heaven and His Mother was a human being.

Outside the bank, people were lining up and the Spaniards were counting the crates, six and eight crates depending on the size of the bull that will pull the carts. Then a shout from the head of the soldiers that were escorting the gold bars echoes in the air. 'All has been accounted we can now proceed to the pier!'

It was an arduous trek for the convoy of bull carts and mounted soldiers. Not all of the people should know what they were carrying toward the pier although they knew that these were dangerous cargo; dangerous to the lives of those who have a hand on it. Whether the banker, the miner or them the transporters of the gold bars. All eyes and ears would want to know what they were carrying and transporting to Spain. It took them several days before they finally reached the pier, the destination that the transporters where all anxious to reach.

Reaching the pier was the most relieving thing for the transporters for the way were full of dangers. The unconverted Aztecs to Christianity will surely raid them if they learn of their cargo. For, although and despite, having no use of gold previously, except as ornaments, the Aztecs now learn how the foreigners value the metal. For they can trade it for the goods of the foreigners that they covet, food, utensils and many other items that they do not have.

The ships were there in the pier ready to take the cargoes. There were five ships in all that will sail to Spain. The one hundred fifty crates of gold were divided into the five ships at thirty crates each. It will be heavy but the ships were large enough to accommodate such weight and the sailors know that it would not much of a hindrance to their voyage. What was their concern were the pirates on the seas. Surely, they would be looking for the cargoes of gold bars. The risk of finding a convoy of ships with these bars of gold was worth it. It will make them rich beyond imagination.

There have been attempts to seize their cargoes before but all of them were unsuccessful. Now they have asked for armed escorts from the monarchy. There were now two armed ships ready to defend the other unarmed but freighted ships from the pirates and the mariners also have some soldiers stationed on the freighted ships.

The transfer of the crates from the convoy of bull carts became ant like again. Workers have to line up and bring the crates to the ship cooperatively because without it they cannot move the heavy gold bars that were inside the crates. It took them half a day to transfer all the crates to the ships. The ships will wait for another day to transfer everything that needed for the voyage, provisions for food and many other cargoes that come from the Philippines, the Chinese goods that the galleons from the Philippines have brought would be loaded to ships going to Spain too. The ships would also need to stay for the customs clearance. Here in the Customs that the cargoes will be recorded for taxation purposes since the monarchy and the colonies were dependent on their existence with the revenue taken from the trading and many other economic activities.

When all were put in place in the five ships they now ready to sail and sail they did toward east of the ocean. The ships were going back to Europe with so much wealth untold to the other countries. It has been an envy of other countries in Europe, the existence of colonies of Spain, although the hardships of the colonizers were scarcely told. However in Northern Europe, an island nation of Great Britain, a protestant country, was seeking passage towards the west of Atlantic Ocean. They have been trying to established colonies North of American continent. In fact, there have been settlers already in some areas east of the continent. Great Britain was establishing the so called Commonwealth Nations, all colonies under the banner of Great Britain. It could be seen in their aggressiveness when it comes to expanding their dominions worldwide, and Spain was concerned. Although for the time being they do not see much the strengths of Commonwealth Nations to be much alarmed.

In matter of two months the ships were able to sail to Europe, docked and unload the cargoes. There unknown to the sailors that the angels were able to join them and find out the destination of the bars of gold that they were carrying to Spain as they follow the trails of gold bars. Although this time it was not the bulls that carried the crates. They were the towering horses. These horses were just like the horses that they use in fighting in Europe, the Near East and Middle East. Tall, courageous and handsome horses, ready to fight for war or carrying heavy loads.

The gold bars ended in a treasury house in Madrid. Just like in Mexico they were examined and then put into the bunker of the bank. Surreptitiously the angels were able to go inside of the bank and then as the workers unloaded the crates of gold bars they entangled the blue stones to the gold bars and went away. They now know where the gold bars were located and that they can always locate the gold bars wherever it go with the help of the blue stone.

It was now a matter of time before the Church of the Lord can conquer the whole of American continent. The angels believe that His Mother will be of great help in converting the people of America to the Lordship of His Son. For them a Mother figure was so strong that their hearts soften when mothers intercede on behalf of another person. In Mexico conversions to her Son have been achieved by the Lady of Guadalupe in no time. In other areas of Americas seemed to be difficult but they were being converted because of the message of the Good News. To them, when heaven and earth were married, there was no greater news than that, and it was possible with the conception, birth, preaching, death and resurrection of the Son of God.

Archangel Camael talking to his angels, 'Now we know the end destination of the gold bars.'

Angel Sanbael elaborated the happenings and the advantages that they now have over those who do not know where the gold bars were, 'It will no longer be difficult for us once the Lord Jesus ask us to go to back here on earth and locate the gold bars. The use of blue stone will give us advantage as to the future locations of the gold bars. We will be able to always track them and protect them from the devils, for the devils can use the gold bars to their advantage. They can corrupt the people using them. We know the hearts of the humans they were easily corrupted by material things, power and sensual pleasures. We cannot erase from their person's constitution that they came from soil and so they were prone to biddings of the elemental principles that were in the soil. Although many of their kinds were successful in putting themselves in the realm of spirits and remain therein without succumbing to the lures of sensual pleasures, power and of the call of being famous.'

The angels returned to heaven and reported to the Lord Jesus what they have accomplished. The Lord was satisfied with their accomplishment and decided that the group of Archangel Camael must immediately rendezvous with the group of San Miguel Arkanghel. Promptly the group of Archangel Camael was with San Miguel Arkanghel.

CHAPTER XIII

THE ANGEL OF PERSIA

San Miguel Arkanghel then told the group of angels in his charge about his encounter with the angels of Persia. 'We have been following the group of Satan up to Persia and the angel of Persia was resisting us in regards to having the Persians submit to the Lordship of the Lord Jesus Christ. They are also strong and that the God the Father is somewhat silent in pressing our force through the country of Persia. There must be reasons for these. The most apparent is that it is not yet time for the Armageddon. The conditions are ripe for another reaping but not for the last battle that we are preparing.'

Angel Sanbael being knowledgeable replied that, 'I was told of a kingdom in Asia that seemed to be the candidate to what the prophets are writing about. They call themselves the **Middle Kingdom**. They have been dealing with the colony for several hundreds of years now. Their population runs into hundreds of millions just like India, the neighbor of Persia. In estimates by the Akasha they will be into billions of people by 20th century.

'These middle kingdom people are ancestor worshipers and many of them are Buddhist, those who believe in deification of Buddha. They believe in the existence of Nirvana and many other levels of heavens. The ancestor worship is the belief that in the afterlife those that are dead can still communicate with the living in our world although they are in different world, in their world it is just the same as the one they left. They have to deal with a bureaucracy that would allow them entrance into heaven thus their loved ones have to send them caricatures of important items here in this world by burning them, for example, money and appliances and other amenities in life.'

'There is also a peculiar thing with the people of this middle kingdom, they believe in the **Mandate of Heaven**. This mandate of heaven is a belief that rulers must know the will of heaven so that they can rule the people effectively. They must rule in such a way that the welfare of the kingdom and of the people were their paramount concerns. If the rulers do not govern the people well then heaven can withdraw its mandate by sending typhoons, earthquakes and many other natural calamities. That will be a sign to the people that they can revolt against the rulers and topple the existing rulers or monarchy.'

'For them also, they consider their rulers to be the **Son of Heaven**. What is this son of heaven? The Son of Heaven is a belief that the ruler of China was the center of the Universe. For the Chinese events happen at the biddings of the rulers of the Middle Kingdom. With proper offerings to heaven the Son of Heaven can then withhold some of the calamities that they dread to come to them. For this middle kingdom, having many people, dread the flooding of their rivers, the withholding of rain by heaven; that could affect their

agriculture and could mean starvation. Unlike in other parts of the world wherein their population was fairly stable and not in any way dreading the effects of natural calamities. There was also difficulty with this middle kingdom in dealing with superior powers than they were. They cannot seemed be able to trade with them in equal terms, though they have been always in the mind of the Europeans since the time of Marco Polo, since the time that the Europeans learned of the Chinese Empire. For them the existence of this kingdom was a proof that they can trade with many other people other than their Middle Eastern enemies.'

To this lecture, San Miguel Arkangel gave thanks, 'So much lecture from you angel Sanbael. Thank you very much for such a graceful delivery of the likes and ways of these people. I also would want to know about the people of India. They have been calling us more than the Lord Jesus Christ but unknown to them Lord Krishna and Lord Jesus Christ are the same person in different context.'

'The truth is that the middle kingdom civilization has borrowed many from the Hindu civilization so that they can continue to progress. Unknown to them, we were the ones who gave them ideas and it just so happened that the Hindus were more receptive to the thoughts that come to their minds. They are conscious of us in the mental plane. We are their visitors in the mind. Without us these progresses that they already have would not be possible. Only that the Hindus are more into our world than their world. They do not intend to stay in their world they want to achieve heaven while still on earth. So much so that they forget that heaven is just beside earth, thus material poverty struck them everywhere.' Archangel San Miguel explained to the other angels with him.

San Miguel Arkangel spoke about the fall of Satan and the time left for Satan and his angels. 'There will be short time left and Satan will be making his final attempt to seize heaven once more. He has been into preparation for that for the short time that is provided him. He has been into perfecting the force of evil that it is enough to shake the heavenly bodies that our brother angels are holding into their respective places.'

'Take for example the Eschatological Discourse of our Lord according to the one written by Saint Matthew:

The Lord Jesus left the [Jerusalem] Temple, and as he was going away his disciples came up to draw His attention to the Temple Buildings. He said to them in reply, 'You see all these? I tell you solemnly, not a single stone here will be left on another: everything will be destroyed.' And when he was sitting on the Mount of Olives the disciples came and asked Him privately. 'Tell us, when is this going to happen, and what will be the sign of your coming and of the end of the world?'

And Jesus answered them, 'Take care that no one deceives you; because many will come using my name and saying, "I am the Christ", and they will deceive many. You will hear of wars and rumors of wars; do not be alarmed, for this is something that must happen, but the end will not be yet. For nations will fight nations, and kingdom against kingdom. There

will be famines and earthquakes here and there. All this is only the beginning of the birth pangs.

Then they will hand you over to be tortured and put to death; and you will be hated by all the nations on account of my name. And then many will fall away; men will betray one another and hate one another. Many false prophets will arise; they will deceive many, and with the increase of lawlessness, love in most men will grow cold; but the man who stands firm to the end will be saved.

This Good News of the kingdom will be proclaimed to the whole world as a witness to all the nations. And then the end will come.

'So when you see the disastrous abomination, of which the prophet Daniel spoke, set up in the Holy Place (let the reader understand), then those in Judea must escape to the mountains; if a man on the housetop, he must not come down to collect his belongings; if a man is in the fields, he must not turn back to fetch his cloak. Alas for those with child, or with babies at the breast, when those days come! Pray that you will not have to escape in winter or on a Sabbath. For then there will be great distress such as, until now, since the world began, there never has been, nor ever will be again. And if that time had not been shortened, no one would have survived; but shortened that time shall be, for the sake of those who are chosen.

If anyone says to you then, "Look, here is the Christ" or, "He is there" do not believe it; for false Christs and false prophets will arise and produce great signs and portents, enough to deceive even the chosen, if that were possible. There; I have forewarned you.

*'If, then, they say to you, "Look, he is in the desert", do not go there; "Look, he is in some hiding place", do not believe it; because **the coming of the Son of Man will be like lightning striking in the east and flashing far into the west. Wherever the corpse is, there will the vultures gather.***

*Immediately after the distress of those days the sun will be darkened, the moon will lose its brightness, **the stars will fall from the sky and the powers of heaven will be shaken.** And then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven; then too all the peoples of the earth will beat their breasts; and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And He will send his angels with a loud trumpet to gather his chosen from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.*

'Take the fig tree as a parable: as soon as its twigs grow supple and its leaves come out, you know that summer is near. So with you when you see all these things: know that He is near, at the very gates. I tell you solemnly, before this generation has passed away all these things will have taken place. Heaven and earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away. But as for that day and hour, nobody knows it, neither the angels of heaven, nor the Son, no one but the Father only.

'As it was in Noah's day, so will it be when the Son of Man comes. For in those days before the flood people were eating, drinking, taking wives, taking husbands, right up to the

day Noah went into the ark, and they suspected nothing till the Flood came and swept all away. It will be like this when the Son of Man comes. Then of two men in the fields one is taken, one left; of two women at the millstone grinding, one is taken, one left.

'So stay awake, because you do not know the day when your Master is coming. You may be quite sure of this that if the householder had known at what time of the night the burglar would come, he would have stayed awake and would not have allowed anyone to break through the wall of his house. Therefore, you too must stand ready because the Son of man is coming at an hour you do not expect. – Matthew 24:1 – 44.

After the quoting the Lord Jesus in His eschatological discourse about the end time San Miguel Arkangel reminded the group that they will be witnessing the reappearance of the devils in human form. 'The devils have enough spiritual resources that they deceived the people in fighting the Lord and His angels in the last battle of the end. As to how it will happen, already has been predicted by the Christian prophets in the book of Revelation, the book that was written by John the Apostle or by any of his immediate disciples in his circle. Although they believe that some of the predictions in the prophecies must happen first before the end of time. And it was not a secret in heaven as regards to the players in this end time and the institutions involved. It goes like this, the end of time:

JESUS CHRIST ON A WHITE HORSE

A*nd now I saw heaven open, and a white horse appear; its rider was called Faithful and True; He is a judge with integrity, a warrior for justice. His eyes were flames of fire, and His head was crowned with many coronets; the name written on Him was known only to Himself; His cloak was soaked in blood. He is known by the name, The Word of God. Behind Him, dressed in linen of dazzling white, rode the armies of heaven on white horses. From His mouth came a sharp sword to strike the pagans with; He is the one who will rule them with an iron scepter, and tread out the wine of Almighty God's fierce anger. On His cloak and on His thigh there was a name written: the King of kings and the Lord of lords.*

*I saw an angel standing in the sun, and he shouted aloud to all the birds that were flying high overhead in the sky, **'Come here. Gather together at the great feast that God is giving.** There will be the flesh of kings for you, and the flesh of great generals and heroes, the flesh of horses and their riders and of all kinds of men, citizens and slaves, small and great.'*

***Then I saw the beast, with all the kings of the earth and their armies, gathered together to fight the Rider and His army.** But the beast was taken prisoner, together with the false prophet who had worked miracles on the beast's behalf and by them had deceived all who had been branded with the mark of the beast and worshipped his statue. These two were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur. All the rest were killed by the sword of the Rider, which came out of His mouth, and all the birds were gorged with their flesh.*

Then I saw an angel come down from heaven with the key of the Abyss in his hand and an enormous chain. He overpowered the dragon, that primeval serpent which is the devil and Satan, and chained him up for a thousand years. He threw him into the Abyss, and shut the entrance and sealed it over him, to make sure he would not deceive the nations again until the thousand years had passed. At the end of that time he must be released, but only for a short while.

Then I saw some thrones, and I saw those who are given the power to be judges take their seats on them. I saw the souls of all who had been beheaded for having witnessed for Jesus and for having preached God's word, and those who refused to worship the beast or his statue and would not have the brand-mark on their foreheads or hands; they came to life, and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. This is the first resurrection; the rest of the dead did not come to life until the thousand years were over. Happy and blessed are those who share in the first resurrection; the second death cannot affect them but they will be priests of God and of Christ and reign with him for a thousand years.

GOG AND MAGOG MOBILIZATION

When the thousand years are over, Satan will be released from his prison and will come out to deceive the nations in four quarters of the earth, **Gog and Magog, and mobilize them for war. His armies will be as many as the sands of the sea; they will come swarming over the entire country and besiege the camp of the saints, which is the city that God loves.** But fire will come down on them from heaven and consume them. Then the devil, who misled them, will be thrown into the lake of fire and sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet are, their torture will not stop, day or night, for ever and ever.

THE WHITE THRONE

Then I saw a great white throne and the One who was sitting on it. In His presence, earth and sky vanished, leaving no trace. I saw the dead, both great and small, standing in front of the throne, while the book of life was opened, and other books opened which were the record of what they have done in their lives, by which the dead were judged.

*The sea gave up all the dead who were in it; Death and Hades were emptied of the dead that were in them; and everyone was judged according to the way in which he had lived. **Then Death and Hades were thrown into the burning lake. This burning lake is the second death; and anybody whose name could not be found written in the book of life was thrown into the burning lake.** – Revelation 19:11 – 20:15.'*

'These are what are written in the book that is revered by the Christians as left to them by the Lord Jesus Christ,' explained San Miguel Arkangel.

Angel Sanbael inquired to them 'But how do we know that these will happen?'

It was San Miguel again who answered the inquiry of the angel. In the same Holy Scriptures we can know how these will come about. First, we have to understand who were the antichrists, and the beast and the false prophet. Here was what it says in the same book:

THE ANTICHRIST/S

I was standing on the seashore. Then I saw a beast emerge from the sea: it had seven heads and ten horns, with a coronet of each of its ten horns, and its heads were marked with blasphemous titles. I saw that the beast was like a leopard, with paws like a bear and a mouth like a lion; the dragon had handed over to it his own power and his throne and worldwide authority. I saw that one of its heads seemed to have had a fatal wound but that this deadly injury had been healed and, after that, the whole world had marveled and followed the beast. They prostrated themselves in front of the dragon because he had given the beast his authority; and they prostrated themselves in front of the beast, saying, **'Who can compare with the beast? How could anybody defeat him?'** For forty-two months the beast was allowed to mouth its boasts and blasphemies and to do whatever it wanted; and it mouthed its blasphemies against God, against his name, his heavenly Tent and all those who are sheltered there. It was allowed to make war against the saints and conquer them, and given power over every race, people, language and nation; and **all the people of the world will worship it, that is, everybody whose name has not been written down since the foundation of the world in the book of life of the sacrificial Lamb.** If anyone has ears to hear, let him listen: Captivity for those who are destined for captivity; the sword for those who are to die by the sword. This why the saints must have constancy and faith.

Then I saw a second beast; it emerged from the ground; it had two horns like a lamb, but made a noise like a dragon. This second beast was servant to the first beast, and extended its authority everywhere, making the world and all its people worship the first beast, which had the fatal wound and had been healed. And it worked great miracles, even to calling down fire from heaven on to the earth while people watched. Through the miracles which it was allowed to do on behalf of the first beast, it was able to win over the people of the world and persuade them to put up a statue in honor of the beast that had been wounded by the sword and still lived. It was allowed to breathe life into this statue, so that the statue of the beast was able to speak, and to have everyone – small and great, rich and poor, slave and citizen – to be branded on the right hand or on the forehead, and made it illegal for anyone to buy or sell anything unless he had been branded with the name of the beast or with the number of its name.

There is a need for shrewdness here: if anyone is clever enough he may interpret the number of the **beast; it is the number of a man, the number 666.** – Revelation 13.

Angel Sanbael continued his inquiries about the antichrists and the beasts and the false prophet. Again it was San Miguel Arkangel who answered, 'Just like us who are two thirds of the force in heaven which is translated in the Arabic Numerals as .66666... so thus

the beast will be the number of 666 or it means man, without the spirit, many will not be able to defeat this man. People forget that it was not the man they are worshipping but God and He cannot be seen but in Lord Christ Jesus as the fullness of God is in Him. John the Beloved has something to say about these topics, first about the Antichrist:

THE ANTICHRISTS

Children, these are the last days;
You were told that an Antichrist must come,
and now several antichrists have already appeared;
we know from this that these are the last days.

*Those rivals of Christ came out of our own number, but they had never really belonged;
if they had belonged, they would have stayed with us;
but they left us, to prove that not one of them ever belonged to us.*

*But you have been anointed by the Holy One,
And have all received the knowledge.*

*It is not because you do not know the truth that I am writing to you
but rather because you know it already
and know that no lie can come from the truth.*

***The man who denies that Jesus is the Christ –
he is the liar,***

he is Antichrist;

and he is denying the Father as well as the Son,

because no one who has the Father can deny the Son,

and to acknowledge the Son is to have the Father as well. *Keep alive in yourselves what
you were taught in the beginning: as long as what you were taught in the beginning is alive in
you, you will live in the Son and in the Father; and what is promised to you by His own
promise is eternal life. – 1 John 2:18 – 25*

Or in the writings of Saint Paul:

To turn now, brother, to the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and how we shall all be gathered round Him: please do not get excited too soon or alarmed by any prediction or rumor on any letter claiming to come from us, implying that the Day of the Lord has already arrived. Never let anyone deceive you in this way.

It cannot happen until the Great revolt has taken place and the Rebel, the Lost One, has appeared. This is the Enemy, the one who claims to be so much greater than all that men call 'god', so much greater than anything that is worshipped, that he enthrones himself in God's sanctuary and claims that he is God. *Surely you remember me telling you about this when I was with you? And you know, too, what is holding him back from appearing before his appointed time. Rebellion is at its work already, but in secret, and the one who is holding it back has first to be removed before the Rebel appears openly. The Lord will kill him with breath of His mouth and will annihilate him with His glorious appearance at his coming.*

But when the Rebel comes, Satan will set to work: there will be all kinds of miracles and a deceptive show of signs and portent, and everything evil that can deceive those who are bound for destruction because they would not grasp the love of the truth which could have saved them. The reason why God is sending a power to delude them make them believe what is untrue is to condemn all who refused to believe in the truth and chose wickedness instead. – 2 Thessalonians 2:1-12.

Angel Sanbael again asked the other angels with regard to the quotations from the humans' Holy Scriptures. 'Why do you higher angels quote from them?' 'The revelations were given to the humans because they are the concern of salvation and not us angels who remain loyal to the Father. **Only those angels who did not remain in their proper abode and their descendants are the concern of salvation of angels because their natural abode is in heaven.** The Lord Jesus knew that they too must be saved and not only the humans but some angels and their descendants. Besides, we, angels are pure intelligence in our spiritual existence and we do not have a rational soul unlike the humans, flesh and soul are what are being saved and soul is attached to the flesh. As soul is also attached to the spirit. Spirits are always saved except for the devils' explained San Miguel Arkangel.

The religion of these people are very deep indeed for their Saints said:

'Without any doubt, the mystery of our religion is very deep indeed:
He [Jesus] was made visible in the flesh,
attested by the Spirit,
seen by angels,
proclaimed to the pagans,
believed in by the world,
taken up in glory. – 1 Timothy 3:16

In the same way that He also must be proclaimed to the descendants of the Nephilim, who are these Nephilim? The Nephilim are the descendants of our compatriots who left their abode in heaven and had intercourse with the daughters of men. There were many references to them in our Akashic records but few references in the Holy Scriptures of men.' San Miguel Arkangel continued with his explanation. 'Here it was what was said in the book of Genesis:

When men had begun to be plentiful on the earth, and daughters had been born to them, the sons of God, looking at the daughters of men saw they were pleasing, so they married as many as they chose. Yahweh said, 'My spirit must not be forever be disgraced in man, for he is but flesh; his life shall last no more than a hundred and twenty years'. **The Nephilim were on the earth at that time (and even afterwards) when the sons of God resorted to the daughters of man, and had children by them.** These are the heroes of days gone by, famous men. – Genesis 6:1-4.

San Miguel Arkangel continued his discussion about the topics since it seemed that he has mastery of it. 'This is 18th Century in the time of men but where can we find the two hundred million strong army that the book of Revelation was talking about? Again I will quote in the Holy Scriptures:

THE 200 MILLION STRONG ARMY

***T**hen the fifth angel blew his trumpet, and I saw a star that had fallen from heaven on to the earth, and he was given the key to the shaft leading down to the Abyss. When he unlocked the shaft of the Abyss, smoke poured up out of the Abyss like the smoke from a furnace so that the sun and the sky were darkened by it, and out of the smoke dropped locusts which were given the powers that scorpions have on earth: they were forbidden to harm any fields or crops or trees and told only to attack any men who were without God's seal on their foreheads. They were not to kill them but, but to give them pain for five months, and the pain was to be the pain of a scorpion's sting. When this happens, men will long for death and not find it anywhere; they will want to die and death will evade them.*

To look at, these locusts were like horses armored for battle; they had things that looked like gold crowns on their heads, and faces that seemed human, and hair like women's hair, and teeth like lion's teeth. They had body armor like iron breastplates, and the noise of their wings sounded like a great charge of horses and chariots into battle. Their tails were like scorpions', with stings, and it was with them that they were able to injure people for five months. As their leader they had their emperor, the angel of the Abyss, whose name in Hebrew is Abaddon, or Apollyon in Greek.

*The sixth angel blew his trumpet, and I heard a voice come out of the four horns of the golden altar in front of God. It spoke to the sixth angel with the trumpet, and said, 'Release the four angels that are chained up at the great river Euphrates. These four angels had been put there ready for this hour of this day of this month of this year, and now they were released to destroy a third of human race. **I learnt how many there were in their army: twice ten thousand times ten thousand mounted men.** In my vision I saw horses, and the riders with their breastplates of flame color, hyacinth blue and sulfur yellow; the horses had lions' heads, and fire, smoke and sulfur were coming out of their mouths. It was by these three plagues, that the one third of the human race was killed. All the horses' power was in their mouths and their tails: their tails were like snakes, and had heads that were able to wound. But the rest of human race, who escaped these plagues, refused either to abandon the things they had made with their own hands – the idols made of gold, silver, bronze, stone and wood that can neither see nor hear nor move – or to stop worshipping devils. Nor did they give up their murdering, or witchcraft, or fornication or stealing. – Revelation 9:1-21.*

San Miguel continued his discussion, 'Remember the angel of Persia who opposed me? He was very strong and only with the help of Archangel Gabriel were we able to neutralize him. But let us not dwell in him, though his people, the Persians, will be included

in the fight of the last battle of the end when we angels will be with our Lord Jesus Christ and return to this earth and claim his kingdom.'

Angel Sanbael would like to know from the higher angels the existence of these two hundred million army since in his estimate they cannot be for now. San Miguel Arkangel explained to them that God gives human and the other angels time. Not those in the company of Satan, time to repent and join Him in everlasting happiness. For human these will be a slow unfolding of events but for them angels this will be very fast events.

'If you will notice', San Miguel Arkangel continued, 'the existence of the Middle Kingdom in Asia. This middle kingdom, as their rulers and administrators would want to call the kingdom, has for now three hundred million people. Not that they will all join and fight in the battle but by this number we can estimate that by the time our Lord comes down they will be in billions and that the number of two hundred million is just a drop in a bucket of water. Besides, it is not the only nation that was mentioned in the book of the Christians that will join in the battle. There were also the race of Temujin, the Mongols and many other Asians that are awaiting the biddings of the Lord Jesus to join and Him in showing His glory to His brothers, I will again quote from the Holy Scriptures of the Christians and the Israelites:

GOG AND MAGOG AND ALL THEIR TROOPS

The word of Yahweh was addressed to me as follows, 'Son of man, turn towards Gog and the country of Magog, the prince of Rosh, Meshech and Tubal, prophesy against him. Say, "The Lord Yahweh says this: I am against you, Gog, prince of Rosh, Meshech and Tubal. I will turn you round, fixing hooks in your jaws, and drag you and your troops along, all the horses and well armored horsemen, and all that great army carrying shields and bucklers, and wielding swords. Persia and Cush and Put are with them, all with buckler and helmet; Gomer and all its troops, northernmost Bethtogarmah and all its troops, and many nations with you. Be ready, be well prepared, you and all your troops and the others rallying round you, and hold yourself at my service.

Many days will pass before you are given orders; in years to come you will march against this country. Its inhabitants will have been living undisturbed, remote from all other peoples, since they escaped the sword and were gathered in from various nations, here in the long deserted mountains of Israel. Like a storm you will come up and onwards, and cover the land like a cloud, you, your army and many nations with you.

The Lord Yahweh says this: On that day, a thought is going to enter your mind and you will work out a wicked plan. You will say: I will attack this undefended country and march against this peaceful nation living undisturbed. They all live in towns that have no walls or bars or gates. To plunder them for loot, I am going to reach out my hand toward the ruins they live in, against this nation gathered out of other nations, these stock-breeders and tradesmen who live at the navel of the earth. Sheba and Dedan, the traders of Tarshish

and all its young lions will ask you: Have you come to plunder? Are you massing your troops with a view to looting? To make off with gold and silver, seize cattle and goods, and come away with unlimited spoil?"

*'And so, son of man, say in prophecy to Gog, "The Lord Yahweh says this: Is it not true that you are planning to set out at a time when my people Israel is living undisturbed? You plan to leave your home in the far north, you and many nations with you, a great army of countless troops all mounted. You plan to invade Israel, my people. You will be like a cloud covering the earth. **I Myself am going to bring you in days to come to attack my country, so that the nations may learn what I am, when I have used you, Gog, to display my holiness to them.***

*The Lord Yahweh says this: It was of you that I spoke in the past through my servants the prophets of Israel, who prophesied and foretold your invasion. On the day Gog attacks the land of Israel – it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks – I shall grow angry. In my anger, my jealousy and the heat of my fury I say it: I swear that on the day there will be a fearful quaking in the land of Israel. At my presence the fish in the sea and birds of heaven, the wild beasts and all the reptiles that crawl along on the ground, and all men on earth, will quake. Mountains will fall, cliffs crumble, walls collapse, and I will confront him with every sort of terror – it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks. His men will turn their swords on each other. I will punish him with plague and bloodshed and send torrential rain, hailstones, fire and brimstone against him and his hordes and against the many nations with him. **I mean to display my greatness and holiness and compel the many nations to acknowledge me; this is how they will learn that I am Yahweh.***

*'Son of man, prophesy against Gog. Say, "The Lord Yahweh says this: Now is set myself against you, Gog, prince of Rosh, Meshech and Tubal. I will turn you round, lead you on, and bring you from the farthest north to attack the mountains of Israel. I will break the bow in your left hand and dash the arrows out of your right. You will be killed on the mountains of Israel, you and all your hordes, and the nations with you. I shall make you food for carrion birds and wild beasts. You will fall in the open countryside. I have spoken – it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks. **I will send fire to Magog and on those living undisturbed on islands, and they will learn that I am Yahweh. I am going to see that my holy name is known among my people Israel, and I will no longer allow my holy name to be profaned; the nations shall learn that I am Yahweh, holy in Israel.***

All this is going to happen, all this is going to take place – it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks. This is the day I predicted.

*The citizens of the towns of Israel will go out and use these arms for firewood: shields and bucklers, bows and arrows, clubs and javelins. **For seven years they will feed fire with them. Men will stop looking for wood in the countryside or cutting it in the forest; they will be feeding the fire with arms.** They will plunder those who plundered them, and take spoil from those who despoiled them – is the Lord Yahweh who speaks.*

On that day, I shall give Gog a famous spot in Israel for his grave – the valley of the Abarim, on the east of the Sea – the valley that turns back the traveler – and there Gog and his whole army will be buried, and it shall be called the Valley of Hamon-gog. The House of Israel will take seven months to bury them and cleanse the country. All the people of the country will dig their graves, and be honored for this on the day when I reveal my glory – it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks. Men will be selected to go continually up and down the country to bury those left on the ground and cleanse it. For seven months they will go searching. If one of them sees any human bones as they go up and down the country he will put a mark beside them until the gravediggers have buried them in the valley of Hamon-gog – the name of the town is to be Hamonah – and so have cleansed the country.

*Son of man, the Lord Yahweh says this. Speak to every kind of bird and to all wild beasts, “Muster, come here, meet from everywhere around for the sacrifice I am making for you, a great sacrifice on the mountains of Israel; you will eat flesh and drink blood. You will eat flesh of heroes, you will drink the blood of the princes of the world. **They are all rams and lambs, goats and fat bulls of Bashan.** You will feed full on fat, drink yourselves drunk with blood, at this sacrifice I am making for you. You will glut yourself at my table on horses and chargers, on heroes and common soldiers – it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks.*

That is how I shall display my glory to the nations, and all nations will feel my sentence when I judge, and feel my hand when I strike them. The House of Israel will know that I am Yahweh their God, from that day forward forever. And the nations will learn that the House of Israel was exiled for their sin in behaving so treacherously to me that I had to avert my face from them because they had rebelled against me, and to hand them over to their enemies; and they all perished by the sword. I treated them as their filthy sins deserved and hid my face from them. And so, thus says the Lord Yahweh: Now I am going to bring back the captives of Jacob, now I am going to take pity on the whole House of Israel and show myself jealous for my holy name.

‘They will forget the disgrace of having so often betrayed me when they were living safely in their own land, with no one to disturb them. When I bring them home from the peoples, when I bring them back from the countries of their enemies, when I reveal my holiness in them for many nations to see, they will know that I am Yahweh their God, when I rescue the captives from the pagans and reunite them in their own country, not leaving a single one behind. I shall never hide my face from them again, since I shall pour out my spirit on the House of Israel – it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks. – Ezekiel 38: 1 – 39:29

CHAPTER XIV

THE NEPHILIM

Meanwhile in the carpentry shop of Mr. Caballero, Juan Miguel and him can be heard talking about the items they have been doing particularly the pieces of furniture that will be delivered. Then suddenly Mr. Caballero changed the topic into something that Juan Miguel was also interested. 'With regard to the Guitara de San Miguel blue book? Yes, I also know something about it. Though as you know we cannot read them but there were scribbles there that can be discerned by our human eyes. It seemed that they were like the drawings in the hieroglyphics of Egypt. There were sort of giants if not really that big but at least bigger than the slaves they were dominating. They were once called the Nephilim.'

'Nephilim?

That I never heard of?

Who are they?' Juan Miguel asked the Master Carpenter.

'Mr. Caballero then continued his explanation: **'They were descendants of a union of angels and humans.** They are now scattered from the Middle East, near east, Europe, the new world, here and in many other places. They now look like us although there still some notable differences. For example, they are not hairy as most humans do. They also can know each other, their own kinds, by merely being close to each other, there is something in their blood that makes them know each other. Thus they tend to help each other although they are not as intelligent as many other human beings. It seemed they were sensual as they have inherited from the union of their fathers and mothers. Despite being sensual they are not much attracted to material things except as to what will make them survive. They prefer sensuality than accumulating wealth, instincts will only come into play in their personal constitution when they are hungry or having physical difficulty. They are also blind in some estimation of the world in seeing things.' The carpenter stopped for a while then Juan Miguel could be seen focus on his face and waiting for more to learn about the Nephilim.

'There in the book of Jude it was written, said the Mr. Caballero:

'N*ext let me remind you of **the angels** who had supreme authority but did not keep it and **left their appointed sphere**; he has kept them down in the dark, in spiritual chains, to be judge on the great day. – Jude 6.*

We can surmise that these angels are not the fallen ones and not in the company of Satan. They are of different sort but they are awaiting our judgment in the last days.

According to Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros the topic of Nephilim is much more discussed in the apocryphal Book of Enoch.

'Our Lord Jesus Christ was aware of their existence and one of the reasons that He descended was to preach too to these angels and their descendants. That the Son of Man has arrived and that they should hear the Good News of salvation. We cannot really say that these children of the union of angels and human need no salvation since just like humans they have human parent. Actually, their existence is a mirror of the existence of Our Lord Jesus Christ, the union of heaven and earth in one man-God, Jesus Christ. For the fullness of God is well manifested in the flesh of our Lord. And there you will find in the Guitara de San Miguel blue book these drawings and most likely the explanations about them in the written language therein.'

Then their conversation ended and Juan Miguel stayed two more years in the carpentry shop then went back to Cebu. The parting ways was a good one for the shop owner has given him tools for the trade that he will carry to Cebu to start his craft.

CEBU ONCE MORE

In Cebu he returned home and talked to his brother Juancho who was busy doing many of the government public works. Juancho has already finished two bridges, one small government office and one church construction. These were good to include in his experiences that will give him advantage over many other government employees who were looking for his position. Juancho knows that to manage one thousand people to construct the buildings and bridges was difficult task that not all aspiring employees can do. So despite the politics in their province he knew that he was secure as far as constructions were concerned.

This time the twins decided to talk again about the Guitara de San Miguel. Juancho know now that what he was doing was worth doing but to include the Guitara de San Miguel in the equation was something that puts his spirituality to a higher level. He knows there were many secrets that the Guitara de San Miguel can uncover and there were also many secrets that the Guitara de San Miguel bring. In both ways, he would want to be involved. The missions that they have were now not limited into civil service or religion only, he knows that higher spirituality now calls them, to know them early was best since he knows that in their century, time travel fast while the material parts of existence travel slowly.

Juancho then spoke, 'Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros told me that I should find my mission in civil service, in doing the constructions that the Gobierno civil is entrusting to me. Is not that so mundane that it puts me just little above the beasts?'

He asked Juan Miguel.

To which Juan Miguel answered in the affirmative,' Juan Miguel who has witnessed most of the events involving the Guitara de San Miguel.

He also knew more than Juancho about the books although what he read was the Guitara de San Miguel red book only. In his mind, it was now paramount that Juancho should learn of the other contents of the books, red and blue. First, he would want to share the cities that were intended to be constructed using the Guitara de San Miguel. Would Juancho believe the City of God as written by Saint Augustine? He might believe though, for sure, would want to read it. With regard to the city of man, he will surely believe since that is what he is building for now, and lastly, the City of Devils, the frightening one to happen. Juancho, for sure, would also want to stop the City of Devils to be built.

Juan Miguel speaking to Juancho, 'Juancho, there is something written in the Guitara de San Miguel red book that says of City of Devils aside from the glorious future that kingdoms will have. Now that we believe in the existence of other kingdoms, it is also paramount that we should know that evils are abundant in the many earths that the Diwatas talked about. Planets they say are many and that they constitute in the creation the so called earths. So for them, earth is not this only earth that we inhabit, there are many earths as long as there is physical or material mass, they call it earth or planet.'

Juancho continues to converse with Juan Miguel, 'How do we stop this City of Devils from happening? Would it be built with the same materials that the City of God built?

The discussion of the brother has now been better than before so Juan Miguel continue to share with Juancho the things that he knows about the Guitara de San Miguel, 'The materials may be the same since Satan is a master in matter. Nevertheless, we have to know first as to where do the devils intend to build the City of Devils in this earth, though most likely they do not intend to build it in a place where the Church of our Lord already is.'

Juancho said, 'your thinking is most likely believable since there will be spiritual competition that is very strong that will come from the Church of our Lord.'

Juan Miguel then asked his twin brother, 'If you were the devil where would you build your City?'

Juancho answered that he will build where it is safe, 'I will build my city in a friendly environment away from my enemies. I will build it in a place where I can defend its existence and where we will survive.'

Juan Miguel asked again, 'And where will that be on this earth?'

Juancho being not master about these things decided to give the matter to the knowledgeable, 'In this matter we have to consult those that are knowledgeable about the history of our civilization or the civilizations on the earth.'

Eighteenth Century colony was a time of the priest and the religious they are the learned ones just like in Europe. It was natural for the twins to look up to these people for guidance in matters of religion and spirituality and if necessary about history and civilization. The twins did not waste time but immediately went to the Santo Niño Church in Cebu. They inquired to their previous professors about the history and civilization.

Father Ferdinand Aldeguer received them in the school seminary. The priest was known to the twins and the twins knew that they were also known to him. They cannot be just any other students when they were studying in the school. Being unique, the people recognize them and most authorities in the school have talked to them in one time or another.

Father Ferdinand Aldeguer broke the silence when he saw the twins, 'What returns you here twins? It must be very important or just casual visit to old friends?'

Juan Miguel then replied being the one who is in the know, 'We would want to make it a casual visit father but we really have an inquiry about something that you also might be in the know, about a city to be built?'

Father Ferdinand Aldeguer gave them an immediate answer of religion, 'The City of God? Oh no my children, the City of God is in heaven. The Heavenly Jerusalem written in the Twenty First chapter of the book of Revelation. For it says there:

HEAVENLY JERUSALEM

Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth; the first heaven and the first earth had disappeared now, and there was no longer any sea. I saw the holy city, and the New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, as beautiful as a bride all dressed for her husband. Then I heard a loud voice call from the throne, 'You see this city? Here God lives among men. He will make his home among them; they shall be His people, and he will be their God; His name is God-with-them. He will wipe away all tears from their eyes; there will be no more death, and no more mourning or sadness. The world of the past has gone.

Then the One sitting on the throne spoke: 'Now I am making the whole of creation new' he said. 'Write this: that what I am saying is sure and will come true.' And then he said, 'It is already done. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give water from the well of life free to anybody who is thirsty; it is the rightful inheritance of the one who proves victorious; and I will be his God and he a son to me. But the legacy of the cowards, for those who break their word, or worship obscenities, for murderers and fornicators, and for fortune-tellers, idolaters or any other sort of liars, is the second death in the burning lake of sulfur.

One of the seven angels that had the seven bowls full of seven last plagues came to speak to me, and said, 'Come here and I will show you the bride that the Lamb has married'. In

the spirit, he took me to a top of an enormous high mountain, and showed me Jerusalem, the holy city, coming down from God out of heaven. It had all the radiant glory of God and glittered like some precious jewel or crystal-clear diamond. The walls of it were of a great height, and had twelve gates; at each of the twelve gates there was an angel, and over the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel; on the east there were three gates, on the north three gates, on the south three gates, and on the west three gates. The city walls stood on twelve foundation stones, each one of which bore the name of one of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

*The angel that was speaking to me was carrying a gold measuring rod to measure the city and its gates and wall. The plan of the city is perfectly square, its length the same as its breadth. He measure the city with his rod and it was twelve thousand furlongs in length and in breadth, and equal in height. He measured its wall, and this was a hundred and forty-four cubits high – the angel was using ordinary cubit. The wall was built of diamond, and the city of pure gold, like polished glass. The foundations of the city walls were faced with all kinds of precious stone: the first with diamond, the second lapis lazuli, the third turquoise, the fourth crystal, the fifth agate, the sixth ruby, the seventh gold quartz, the eight malachite, the ninth topaz, the tenth emerald, the eleventh sapphire and the twelfth amethyst. The twelve gates were twelve pearls, each gate being made of a single pearl, and the main street of the city was pure gold, transparent as glass. I saw that there was no temple in the city since the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb were themselves the temple, and city did not need the sun or the moon for light, since it was lit by the radiant glory of God and the Lamb was a lighted torch for it. **The pagan nations will live by its light and the kings of the earth will bring their treasures.** The gates of it will never be shut by day – and there will be no night there – and the nations will come, bringing their treasure and their wealth. Nothing unclean may come into it: no one who does what is loathsome or false, but only those who are listed in the Lamb's book of life. – Revelation 21:1 - 27*

Juan Miguel knew that the priest was talking of the Heavenly City, the Heavenly Jerusalem. But that was not the one, 'What you pronounced to us father is wonderful but we are talking of the City of Devils.'

Father Ferdinand Aldeguer then said, 'Ah. The City of Devils? So you have been into the Guitara de San Miguel also? Where did you learn of the city of devils? They say the Guitara de San Miguel may be located in Mexico.'

Juan Miguel confirmed that, 'Indeed it is in Mexico father. And now we have to protect the Guitara de San Miguel from the clutches of the devils because they intend to build the city of devils. I have read in the Guitara de San Miguel red book that before the coming of the Lord they will build an army so strong that no human force can surpass it except the army of heaven.'

Being knowledgeable about revelations and many other prophetic book, the priest knew that this should not much be of concern for now. Father Ferdinand Aldeguer said, 'And are you concern that we may not be able to defeat them? You have to trust God with His plans. As written in the Holy Scriptures then it will happen.'

It was Juancho who answered, 'No Father, in the meantime that we are not yet in the end, they will be enslaving the people in their lifetime. Remember the Israelites, how they were slaves in Egypt for four hundred years? We do not want that to happen in many of the peoples of the earth.'

Now Juan Miguel has to say his analysis, 'We are happy people because we already have the Church in our soil while the others do not have the same competition from Satan and his to be built city of devils.'

Eventually the priest Father Ferdinand Aldeguer realized the mission of the twins. 'Okay, now I got your point. But are not preaching and conversion should be our tasks? We have to save souls not these structures that the city of man has.'

Again Juancho replied, 'Father, if we stop the building of this city of devils we will also be able to save souls in masse since there will be no headquarters for Satan to make his operations in taking over nations. We may be able to convert thousands but he will be commanding millions. You also have taught us that nations have their angels and they guide the establishment and fulfillment of nations' destinies.'

Father Ferdinand Aldeguer did not hide the fact of the matter to the twins, in fact he gave a relevant quotation, 'Yes, for it says in the book of Daniel:

THE ANGEL OF PERSIA

*I heard him speak, and at the sound of his voice I fell unconscious to the ground. I felt a hand touching me, setting my knees and my hands trembling. He said, 'Daniel, you are a man especially chosen; listen carefully to these words that I am going to say; stand up; I have been sent to you and here I am'. He said this, and I stood up trembling. He said then, 'Daniel, do not be afraid: from the first day you resolved to humble yourself before God, the better to understand, your words have been heard; and your words are the reason why I have come. **The prince of the kingdom of Persia has been resisting me for twenty-one days, but Michael, one of the leading princes, came to my assistance.** I have left him confronting the kings of Persia and have come to tell you what will happen to your people in the days to come. For there is a new vision about these days.'*

When he had said these things to me I prostrated myself on the ground, without saying a word; then someone looking like a son of man came and touched my lips. I opened my mouth to speak, and I said to the person standing in front of me, 'My lord, anguish overcomes me at this vision, and what strength I had deserts me. How can my lord's servant speak to my lord now that I have no strength left and my breath fails me?' Once again the person like a man touched me; he gave me strength. 'Do not be afraid,' he said 'you are a man specially chosen; peace be with you; play the man, be strong!' And as he spoke to me I felt strong again and said, 'Let my lord speak, you have given me strength'.

*He said then, 'Do you know why I have come to you? It is to tell you what is written in the Book of Truth. **I must go back to fight against the prince of Persia: when I have done with him, the prince of Javan will come next.** In all these there is no one to lend me support except Michael your prince, on whom I rely to give me support and reinforce me.*

– Daniel 10:9 – 11:2

Finally Father Ferdinand Aldeguer said, 'Now I understand you two, why you want to protect the soil where the city of devils will be built.'

Then the priest told the twins of a prophecy about the Gog and Magog war and the last battle at Megiddo. How the Lord will defeat the enemies only with His breath, his breath of truth. The priest also told them the many civilizations that had come and how they fell. He gave as an example the famous and mighty city of Rome. It did not escape the gaze of heaven and they brought it down for its crimes. Then the priest once more shared what was written in the Holy Scriptures about the famous city and the prostitute.

THE MODERN BABYLON

One of the seven angels that had the seven bowls came to speak to me, and said, 'Come here and I will show you the punishment given to the famous prostitute who rules enthroned beside abundant waters, the one with whom all the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and who has made all the population of the world drunk with the wine of her adultery. He took me in spirit to a desert, and there I saw a woman riding a scarlet beast which had seven heads and ten horns and had blasphemous titles written all over it. The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet, and glittered with gold and jewels and pearls, and she was holding a gold wine cup filled with the disgusting filth of her fornication; on her forehead was written a name, a cryptic name: 'Babylon the Great, the mother of all the prostitutes and all the filthy practices on the earth'. Then I saw that she was drunk, drunk with the blood of the saints, and the blood of the martyrs of Jesus; and when I saw her, I was completely mystified. The angel said to me, "Don't you understand?" Now I will tell you the meaning of this woman, and of the beast she is riding, with the seven heads and the ten horns.

The beast you have seen once was and now is not; he is yet to come up from the Abyss, but only to go to his destruction. And the people of the world, whose names have not been written since the beginning of the world in the book of life, will think it miraculous when they see how the beast once was and now is not and is still to come. Here there is need for cleverness, for a shrewd mind; the seven heads are seven hills, and woman is sitting on them.

'The seven heads are also seven emperors. Five of them have already gone, one is here now, and one is yet to come; once here, he must stay for a short while. The beast, who once was and is now is not, is at the same time the eighth and one of the seven, and he is going to his destruction.

The ten horns are ten kings who have not yet been given their royal power but will have the royal authority only for a single hour and in association with the beast. They are all of one mind in putting their strength and their powers at the beast's disposal, and they will go to war against the Lamb; but the Lamb is the Lord of lords and the King of kings, and he will defeat them and they will be defeated by his followers, the called, the chosen, the faithful.'

The angel continued, 'The waters you saw, beside which the prostitute was sitting, are all the peoples, the populations, the nations and the languages. But the time will come when the ten horns and the beast will turn against the prostitute, and strip off her clothes and leave her naked; then they will eat her flesh and burnt the remains in the fire. In fact, God influenced their minds to do what he intended, to agree together to put their royal powers at the beast's disposal until the time when God's words should be fulfilled. The woman you saw is the great city which has authority over all the rulers of earth.'

After this, I saw another angel come down from heaven, with great authority given to him; the earth was lit up with his glory. At the top of his voice he shouted, 'Babylon has fallen, Babylon the Great has fallen, and has become the haunt of devils and a lodging for every foul spirit and dirty, loathsome bird. All the nations have been intoxicated by the wine of her prostitution; every king on the earth has committed fornication with her, and every merchant grown rich through her debauchery.'

A new voice spoke from heaven; I heard it say, 'Come out, my people, away from her, so that you do not share in her crimes and have the same plagues to bear. Her sins have reached up to heaven, and God has her crimes in mind: she is to be paid in her own coin. She must be paid double the amount she exacted. She is to have a doubly strong cup of her own mixture. Every one of her shows and orgies is to be matched by a torture or a grief. I am the queen on my throne, she says to herself, and I am no widow and shall never be in mourning. For that, within a single day, the plagues will fall on her: disease and mourning and famine. She will be burnt right up. The Lord God has condemned her, and He has great power.'

There will be mourning and weeping for her by the kings of the earth who have fornicated with her and lived with her in luxury. They see the smoke as she burns, while they keep at a safe distance from fear of her agony. They will say:

*'Mourn, mourn for this great city,
Babylon, so powerful a city,
doomed as you are within a single hour.'*

There will be weeping and distress over her among all the traders of the earth when there is nobody left to buy their cargoes of goods; their stocks of gold and silver, jewels and pearls, linen purple and silks and scarlet; all their sandalwood, every piece in ivory or fine wood, in bronze or iron or marble; the cinnamon; their stocks of cattle, sheep, horses and chariots, their slaves, their human cargo...

'All the fruits you had set your hearts on have failed you; gone forever, never to return, is your life of magnificence and ease.'

The traders who had made a fortune out of her will be standing at a safe distance from fear of her agony, mourning and weeping. They will be saying:

*Mourn, mourn for this great city;
for all the linen and purple and scarlet that you wore,
for all your finery of gold and jewels and pearls;
your riches are all destroyed within a single hour'.*

All the captains and seafaring men, sailors and all those who make a living from the sea will be keeping a safe distance, watching the smoke as she burns, and crying out, 'Has there ever been a city as great as this!' They will throw dust on their heads and say, with tears and groans:

*'Mourn, mourn for this great city
Whose lavish living has made a fortune
For every owner of a sea-going ship;
Ruined within a single hour.*

'Now heaven, celebrate her downfall, and all you saints, apostles and prophets: God has given judgment for you against her.' Then a powerful angel picked up a boulder like a great millstone, and as he hurled it into the sea, he said, 'That is how the great city of Babylon is going to be hurled down, never to be seen again.

*'Never again in you, Babylon,
will be heard the song of harpists and minstrels,
the music of flute and trumpet;
never again will craftsmen of every skill be found or the sound of the mill be heard;
never again will shine the light of the lamp,
never again will be heard
the voices of the bridegroom and the bride.
Your traders were the princes of the earth, all the nations were under your spell.*

In her you will find the blood of prophets and saints, and all the blood that was ever shed on earth.' – Revelation 17 – 18

Juan Miguel then said to the priest, 'That was scary father. Did it already happen or are we awaiting it?

Father Ferdinand Aldeguer answered him with concern, 'These prophecies have already happened but that they will happen again in different context. For God will always want the people to have better life and that human will also and always will build a city for man while God will see to it that they remember Him and that excesses are usually being visited by representatives of heaven.'

It was Juancho who tried to identify the city, 'Was the city mentioned the Great City of Rome?

The priest knew that the Seat of the Church is in Rome so he said this to the lad, 'Yes Juancho, it was the pagan Rome of that time, Rome was sacked by the Visigoths and the Ostrogoths. These two related races were barbarians of Europe who never really assimilated within the Empire. They have their own way of life and that they do not like much of city life, thus God used them to fulfill His biddings and His judgment. Many empires will rise and fall although only those living in the era would be able to witness them. For instance, we have a stable Spanish empire for now but as always we will see stronger nations coming up to challenge the homogeneity of our empire.'

Then Juan Miguel said that earthly city may not be their concern, 'Our quest now is how to stop the city of devils that will be built up, where should we start?'

Father Ferdinand Aldeguer gave a hint on where to start, 'You have to inform the authorities who have the guitar that Satan will surely want to have and he will do everything to get the Guitara de San Miguel.'

Juancho then said to his twin brother, 'This time I will join you to Mexico. I cannot miss the heroic tasks that are ahead of us.'

'We all want to be heroes, but this is for real my brother. We will be into dangers unprecedented in our lives. It is the same feeling when I was in Mexico and Satan and his devils showed themselves trying to get the Guitara de San Miguel,' explained Juan Miguel to his twin brother with concern.

Juancho questions his brother in regards to the dangers: 'And why would not be my danger different from yours? We are twins remember. Though we have been into many competitions I cannot be in competition with you this time. We have to cooperate.'

RETURN TO OCCUPATION

Juan Miguel did not hesitate to bring his twin brother with him and then told him that they should start now, 'Four months from now the galleons will be leaving for Mexico, we should be in that voyage. In the meantime we should go back to our respective occupation. I also need to create ten replicas of Guitara de San Miguel for the tenth belong to the Master Carpenter, Mr. Caballero.'

When the two returned to their place, Juancho went to his superior in the Gobierno Civil and told him that he will ask for a leave since they will be going to Mexico, together with his twin brother. The superior was hesitant at first but eventually gave his consent for Juancho to leave for the time being. He did not get the whole explanation of Juancho but seemed to be into something important that they have to expend huge sums of money just to be in Mexico.

Juan Miguel on the other hand continued his craft by assembling replicas of the Guitara de San Miguel. He intended to finish at least ten before they leave for Mexico. The Master Carpenter has been very good to him and he has to be compensated in the token that he wants, the tenth guitar. It then comes to his mind the 10th of everything for Yahweh here on earth, to the priests. Then he realized that maybe the master carpenter is a personal representative of our Lord Jesus Christ. He has to accept it for the time being because that is how our Lord shows Himself, to other people. Although Juan Miguel was aware that the master carpenter could not be the Lord Himself because as written in the Holy Scriptures and being preached by the priests that our Lord will come like a lightning that can be seen from the east far into the west.

Juan Miguel created the first guitar and he was trying to find out if it will also have magical qualities like the original Guitara de San Miguel, but to his dismay, the guitar replica seemed to be just like normal guitar. However he did not lose hope that one day the guitar could acquire some magical qualities. There must be something in the design that it can acquire magical qualities just like in the language of the angels, those syllables that were not well spoken they have different effects in its environment, Juan Miguel is hoping.

Juancho continued to work for the Gobierno Civil constructions and he seemed to be excited to go to Mexico and see the truth of the Guitara de San Miguel. He has seen the blue Guitara de San Miguel book but not the guitar itself. He has seen some replicas made by his twin brother but they were not enough for there were no magical qualities in the guitars being produced by Juan Miguel. The guitar replicas seemed were just the same guitar that the other people peddle in the streets of Manila and Cebu. Only that the designs were more intricate being a replica of something that was made in heaven. Why would not it be different? The Jews created their Temples in the likeness of what were shown to them in heaven. Why would be this Guitara de San Miguel replicas be different?

Three months came and the two were eager to leave their place and go to Manila to catch the voyage to Acapulco, Mexico. They also ask for leave from their parents, Monica, their mother, was so concerned with the twins that she cannot let them go easily. But by the prodding of their father, Monica then bid them goodbye but only for a time for she continues to pray that her children will return to her. The two promised that they will return to her just like before. They will not take very long and they will return. But before they left Cebu they again went to Father Ferdinand Aldeguer to continue the conversation about the possible place where the city of devils will be stationed, the headquarters of the devils on earths. They were still convinced that it will not be in the place where the Church was strong for it means spiritual competition.

Father Ferdinand Aldeguer then said, 'If the place that we were looking is ancient, there is a common candidate that ancients say will attack Rome and or Jerusalem, the Persians or Parthians. But it seemed that they are too few for today to be able to mount a two hundred million strong army. But there is another candidate north of this colony, it cannot traverse the sea for now to go to your islands, since in the Ezekiel 38 – 39 she was identified to be the place of origin of big contingent that will go to Megiddo for war. It was

also written in the Psalms, these contingents of armies that will go to war with the Israelites. Let me quote the Holy Scriptures:

God do not remain silent;
do not be unmoved, O God, or unresponsive!
See how your enemies are stirring,
see how those who hate you rear their heads.

Weaving a plot against your people,
Conspiring against those you protect, they say,
'Come, we will finish them as a nation,
the name of Israel shall be forgotten!'

Unanimous in their plot,
they seal a treaty against you:
the tents of Edom and the Ishmaelites,
Moab and the Hagrites,

Gebal, Ammon, Amalek, Philistia and the Tyrians; and now Assur has joined them to
reinforce the sons of Lot.

Treat them like Midian and Sisera,
Like Jabin at the river Kishon,
wiped out at En-dor,
they serve to dung the ground.

Treat their generals like Oreb and Zeeb,
their commanders like Zebah and Zalmunna,
those who once said, 'Let us take for ourselves possession of the Dwellings of God!'

My God, bowl them along like tumbleweed,
like chaff at the mercy of the wind;
as fire devours the forest,
as the flame licks up the mountains,

drive them on with your whirlwind,
rout them with your tornado;
cover their faces with shame,
until they seek your name, Yahweh.

Shame and panic be always theirs,
disgrace and death; and let them know this:
you alone bear the name Yahweh,
Most High over the whole world. – Psalm 83

China was not directly mentioned but many scholars knew that the Chinese will be a large contingent of these invaders. And what is China? It is a huge country with civilization stretching from thousands of years ago. Many of their people are here in the colony trading things. They are traders as we know them here in the colony but in their country they are as diverse as our colony, like the Spaniards. They have farmers, fishermen, traders, manufacturers, bureaucrats, priests, leaders and many other occupations. It is not right to tell them here that they are merely traders or peddlers of things and consider their country people of trading.

Right now they have a civilization of around three hundred million people and it seemed that they will grow into billion people by the 20th century. Scholars believe that two hundred million contingent will be a drop of water in the bucket ***when they finally decided to descend to the city that God loves, meaning; Jerusalem.*** The Lord Jesus knows the times of pagans will come and that would be a signal. They will desecrate the Temple that will be built in Jerusalem and that has to be fulfilled then the end will come. Consider these passages in the Holy Scriptures as written by Saint Luke:

As He drew near and came in sight of the city, Jerusalem, He shed tears over it and said, 'If in your turn had only understood on this day the message of peace. But, alas, it is hidden from your eyes! Yes, a time is coming when your enemies will raise fortifications all round you, when they will encircle you and hem you in on every side; they will dash you and the children inside your walls to the ground; they leave not one stone standing on another within you – and all because you did not recognize your opportunity when God offered it! – Luke 19:41-44

'Or if we continue the reading we will come to this another passage in Luke which says of the same thing about Jerusalem:

'When you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, you must realize that she will soon be laid desolate. Then those in Judea must escape to the mountains, those inside the city must leave it, and those in the country districts must not take refuge in it. For this is the time of vengeance when all that the scripture says must be fulfilled. Alas for those with child, or with babies at the breast, when those days come!

'For great misery will descend on the land and wrath on this people. They will fall by the edge of the sword and be led captive to every pagan country; and Jerusalem will be trampled down by the pagans until the age of the pagans is completely over. – Luke 21:20 -24

Juan Miguel then said, 'As I continue in this quest as to where will the headquarters of the city of devils in this world I am more frightened as I listen to what are written in the Holy Scriptures. They really were scary and threatening. I cannot fathom the wrath of God in the last days. But perhaps people, as they continue to do evil ways, deserve the vengeance that God, and includes the threatening of His own people, the Israelites.

'If you will read the all of the Old Testament the siege of Jerusalem is the culmination of all of it. Why? Because that is the fulfillment of all that the prophets wrote,' said the priest with confidence with the Holy Scriptures that were written down by the Old Prophets.

Juancho then asked about the people of China, 'Father Aldeguer, may I kindly ask with regard to the countenance of the people of China. Are they fierce people or are they peace loving people?

'They are also peace loving people but as we know when people or nations become strong their leaders become different in approach to their neighbors. Just like in the history of China, there were times when she shows designs to invade her small neighbors. Although in their history they also dread some people like the Khans and the Mongols, nomadic tribes of Central Asia. If I may continue, Chinese are pagan by nature. They do not believe in God of Heaven although naturally believe in heaven for they call their Emperors sons of Heaven. This son of Heaven is the one who will offer incense and many other offerings to heaven so that heaven will be favorable to them. These people also dread many other things aside from invasion of the barbarians north of their place. They dread famine resulting from flooding, earthquakes, typhoon and many other calamities. They believe that when such stuff happen the peasants had the right to revolt against the rulers of the land and they call that loss of the ***Mandate of Heaven*** for their rulers. And that is how they usually topple monarchies in their realms,' Said the priest as if repeating the statements of Angel Sanbael.

Juan Miguel then asked, 'Does China have her own angel?'

The priest was sure about it so Father Ferdinand Aldeguer said, 'You bet she has. Remember the teachings of Saint Paul, how he said that pagans who are good are also pleasing to God. But China must fulfill her duty to the Lord ***Jesus, the true Son of Heaven***, and with that she is a candidate by Satan for his city of devils.

Juancho then suggested, 'If such is that case then we must immediately go to Mexico then and make sure that Satan will not be able to put his hands on the Guitara de San Miguel. For if he makes China as his headquarters here on earth then the colony is at stake since we are just south of China and only a small sea separates us with them.'

'Remember the call of God to His children: 'Get away from her my child so that you will not join in her sins?' These are just variations of what the Holy Scriptures was saying. Europe has seen many cities, many Babylons and they were used to these types of prophecies. Although we learnt that up north of Europe among the islands they are still literal in interpreting the Holy Scriptures that is why they go to the New World to be able to practice their religion without interference from other monarchies and that include many Catholics too,' shared Father Aldeguer to the twins.

It was about time the twins to leave since the ship that will go to Manila was now ready to depart. They were in a hurry to go the pier of Cebu. It was a medium sized pier not

like the one in Manila and in Acapulco. They were bigger than the one in Cebu. The reason maybe was that the Manila and Acapulco, Mexico piers were expanded for international trading while the one in Cebu was for domestic trading. Whatever the reason it is reasonable because there were many people in Manila than in Cebu. and in the economics point of view it makes sense.

The twins now travels for Manila. The ship to Manila was being pushed fast by easterly wind. It was a dry wind coming from the east of the colony, the locals call the wind that comes from the east Amihan or more accurately winds that came northeast of the country. In just a matter of seven days they reached Manila, the capital of the colony.

CHAPTER XV

MANILA AND IN THE KINGDOM OF DIWATAS

As they docked and go out of the ship they inquired as to when will be the next voyage of the galleons going to Acapulco, Mexico. They talked to the captain who recognized Juan Miguel. He told them three weeks from now they will be sailing toward the location of Acapulco, Mexico.

MEANWHILE IN THE KINGDOM OF THE DIWATAS

The sisters saw the arrival of the twins in Manila in their river. Immediately they called on some of their people and instructed them to contact the twins and invite them to visit their kingdom. The Diwatas found the twins in the seminary talking to Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros.

Habagat went out of their kingdom to go to the Seminary and told the priest, 'Father Juan and the twins are being invited by the sisters Princesses to go to our kingdom and talk to them about the city of devils. And I will remind that the Halimaws have learnt of the city of devils and they want to join the troops of Satan in destroying kingdoms here on earth.'

Without wasting time the three decided to join the Diwatas to their kingdom but again they were being followed by the Halimaws. But this time the Diwatas were more learned in finding their gate and in no time that they evaded the Halimaws and the Diwatas can be found inside their own kingdom.

Habagat greeted his Princesses and introduced the three, 'Our beloved Princess Mayumi, here are our three friends, Father Juan, Juancho and Juan Miguel. They would want also to discuss to you the city of devils.'

Princess Mayumi then asked, 'Juan Miguel, you and Amihan were the ones that were able to read the Guitara de San Miguel red book. Kindly tell us about the city of devils. It has been a dread to our people here when they heard about it.'

Princess Amihan then told them, 'I only know of some construction that will happen in the city of devils but the other stuff I do not know. There was a mention of Megiddo in the book but that Megiddo I do not know. Maybe it is about the people of the earth.'

Father Juan answered, 'Megiddo is a place in the navel of the earth, very near Jerusalem, wherein according to our Holy Scriptures that the last battle between forces of good and evil will happen.'

Princess Amihan then interposed to the group about the last battle, ***'How do we know that it will be the last battle? In our kingdom it has always been the last battle but it was not.'***

Father Juan answered and relied on the Holy Scriptures, 'It was written in our Holy Book and we believe it as such. It will usher the coming of the Noble One.'

Princess Mayumi impatient now as regards the waiting of kingdoms: 'We have been waiting for the Noble One to return for the next one thousand years but He has not come back.'

Father Juan then said quoting Mayumi in her pronouncement prior to this, 'But you said that it needs another four Arka cycles before he comes and that means four thousand years of human reckoning of years? We have to be patient with regard to the arrival of the Noble One.'

Then Princess Mayumi remembered something that the priest missed, 'Juan Miguel here told us that you missed a lot when you were not able to see a painting here depicting the Noble One. I therefore invite you to come near to the throne of my father and see for yourself the painting that was made here in our kingdom about the Noble One.'

The three followed the two Princesses and they come near the throne. The priest could not believe what he is seeing, a depiction of Lord Jesus Christ in a throne, the throne that he is seeing with his eyes. Again the long hair and penetrating eyes of the Noble One. His belief now strengthened more since a color graphic painting about the Lord has been proven to be true and that the Lord is also true. For the priest this is the greatest discovery of his life, equal to the teachings and the Holy Scriptures that the humans have. He hoped that there would be more privilege people to go to this kingdom and look at the painting of the Noble One sitting on a throne.

But their concern was the stoppage of the city of devils, the city that will usher the last battle at Megiddo. They cannot delay they have to be back since the galleons might be waiting for them. The Princesses bade them farewell as they give the last message to the three.

Then Princesses Amihan and Mayumi said to them, 'Your success will be our success. Your triumph will be our triumph and that if we defeat Satan we will be able to join you in your world and be one kingdom. But if not, then we are to close the gate and maybe forever. And we will remain a myth to your people.'

Then the three said goodbye and asked for prayers from the Princesses that their voyage will be a success. It was not an easy return to the world of men since there at the gates were the Halimaws. Now the Halimaws were battled by the male Diwatas to give way to the three and return to the seminary. It took them three full days visit to the Diwatas kingdom and return to the seminary.

MEXICO ONCE MORE

The next day the galleons were ready to sail and the twins can be seen on the ship from above of some edifice. They sailed for Mexico and it again took them three months sailing. Juancho was the one who has difficulty in the ship since it was his first time to travel that long. When they have arrived in Mexico, immediately they went to the Priest in Mexico who accommodated Juan Miguel in his first visit to the country.

It was Father Conrado Abellar, 'Welcome back Juan Miguel, and who is this with you? I guess he is your twin brother that you have told me.'

'Father Conrado, well yes, he is my twin brother, do we look the same?' Juan Miguel asked the priest in a manner full of respect.

Father Conrado Abellar said teasingly, 'Yes, you do look the same. What comes you back here?' Don't you tell me that it is the Guitara de San Miguel again?

Juan Miguel answered that the guess of the priest was correct, 'Yes Father Conrado, it is the Guitara de San Miguel but not only because of it but because of what is at stake if Satan got a hand on it.'

Then Father Conrado Abellar assured the twins about the guitar, 'It is a bit safe, I mean the Guitara de San Miguel.'

Juancho then respectfully told the priest of what he knows, 'Father Conrado, we are carrying news about the Guitara de San Miguel. There are two Guitara de San Miguel books produced by the guitar; one red and the other blue. They are in the colony right now although the red one is in a secluded place that we cannot easily go into.'

Skeptical, Father Conrado Abellar asked for a proof, 'And how would I believe you?'

Miguel who answered, 'I read the contents of the Guitara de San Miguel red book. There that I learnt about the city of devils.'

Father Conrado Abellar a bit convinced, asked, and what is the city of devils?'

Juan Miguel explained to the priest what he had read, 'It will be cities on this planet headquarters for the operations of the devils until the time that they will attack Megiddo.'

When Juan Miguel talk of Megiddo Father Conrado Abellar knows that he is familiar with the place, 'Megiddo, that one I know but the city of devils I do not know. If such is the case can you tell me more about the city of devils?'

Juan Miguel explained further, 'It will be a city built by the Guitara de San Miguel under the hands of Satan. A city that will bring destruction to the earth, they will gather their army under the banner of Satan and the beast and they will fight the one on the White Horse and His angels. Although it says in the Holy Scriptures that the devils will be defeated in the end, in the meantime that we are not yet in the end, they will take the people under their dominion their slaves.' There was also the prophecy about the beast that emerged out of the water. They will brand the people on their right hand or foreheads with the number of the man and the number is 666.'

Father Conrado Abellar then said, being familiar with the topic, 'That 666 brand is written in the 13th chapter of the book of Revelation. That is not disputable. Only the city of devils is not written in the Holy Scriptures.'

Juancho being smart and remembering the discussion with the Cebu priest said, 'Father Conrado, Saint Augustine wrote about the city of God and the city of man and we believe their existence and why not this to be built city of devils?'

Father Conrado Abellar replied intelligently, 'The city of God is in heaven it was written in the Holy Scriptures. You just have to look into the book. The city of man was also written in the book. The mere fact that we have Gobierno Civil is a testament for the existence of the city of man. Men build the edifices of these cities.'

Juan Miguel then said, trying to convince the priest, 'And the devil will build his own city. They will breed the army that will go to Megiddo. Although if we have faith we should not be alarmed for this things should happen before the end. But we are concerned with the people that will be enslaved by the devils.'

Father Conrado Abellar asked the twins, 'What are we to do then?' Okay, place the guitar to a place that Satan or the devils will not be able to get it?'

Twins, 'Yes Father.'

The priest leads them to the place where the Guitara de San Miguel was stored. However unknown to them, Satan has already discovered the existence of place where the guitar was stored, unknown to the three that the devils were able to know the arrival of the twins. In no time the devils followed them to the seminary and finally to the place where the guitar is located.

CHAPTER XVI

THE CITY OF DEVILS

A Ha! Here is where your guitar. At last the archangels are not here. No one will be able to resist our taking of the guitar. This now will be mine,' said the Devil while holding the guitar.

In an instant the guitar was with the devils and they were laughing taking it. The priest grabbed the guitar and would not want to part with it and the devils ganged up on him and leave him half-dead. The twins tried to steal the guitar from Satan but to no avail. Then they realized that they have to pray to the Lord Jesus and call on the good angels to come to their help. The good angels came in the flesh but they were late. Satan has already the possession of the Guitara de San Miguel and left the place.

The angels then talked to the three.

San Miguel Arkangel spoke first, 'I know where they will bring the Guitara de San Miguel. They will bring it to China. Now we have to be fast in going in there so that we can still influence the structures that they will be building. Father Conrado, you remain here while the twins will join us.

'Bye for now father,' said Arkangel San Miguel

Instantaneously the group of San Miguel and the twins were travelling through air going to China. San Miguel and his group decided to show the twins the supernatural powers that they have.

For the twins to be at peace with them San Miguel Arkangel relayed the stories of the twins that they know. 'We have been watching you since you were youths and not only you but the ***whole of the undisturbed islands***. We know that this day will come for us to reveal ourselves with you, unlike when I reveal myself to Juan Miguel in the colony. This you can feel us and touch us. You can talk to us although this is only possible because we also feel the holiness in you.'

Juan Miguel then said to the angels, 'China is just north of the colony. It was a sea that separates us from them. It will easily be located.'

The angels knew earth but they do not want to be a show off so San Miguel Arkangel explained to the twins that, 'China is a huge place. It will be difficult for us to locate them but we should take contact with the other good angels. They could have monitored the movements of the devils. It will be difficult for Satan to move the Guitara de San Miguel without raising the suspicion of the good angels. They will certainly be able to monitor the guitar's silhouette.'

Immediately the group of Archangel Gabriel came together with Archangel Rafael. They learned of what happened to the Guitara de San Miguel. That it was now in the possession of the devils. With this they know that the battle is becoming fiercer and fiercer against the devil since it also tells of the shorter time that the devils have in raising their army of two hundred million before the Lord Jesus descend to earth together with the good angels.

San Miguel Arkanghel then spoke, 'The two here are with us, I mean the twins that we have been looking after since the time the Spaniards came to the islands. They are the ones that the messages of the Guitara de San Miguel were entrusted. Though for now it was failure since the devils were able to snatch the Guitara de San Miguel and would be able to use it to build their city of devils. We have to scout the whole of China but for sure the angel of China will oppose us. He will protect the devil.'

The group decided to divide into three and start to look for the guitar. It took them to the whole places in China but mostly in the mountainous areas since the people already have their cities built. These are what Saint Augustine called the city of man. A city built by men and their institutions or governments. The one that the twins dread was the city of devils. The angels were also concerned although not much since they know what will happen at the end of time. At least with regard to what they have discussed before together with San Miguel Arkanghel, it was written in the scriptures and the Most High has guaranteed that they will come into conclusion.

The twins were with the group of San Miguel Arkanghel and they were flying in the air while they were scouting the whole of China. Finally their group decided to go up to the Huang Ho, or Yellow River, river and there they found on a mountain valley the group of Satan about to build the city of devils. The devils loses no time in building the city of devils but this time they have to contend with the good angels. The devils summon their large forces of fallen angels and they battle the good angels while Satan was strumming, scratching and plucking the guitar and it starts to build the city of devils.

The sound of it was also a lure to the twins. They cannot explain the sensual feelings that arouse in their flesh. There seemed to be in the music of Satan that makes them feel like that. And while they were in that condition, San Miguel Arkanghel immediately took them out from the place and brought the twins where they cannot hear the music coming from the guitar. But Satan was building a city of devils and that he has to make sure that the reach of the structures was wide enough to accommodate the army that he will be building. So he scratched the guitar speedily and loudly until such time that wider areas of the place were reached. Slowly the structures were being built, first the floors while the other good and bad angels were continuously fighting for the possession of the guitar. The good angels were trying to stop the building of the city of devils while the devils would want it to continue. While they were hearing the music of Satan the devils were getting stronger and stronger. They were being supported by the music that was coming from the guitar being played by Satan.

'Hahaha! We are getting stronger and stronger as the music plays. I can play up to six days for the completion of our city. San Miguel Arkangel you will see how the city is built while your city of God will be destroyed by us when the right time comes. We will snatch the heavenly bodies from your brother angels and bring it to our orbits,' Satan shouts to the angels.

San Miguel Arkangel heard what Satan said and though the language used by it was quite different. 'He must not succeed', this was in the mind of San Miguel Arkangel and of the twins. It was not necessary to enslave the people before the Lord arrives here on earth. The Noble One knew that more souls will be lost if the angels allow the building of the city of devils to continue.

The fighting continued into the second day. The structures of the city of devils could now be distinguished from the mountains that cover it in the sides. The place was dark and the boulders of stones that were being used were also becoming dark if not becoming all black. The structures were different than the other structures that the city of man built, they seemed to be very much sturdy and can accommodate the 200 million people that the devil would want to raise.

The twins then believed the Holy Scriptures but they were thinking that could this be the end of the race men. The devil angels now, if ever it succeeded in building his city of devils, can now bring some daughters of men and they can intercourse with them and bring forth the seed of the devil. Then we will find out if the prophecy of Genesis 3:15 will come about. As it was written in the Holy Scriptures. Will there be a new race of the Nephilim as they were called before. The twins knew that the race that will come out from the union of devils and daughters of men will be worse than that of the renowned Nephilim. The new race will be not of angels who left their abode but of the devils themselves. ***If the Watchers, the angels who left their abode, can reproduce through the daughters of men, then the devils can also do the same.***

San Miguel Arkangel invited the twins, 'Twins let us go. I need to bring you to a safer place than this valley. We have to be far away from the music of the guitar. It will have a different effect on you and you have to be aware of that. It might change your countenance from good to bad.'

The twins decided to join San Miguel Arkangel to where they will be safe, away from the sound of music that the Guitara de San Miguel was making through the hands and fingers of Satan. San Miguel Arkangel decided to leave the twins to many other good angels that came to join the fighting. If the night comes again it will now be the start of the third day of fighting. The structures were now having some forms and for the good angels they looked like abominations while the devils were rejoicing to fruits of their efforts. As they look east, another batch of angels came and they were double the numbers than what previously arrived.

Now that the strength of the good angels were overwhelming, Satan decided to flee the place while his city of devils were half finished and as if a ruin. All his devils go with him

and they traveled west of China going to a place where they will be protected by a strong force. They fly as far as Persia and once in Persia they again start to look for a place where they can build a city of devils. Half-finished was already good for the devils. They will again build, in this area of Persia, a place with conducive force that will protect them, the force that was the angel of Persia. He has been fighting San Miguel Arkanghel since time their peoples met. San Miguel Arkanghel has been protecting the Israelites while the prince or angel of Persia has been protecting the Persians. In this intercourse of races it has been the Persians who were in the ascendancy. The Israelites were their subjects if not outright slaves.

San Miguel Arkanghel decided to bring the twins to Israel particularly to Jerusalem wherein they will be protected by the group of angels that were stationed there. While in Jerusalem, they decided to let the twins see the place where Armageddon will happen. There they brought the twins to the place called in Hebrew Har-Megiddo. It was the plain of Jezreel valley between Lebanon, Syria and Jordan. It was huge plains wherein chariots can maneuver at will and at a good distance.

San Miguel Arkanghel lectured to the twins about the place of Armageddon, 'Twins, this is the place in Hebrew tongue called Har-Megiddo, it was written in the Old Testament. There have been many battles that I witnessed here, I fought here. The terrible things that always happen here are that the armies that are assembled here meet terrible ends. Israelis fight here, always, they sometimes win sometimes they lost. We cannot see the outcome until what is predicted in the end. The battle of the Armageddon wherein the forces of evil will finally be beaten by the forces of good for good then the physical kingdom of our Lord Jesus Christ will be established.

Then Juan Miguel asked, 'And when will that Armageddon will happen?' Will it be in our time?'

'We are not sure about it only God knows although we can observe the events prior to it. There have been instances of it in the Old Testament and I have fought in those but it was not the Armageddon,' said San Miguel to the twins.

Juancho asked the archangel, 'Why is it that the Jews are the brunt of anger of God? Why not the pagans who are unbelievers to Him and do evil acts?'

San Miguel answered them, 'Well, the Jews know Him in spirit although they do not recognized Him in the flesh. Take this as a guide about whom the Jews praise and adore:

THE SPIRIT OF THE FATHER

When Jesus heard that the Pharisees had found out that he was making and baptizing more disciples than John – though in fact it was his disciples who baptized, not Jesus Himself – He left Judea and went back to Galilee. This meant that he had to cross Samaria.

On the way he came to the Samaritan town called Sychar, near the land that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. Joseph's well is there and Jesus tired by the journey, sat straight down by the well. It was about the sixth hour. When a Samaritan woman came to draw water, Jesus said to her, 'Give me a drink'. His disciples had gone into the town to buy food. The Samaritan woman said to him, 'What? You a Jew and ask me, a Samaritan, for a drink?' – Jews, in fact, do not associate with Samaritans. Jesus replied:

*'If you only knew what God is offering
and who it is that is saying to you:
Give me a drink,
you would have been the one to ask,
and He would have given you living water'.*

'You have no bucket, sir,' she answered 'and the well is deep: how could you get this living water? Are you a greater man than our Father Jacob who gave us this well and drank from it himself with his sons and his cattle?' Jesus replied:

*'Whoever drinks this water
Will get thirsty again;
but anyone who drinks the water that I shall give
will never be thirsty again:
the water I shall give
will turn into a spring inside him, welling up to eternal life'.*

'Sir', said the woman 'give me some of that water, so that I may never get thirsty and never have to come here again to draw water.' Go and call your husband' said Jesus to her 'and come back here.' The woman answered, 'I have no husband'. He said to her, 'You are right to say, "I have no husband"; for although you have had five, the one you have now is not your husband. You spoke the truth there.' 'I see you are a prophet, sir' said the woman. 'Our fathers worshipped on this mountain, while you say that Jerusalem is the place where one ought to worship. Jesus said:

*Believe me, woman, the hour is coming
when you will worship the Father
neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem.*

***You worship what you do not know;
we worship what we do know;
for salvation comes from the Jews.***

***But the hour will come – if fact it is here already –
when true worshippers will worship the Father in spirit and truth:
that is the kind of worshipper
the Father wants.***

God is spirit,

And those who worship

Must worship in spirit and truth.' - John 4:1-24

Juancho then said, 'So the operative words that our Lord said here are:

***You worship what you do not know;
we worship what we do know;
for salvation comes from the Jews.***

San Miguel replied and saw the understanding that the twins have, 'I see that you get them there. The Jews worship what do they know and the Lord wants to show His glory more to them by calling the pagans to show His glory to them as well. ***A great feast of blood, a great sacrifice for all the world.***'

Juan Miguel then answered, 'And where can we find that in the Holy Scriptures?' We have to test every spirit as it was written?'

San Miguel then replied, 'If you did not take notice I have said it previously. But for your sake I will quote it again:

THE GOG AND MAGOG INVASION

Son of man, the Lord Yahweh says this. Speak to every kind of bird and to all wild beasts, "Muster, come here, meet from everywhere around ***for the sacrifice I am making for you, a great sacrifice on the mountains of Israel; you will eat flesh and drink blood. You will eat flesh of heroes, you will drink the blood of the princes of the world. They are all rams and lambs, goats and fat bulls of Bashan. You will feed full on fat, drink yourselves drunk with blood, at this sacrifice I am making for you. You will glut yourself at my table on horses and chargers, on heroes and common soldiers – it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks.*** – Ezekiel 39:17 -20

Juan Miguel noticed then in the quotation of San Miguel that they must be rams, lambs, goats and bulls, 'So it follows that the Lord is not the only ram, lamb, goat or bull? In grammar of the passages that you quoted we can see that to be true.'

Learning the sharpness of the mind of the twins San Miguel said, 'You are correct Juan Miguel, when it comes to the grammar but it is still true that ***He is the Lamb, with capital "L" and the word "the" and not a lamb but the Lamb.*** That is why the Christians need not necessarily go here and destroy the Jews rather as their defenders. Only the pagans will be here with the intention of destroying the Jews.'

Juancho then remind them about the time, 'But we do not know the time and the hour only God knows.'

'Of course the pagans will make preparations to defeat the Jews and the Christians but that will not be of avail since they will be fighting the Lord of lords and the King of kings. None can defeat Him for our forces will be so overwhelming. In your Tagalog language our forces was translated as "Laksa-laksang pwersa ng langit" [overwhelming

force of heaven]. 'Yes, we do not know the time or the hour. Only we will know of the conditions and the events preceding it,' shared San Miguel to the twins.

Juan Miguel then asked, 'What then should we do?'

'Continue your good living and continue your mission. Like this, by joining us in fighting the devils. This will make you very much accommodated for the rest of your life,' replied San Miguel to Juan Miguel who was so much eager to know the answers to his questions to the angel.

Juancho continued, 'So we have to destroy the seed of Satan or of the Serpent who is coming into the world?'

'We would all want to destroy that seed but it should come since it was prophesied to come. All we have to do is to be prepared when it finally comes for untold evil it will unleash. For even the elect can be deceived, our Lord has told us that He has forewarned us particularly, you people,' explained San Miguel to the twins.

Juan Miguel shared something to the archangel, 'There is a river in one of the kingdoms that cannot be seen in the colony that can show us events and people. Would this be of help to us if we view them as regards the Armageddon?'

'Certainly it will be of help although we have better visioning in heaven. You may join us there if you would want to see it vividly,' replied San Miguel who knows the existence of Akasha.

The twins decided to view it in heaven, 'We want to see it there in heaven.'

CHAPTER XVII

HEAVENLY MONITORING SYSTEM IN HEAVEN/ THE 68 SIDES

San Miguel knew that he left the fighting with regard to the establishment of City of Devils but he knew that education of the twins with regard to the Armageddon can open their minds as to what to do next in fighting the devils. Besides he can always be facing Heaven and be still on the earth fighting, at least in spirit. The Lord will be happy to see the twins and welcome them as his sons. Although this time the Archangel has different idea, he let the twins teach him about the passage in the Holy Scriptures wherein the angels of heaven are ascending and descending. So he challenge them to tell him where it could be found and he would bring them there in the place where the person in the Holy Scriptures learn of the place where were the stairs to heaven.

Juancho answered the angel about the passage in the Holy Scriptures.

Juancho said about the ascending and descending angels, 'I know of the passage and it reads like this:

ANGELS DESCENDING AND ASCENDING

Jacob left Beesheba and set out for Haran. When he had reached a certain place he passed the night there, since the sun had set. Taking one of the stones to be found at that place, he made it his pillow and lay down where he was. **He had a dream: a ladder was there, standing on the ground with its top reaching to heaven; and there were angels of God going up it and coming down. And Yahweh was there, standing over him, saying, 'I am Yahweh, God of Abraham and your father, and the God of Isaac. I will give to you and your descendants the land on which you are lying. Your descendants shall be like the speck of dust on the ground; you shall spread to the west and the east, to the north and the south, and all the tribes of the earth shall bless themselves by you and your descendants. Be sure that I am with you; I will keep you safe wherever you go, and bring you back to this land, for I will not desert you before I have done all that I have promised you.'** Then Jacob awoke from his sleep and said 'Truly, Yahweh is in this place and I never knew it!' He was afraid and said, 'How awe inspiring this place is! This is nothing less than a house of God; this is the gate of heaven!' Rising early in the morning, Jacob took the stone he had used for his pillow, and set it up as a monument, pouring oil over the top of it. **He named the place Bethel, but before that the town was called Luz.** – Genesis 28: 10 -19.

San Miguel then said, 'The name was change from Luz to the Bethel and Bethel means 'house of God.' But just the same, we have to see the Light and the light is the Lord Jesus and in His absence it should be His High Priest on earth.'

THE CITA ETERNA

Realizing what the angels was saying Juancho then said, 'You mean the Pope?' Luz means Light.

'You are then correct about the Pope. He is just a light not necessarily the Light,' exclaimed San Miguel softly to the twins particularly to Juancho.

San Miguel then said again, 'It is therefore that we go to Rome the Cita Eterna.'

Juan Miguel translated the Latin words into Spanish, 'You mean the Eternal City.'

'Yes, and there we will ascend,' instructed San Miguel.

In his physical condition the archangel has powers but not like in his spiritual existence so when they fly in the air he can go as fast as twelve horses speed and fast enough for them to be in the Cita Eterna in twelve hours. It was evening when they reached the place. The twins could not believe that they were inside the Vatican, Rome. It seemed that yesterday it was a dream that will be very hard to fulfill but now they were standing in front of the structures that were magnificent.

They were now in Europe.

The archangels allowed the twins to wander in the city but they have to see each other in the evening again near the Saint Peter's Basilica to ascend to heaven. The twins were very much happy while wandering in the city. Rome was such a great and full history a city and one can study each of the structures and find thousands of years of history if not in fact a civilization. The coliseum was such a great structure that humans built. But as the twins look to them, another forms of signature of something superhuman was there although obviously not the Guitara de San Miguel.

'Could be the enemies have built it or are all of these are the signatures of the Nephilim?' Juan Miguel told to himself.

Humans know they do not have the ideas of having these kinds of colossal structures if not those angelic beings who have seen these types of architecture prior to building them. But this time they do not have the types of Guitara de San Miguel or any other advance technologies to help them in building these colossal so they resort to slavery to muster such strength of man to have precisely these structures. If metallurgy has been taught to humans by the angels it was no wonder that structures like these should also be taught by these angels.' Juan Miguel continued in his mind.

Juan Miguel told his twin brother that: 'Angels are really ministering spirits. Although it was not told in the accepted Canon of the Church or of whole Christianity the angels could also have taught the Lord of the secrets of heaven. They helped him in many

ways like ministering him when he was near His death or while and after He was tempted by the devil. For it was written:

Then Jesus led by the Spirit out into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil. He fasted for forty days and forty nights, after which he was very hungry, and the tempter came and said to him, 'If you are the Son of God, tell these stones to turn into loaves.' But he replied, 'Scriptures says:

*Man does not live on bread alone
But on every word that comes from the mouth of God'.*

The devil then took him into the holy city and made him stand on the parapet of the Temple. 'If you are the Son of God' he said 'throw yourself down; for scripture says:

*He will put you in His angels' charge,
and they will support you on their hands
in case you hurt your foot against a stone'.*

Jesus said to him, 'Scripture also says:

You must not put the Lord your God to the test'.

Next, taking him to a very high mountain, the devil showed him all the kingdom of the world and their splendor. 'I will give you all these' he said 'if you fall at my feet and worship me.' Then Jesus replied, 'Be off, Satan! For scripture says:

*You must worship the Lord your God,
and serve Him alone.'*

Then the devil left Him, and the angels appeared and looked after Him. –
Matthew 4:1 – 11.

San Miguel returned to them and joined in their conversation with regard to the Nephilim and the structures. He told them that indeed many in the world and were in the world that were not written in the acceptable cannon of the church but they do not mean they did not exist. Many were put into tradition of the Church. Even in histories, many that were not written that were as important as what were written were not written. There is great possibility that the coliseum that the Romans had built could have counterparts in other earths. San Miguel knew it for a fact since he has been into these other earths. If there were not many earths, he told the twins, there will be no evil in other parts of the universe since the earth is only one as per human understanding. But for heavenly beings they know that there are many planets that humans would have not time in counting them.

It is now evening and the twins seemed to have enjoyed their wanderings in the Eternal City. They were requesting San Miguel to bring them back to this city when time and conditions permit. To which the archangel agreed. Though he told the twins that it is

not in a habit of angels to always show themselves in physical form but always they are in our minds, always. Every time mortals will make a choice the angels will make a suggestion in the mind and then it is up to the mortal to recognize the suggestion, either to follow or not the voice of angel. Your theologians call this angel on the right to be the guardian angels or your personal angels.

And what are personal angels if not your twin in every decision that you do, good or evil. By the instruction and design of our Father the guardian angels never leave their guarded person. Even if the human being sins the angels remain with them. But since the angels in spirit form are pure intelligences, they can always get inside of the mind of the human being they guarded. They can help the individual think things over and return to God whenever they sin or being away from God. They are your guardian angels, explained San Miguel.

Juancho asked San Miguel with regard to the devils, how come they influence the humans?

San Miguel answered that, the devils too were once angels. They are the same in composition as the angels only that these fallen angels decided to rebel against God and because of their pride they cannot return to their original pristine condition of innocence. Obedience is not in their constitution anymore. Their nature has changed from good to bad. Though even me is at a lost to what was Saint Paul talked when he said that humans will judge some angels at the end of time while catholic theologians are condemning all the fallen angels into hell.

The angels that Saint Paul could have been talking about were the **Watchers**. The twins knew of the Watchers or the fathers of the Nephilim as explained to them but they do not know their exact numbers when they descended to the earth. San Miguel said that they were somewhat around **two hundred angels** when they **descended** to the earth and they took as many wives as they wanted that was why their existence cannot be ruled out. Being angels they were intelligent beings and their descendants being angels and humans were above humans but below angels. Thus the **Nephilim** were also called in heaven: **'More human than human,'** and they have magical and recognized magical abilities unlike other humans who only consider what were seen. Nephilim believe when the topics are about other worldly or some other planets. The reason according to San Miguel is that they came not from this world. They were products of heavenly beings that were trapped in this world.

It was night and according to the agreed time of ascension to heaven they will ascend at this time. So the twins then agreed that they will join San Miguel in ascending to heaven. For one last time they saw the Pope in his window looking to Saint Peter's square, looking not to a multitude and certainly not to them but a stare at the beautiful Rome. So he must be the Luz, according to San Miguel. San Miguel answered them in the mind, 'you now believe because I have told you?' Believe your theologians too.'

The successor of Peter is the holder of the keys to the kingdom of heaven. They or he is the one who can look to the past and look also to the future. He is the peg, if we may say, that can validly marry the Old and the New Testaments. He is the Father of History and its future as well. Remember a tree or the Tree of Humanity. If our Lord Jesus Christ stands as the only begotten Son, the Holy Father stands as the root and trunk of the tree of humanity. All of Europe can look up to him as the source of their existence being their father while the twins, being very much away from Europe, can also be considered his sons for you look to Europe in the same way that Europeans look to Rome.

Physically he is called spiritual father here on earth although he is physical while your real father is the Father in heaven who is Spirit. You also have a father here on earth and you call him your physical biological father while the priests or the Pope is your physical spiritual father. If it is not clear, consider our Lord Jesus Christ, he is your brother yet in Spirit. He is brother of the Jews yet not in spirit but in the flesh, but both belong to Him. Just like me, it was San Miguel who was talking, 'I am your brother not in the flesh but only in the spirit. For all belong to the Spirit. Or consider this conclusion of the apostles to what the Lord was saying about the parables of the kingdom of God:

'H*ave you understood all this? They [Apostles] said, 'Yes'. And He said to them, 'Well then, every scribe [teacher, priest or lawyer of the law] who becomes a disciple of the kingdom of heaven is like a householder who brings out from his storeroom things both new and old.'* – Matthew 13:51 -52

HEAVEN AND THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

Then the twins realized that they were already walking toward the Gate of Heaven. And in heaven there were twelve gates and there inscribed too the twelve names of the twelve tribes of Israel. There too in the gates were Saint Peter and his successors. 'So it is true then that the priests are at the gates of heaven?'

The twins then were asked by the gatekeepers as to where are they going.

Priest then asked the twins: 'Where are you going?'

'Ah. You are with San Miguel and you must be Juan Miguel and Juancho?'

Twins replied: 'You know us? How could that be?'

'We have known you since birth, and your colony has been known to us even before it was conquered by the Spaniards. The Philippine Islands is a place sacred to us like Rome. You are like the islands of the United Kingdom of Great Britain in the far North of the Europe, they were too an island nation. The Roman Catholic Priest, of course, would want to maintain you as Catholics but here in heaven we already know that the country North of

Mexico will also conquer the islands and try to make it similar in their religion as well,' said the gate and key keeper. [North of Mexico he was referring was the United States of America].

'We are happy to know that we are known in heaven but at the same time concerned that the islands will not remain in the hands of Spain, and who will these would be conquerors?' The twins asked to the gatekeepers.

'They are also Christians but for the time being they will be busy with their own history thus they will not think of the Philippine Islands. But there will come a time when they will poke their noses and look to the islands as possession equally dear to their would be many possessions. They will rule not only the islands but the whole world in the time to come. And that should not concern you much because you are to be concerned with heaven and everything about it,' said the priest.

'It is true that we should not be concern with it since we do not have the power to either alter it or stop it from happening. It is beyond our power. But with regard to the spiritual battles that we are in because of the Guitara de San Miguel then somehow we can alter some outcomes. Do we not can do that?' Juan Miguel asked to the priest at the gate.

'You can of course do that and that would also be our bidding. We would want you to help us in the most important battle that humanity should be fighting. For example, you would want to stop the seed of the Serpent to sprout and grow during your time and that is a good thing. ***But eventually the seed of the Serpent will come out and precisely to fight the Lord and children of the Woman, those who obey the Lord and witness for Jesus,***' explained the priest.

'Why is it that some in Europe are calling the Pope to be the antichrist?' Juan Miguel asked.

Priest then told the twins, 'How could they call us priest antichrist? Saint John the Apostle has this definition of the antichrist:

THE ANTICHRIST

I *t is not every spirit, my dear people, that you can trust;
Test them, to see if they come from God;
there are many false prophets, now, in the world.
You can tell the spirits that come from God by this:
Every spirit which acknowledges that Jesus the Christ has come in the flesh
is from God;
but any spirit which will not say this of Jesus
is not from God,
but is the spirit of the Antichrist,
whose coming you were warned about.*

*Well, now he is here, in the world.
Children, you have already overcome these false prophets,
Because you are from God and you have in you
One who is greater than anyone in this world;
As for them, they are of the world,
and so they speak the language of the world
and the world listens to them.
But we are children of God,
and those who know God listen to us;
those who are not of God refuse to listen to us.
This is how we can tell
the spirit of truth from the spirit of falsehood. – 1 John 4:1 – 6*

Twins then requested the gatekeeper if they can now enter, 'Now they are clear to us. Just like you who are having glorious bodies so thus the Lord Jesus Christ here in heaven. Can you then allow us to enter the gates?'

The Priest then said, 'Yes, you may now enter and have one of the leading prince, San Miguel, to accompany you.'

'This is a much very happy place than the one on earth. This heaven is a place of the holy ones so for them earth is just a place of pilgrimage where they will purify themselves and be united here in the spirit and in the glorious bodies. You will be the only two who know grief and loneliness here for you have not given up your mortal hearts. When you have given up your mortal hearts at death then you will have a glorious hearts that knows not of loneliness,' shared San Miguel to the twins.

'Where can we see the Lord Jesus Christ then? Jauncho asked.

San Miguel immediately answered him. 'His throne is somewhere in the north of heaven. He presides over the assembly of the Just.'

Juan Miguel then said, 'I see Him here in heaven, he is over there. He is glowing and ever glorious. I cannot go to Him. He is too holy for me.'

San Miguel explained that they can of course go to the Lord Jesus Christ, 'Of course you can come, He is your Father and brother. The glow that you see will only purify you in an instant and that it will take out your impurities. You two will be like us for a time while you are here in heaven.

The twins came to the Lord Jesus Christ and in an instant their mortal bodies changed into glorious bodies. Right now they cannot feel their weight or their physical bodies. They were in glorious bodies, the limitations of the material bodies were gone. It seemed that they were floating in the air, then they start to center their attention to the Lord Jesus Christ.

There is no greater thing to do here than stare at the glorious Lord of heaven and earth. The Lamb who was slain and here ever glorious in heaven. These they think to themselves.

Juan Miguel then asked the 'Lord Jesus Christ, how long will we be here? It seemed that we do not want to go back to earth but we are thinking of the missions that you want us to accomplish there on earth. Also of our loved ones there on earth, they will not have knowledge of where we go or what happened to us if we do not come back to them.'

Lord Jesus Christ answered the twins, 'Oh. Twins. My sons. So you are here with me. Do not worry much. God is in control of everything. Even if the seed of the Serpent finally comes out, the goodness of heaven cannot be outdone. The faith that I have left on earth is so strong that Satan will always have enemies in his propagation of his evil intentions. Besides, you have to let him come out just like me who came out. Thus God will be proven correct in His prophecies.'

It was Juancho who was the more inquisitive, 'And when will you come down my Lord Jesus Christ?'

Lord Jesus Christ answered him, 'Time will come when the Father will bid His angels and instruct me to come down to earth. But in the meantime I have also many things to do here in heaven and the many earths that there were in the physical universe. If you cannot measure the universe, you then cannot measure heaven in the same manner. The spirit realms are of different sort and just like on earth. Heaven is expanding its Empire and we are following the lead of the Spirit to where there is no limit.'

Juan Miguel then asked, 'Lord Jesus Christ, how come it has taken you too long before coming down to earth?'

Lord Jesus Christ again has to assure the twins, 'It is not very long. Look, you two, you have to make the whole world Christians first or at least heard of the Son of God and the Gospel of salvation then that would be the time that I should be coming down, or descend. But as long as you have not made that condition, the Son of God will remain to where He is, here in heaven. Do not you know that I have always been wanting to be with you?' Let me quote what I have said about the coming of the Son of Man, remember these are my very own words:

'Beware of men: they will hand you over to sanhedrins and scourge you in their synagogues. You will be dragged before governors and kings for my sake, to bear witness before them and the pagans. But when they hand you over, do not worry about how to speak or what to say; what you are to say will be given to you when the time comes; because it is not you who will be speaking; the Spirit of your Father will be speaking in you.'

'Brother will betray brother to death, and the father his child; children will rise against parents and have them put to death. You will be hated by all men on account of my name; but

*the man who stands firm to the end will be saved. If they persecute you in one town, take refuge in the next; and if they persecute you in that, take refuge in another. **I tell you solemnly, you will not have gone the round of the towns of Israel before the Son of Man comes.** – Matthew 10:17 – 23*

‘You see twins, you have to convert My people Israel before I descend and that includes India and China. Even if China hosts the city of devils and India may think that I did not come in the flesh, these people are still mine.’

In the book of Zechariah it was said about the remnants of Israel and Judah:

U*p, up, and leave the land of the North (it is Yahweh who speaks)
(For to the four winds of heaven I have scattered you – it is Yahweh who speaks.) Zion, up! Dweller in Babylon flee!
For Yahweh Sabaoth says this (He whose glory sent me here)
as regards the nations who despoiled you
(for whoever touches you touches the apple of my eye):
See now, I raise my hand over them,
for them to be plunder for their slaves.
(And you will know that Yahweh Sabaoth has sent me.)
Sing, rejoice, daughter of Zion;
for I am coming to dwell in the middle of you – it is Yahweh who speaks.
Many nations will join Yahweh, on that day;
they will become His people.
(But He will remain among you,
and you will know that Yahweh Sabaoth has sent me to you.)
**But Yahweh will hold Judah as His portion in the Holy Land,
And again make Jerusalem His very own.**
Let all mankind be silent before Yahweh!
For he is awaking and is coming from His holy dwelling.
– Zechariah 2: 10 - 17*

Judah is the race where I came from. They are the remnants of Israel who, at least have some who remained in the Holy Land. They, together with the tribe of Benjamin and some Levites, composed of what you call the Jews. Jew is their religion, Hebrew is their language and Israel is their Nation or country. To them that king David, king Solomon and Me belong. That is why God or Yahweh said:

‘But Yahweh will hold Judah as His portion in the Holy Land, and again make Jerusalem His very own.’

You understand now why Judah or the Jews cannot be converted for now? It is because people from all nations must come to Me first before we seal the door of the kingdom of heaven. But they will learn of Me and that is for sure. In fact, they do not contest that I once existed among them. As in the word of our Beloved Apostle John who was in there:

In the beginning was the Word:
and the Word was with God
and the Word was God.
He was with God in the beginning.

Through Him all things came to be,
not one thing had its being but through Him.
All that came to be had life in Him
and that life was the light of men,
a light that shines in the dark,
a light that darkness could not overpower. ...

The Word was the true light
that enlightens all men;
and He was coming into the world.
He was in the world
that had its being through Him,
and the world did not know Him.
He came into His own domain
and His own people did not accept Him.
But to all who did accept Him
He gave power to become children of God,
to all who believe in the name of Him
who was born not out of Human stock
or urge of the flesh
or will of man
but of God Himself.
The Word was made flesh, [The Word is Man]
He lived among us,
and we saw His glory,
the glory that is His as the only Son of the Father,
full of grace and truth. – John 1:1-4, 9-14.

And that Word is Me the Word that was made Man and here in heaven talking to you.'

Lord Jesus Christ gave them a light smile as He was discussing things to them. The twins cannot believe their eyes, they were still dumbfounded as to what to ask the Lord Jesus Christ. In fact they no longer want to be back to earth but they know that they have missions and those missions will only be fulfilled by them. Besides they come in here to view as to what will happen in the Gog, Magog War or the Armageddon. So finally the two had the courage to ask the Lord.

'Lord, when will the Armageddon happen and what will be its signs or portents?' Juan Miguel asked.

Lord Jesus Christ said, 'Is that the reason that you want to be here? I will have San Miguel to answer it for me. He will show you the vivid things that will happen in **"the great sacrifice."** This great sacrifice as has been told you is where the rams, lambs, goats and bulls will be slaughtered for God's great feast. Then One World will have One Religion, One Government and One Economy. Then there was a pause from the Lord Jesus Christ and they went to San Miguel.

My good Prince, San Miguel, you may now accompany the twins to the place where they can view as to what will happen on earth with regard to Armageddon,' the Lord Jesus Christ said to the Arkangel.

San Miguel smiled to the twins and then he accompanied them to the place where the scenes of Armageddon could be viewed. The twins could not believe their eyes. They are in heaven and walking in here without weight and simply willing things and movements and they obeyed their wills. Heaven is such a beautiful place, clouds all over it, as if clouds were the coverings of heaven. Everything were weightless. Finally they arrived to the place in heaven wherein angels and archangels were monitoring events in many parts of the world. There were walls wherein they can see the movements of people and movements of events including earthquakes, typhoons and many other natural calamities. There were angels reporting things and recording conversations of World Leaders.

The twins could not imagine how advance heaven is. 'This is part of Akasha or Akashic records. These are what people do in their lives and the activities of people were recorded in here so that in the last judgment, people cannot deny that they do such and such things. In here are the future events that will happen, we can see it here in vivid colors unlike yours who can only draw things in black in white on papers. Here we continue to advance and in our spiritual manifestations we need not advance for that is the most advanced condition that one can accomplish, being in the spirit. I will just add, good spirit,' San Miguel explained to them.

So San Miguel allowed them to view the Armageddon and what precedes it. The twins saw the beast how he came into the world. That seed of Satan in the flesh of man too but without the spirit of God. The serpent seed was move by the spirit of the devil and he was also called lawless man. Then he read them what was written by Saint John the Beloved:

T*here are many deceivers about in the world, refusing to admit that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh. They are the Deceiver; they are the Antichrists. Watch yourselves, or all our work will be lost and not get the reward it deserves. If anybody does not keep within the teaching of Christ but goes beyond it, he cannot have God with him: only those who keep what he taught can have the doctrine, you must not receive him your house or even give him a greeting. To greet him would make you a partner in his wicked work. – 2 John 7 – 10.*

'You see, there have already been antichrists that came and disciples were warned about them. So it is not unusual to tell that the seed of the Serpent will come but that

particular seed will also come. He will come as a savior of the world too but not as spirit and soul savior but as savior of the lawless people. They will only cater to their sensual bodies and will only want destruction for many people except for them. They will have unnatural intelligence just like the devils their fathers and they will only learn evil things in their lives. For instance, they will alter life itself, they will institutionalize many things that are unnatural.

‘Now let us see the Armageddon,’ said, San Miguel to them, again the twins were overwhelmed with what they were seeing. They could not believe their eyes. On the walls they could certainly recognize San Miguel and his angels fighting on the side of the people of God. There were also the other archangels like San Gabriel, San Rafael and San Camael.

Juan Miguel asked San Miguel, ‘Are there passages in the Holy Scriptures when the people of God has known your existence my dear San Miguel?’

San Miguel said, ‘Yes, there were instances in the history of these people that I showed myself to them as instructed by the Lord Yahweh. I will read you once instance:

When Joshua was near Jericho, he raised his eyes and saw a man standing there before him, grasping a naked sword. Joshua walked towards him and said to him, **‘Are you with us or with our enemies?’** He answered, **‘No, I am captain of the Army of Yahweh, and now I come...’** Joshua fell on his face to the ground and worshipped him and said, ‘What are my Lord’s command to his servant?’ The captain of the army of Yahweh answered Joshua, ‘Take your sandals off your feet, for the place you are standing on is holy’. And Joshua obeyed. – Joshua 5:13 – 15.

‘I was that captain that talked to Joshua during their campaign against Jericho. Why did I say I was in neither side at that time? Because that is how heaven works. We are lead to be always humble, to be like the God. That is why that is the battle cry of the good angels that remained loyal to the Father. Michael means ‘who is like God.’ And to be like God is to perfect humility,’ explained San Miguel to the twins.

If I may continue, there is Jezreel valley and here are the formations of the armies of the beast and here we are coming from the east while the army of Israel is trapped inside the formations that are made by the beast and the kings of the world. The Israelis do not know what to do for their horse-less-chariots bogged down and the number of the armies against them were overwhelming. Their salvation was only possible with the arrival of the Lord’s army or of the friendly forces. It was not simple for if you read back in the book of Ezekiel you will know that there was really a real battle because of the number of people involved and the number of people who died. The fuel that will heat the homes of Israelis for seven years was also mentioned here.

The twins saw in vivid moving scenes how Armageddon unfolded. They could not believe their eyes but they would want to know more and they would want to find out if they will happen in their lifetime. But as they looked at the technologies that were used in there, they knew it was not in their lifetime. It will surely be in the future. The angels did

not disclose to them the exact year but he gave them some hint. North of your colony will be a big player and supplier of army while the people of Persia will also have their part and their supply of army.

Then there came the Lord Jesus Christ and explained some things to them: 'The country north of the colony is called China. She and your colony are separated by an open gulf of water. For now it is a hindrance for them to invade your colony. China is not much of a seafaring nation unlike the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Spain or Portugal, as examples, although traders of China go as far as your colony. China is a very old civilization. It encompasses more than eight thousand years of history of civilization. Their people are industrious but they are pagans, although they believe in ancestor worship, like our -- saints. But for them their ancestors, when they die, join the Great Spirit while they do not believe in a living God who governs everything.

These people believed Buddha and Confucius, who are by the way, also are here in heaven. Buddha is not a Chinese, instead he was a Noble Indian by birth and he chose the path of renunciation and he made "the Eight Fold Path of Buddhism". Just like Christianity they also have words and rules for being good. Thus when I told Martha that I am the resurrection and the life, we were discussing the same line of beliefs that the Buddhists have, when it comes to being always alive. And here are what were written in the Holy Scriptures of earth.

Then the Lord Jesus summon Saint John the Apostle and had him share the story about Lazarus and the resurrection and the life.

Saint John the Apostle:

***T**here was a man named Lazarus who lived in the village of Bethany with the two sisters, Mary and Martha, and he was ill. – It was the same Mary, the sister of the sick man Lazarus, who anointed the Lord with ointment and wiped His feet with her hair. The sisters sent this message to Jesus, 'Lord the man you loved is ill'. On receiving the message, Jesus said, 'This sickness will end not in death but in God's glory, and through it the Son of God will be glorified'.*

Jesus loved Martha and her sister and Lazarus, yet when He learned that Lazarus was ill He stayed where he was for two more days before saying to the disciples, 'Let us go to Judea'. The disciples said, 'Rabbi, it is not long since the Jews wanted to stone you; are you going back again?' Jesus replied:

*'Are there not twelve hours in the day?
A man can walk in the daytime without stumbling
because he has the light of the this world to see by;
but if he walks at night he stumbles
because there is no light to guide him.'*

He said that and added, 'Our friend Lazarus is resting, I am going to wake him'. The disciples said to Him, 'Lord if he is able to rest he is sure to get better'. The phrase Jesus used referred to the death of Lazarus, but they thought that by 'rest' he meant 'sleep', so Jesus put it plainly, 'Lazarus is dead; and for your sake I am glad I was not there because now you will believe. But let us go to him.' Then Thomas – known as the Twin – said to the other disciples. 'Let us go too, and die with him'.

On arriving, Jesus found that Lazarus had been in the tomb for four days already. Bethany is only about two miles from Jerusalem, and many Jews had come to Martha and Mary to sympathize with them over their brother. When Martha heard that Jesus had come she went to meet Him. Mary remained sitting in the house. Martha said to Jesus, 'If You have been here, my brother would not have died, but I know that, even now, whatever You ask of God, He will grant you'. Your brother said Jesus to her 'will rise again.' Martha said, 'I know he will rise again at the resurrection on the last day'. Jesus said:

***'I am the resurrection.
If anyone believes in me, even though he dies he will live,
And whoever lives and believes in me
will never die.
Do you believe this?'***

'Yes Lord, she said 'I believe that you are the Christ, the Son of God, the one who was to come into this world.'

When she had said this, she went and called her sister Mary, saying in a low voice, 'The Master is here and wants to see you'. Hearing this, Mary got up quickly and went to Him. Jesus had not yet come into the village; He was still at the place where Martha had met Him. When the Jews who were in the house sympathizing with Mary saw her get up so quickly and go out, they followed her, thinking that she was going to the tomb to weep there.

Mary went to Jesus, and as soon as she saw Him she threw herself at His feet saying, 'Lord, if you had been here, my brother would not have died'. At the sight of her tears, and those of the Jews who followed her, Jesus said in great distress, with a sigh that came straight from the heart, 'Where have you put him?' They said, 'Lord, come and see'. Jesus wept; and the Jews said, 'See how much He loved him!' But there were some who remarked, 'He opened the eyes of the blind man, could He not have prevented this man's death?' Still sighing, Jesus reached the tomb: it was a cave with a stone to close the opening. Jesus said, 'Take the stone away'. Martha said to Him, 'Lord, by now he will smell; this is the fourth day'. Jesus replied, 'Have I not told you that if you believe you will see the glory of God?' So they took away the stone. Then Jesus lifted up His eyes and said:

***'Father, I thank you for hearing my prayer.
I knew indeed that You always hear me,
but I speak
for the sake of all these who stand round me,
so that they may believe it was you who sent me.'***

When He had said this, He cried in a loud voice, 'Lazarus, here! Come out!' the dead man came out, his feet and hands bound with bands of stuff and a cloth round his face. Jesus said to them, 'Unbind him, let him go free'. – John 11:1 – 44

Juan Miguel then told the Lord, 'Our Lord Jesus Christ, Buddhists, in my study, believe in reincarnation, that a person returns to this life or being reborn. If such a case where is the one life then judgment?'

Our Lord Jesus Christ decided to quote the Holy Scriptures once: 'The reincarnation and one life then judgment are still compatible. In the viewpoint of the Hindus and Buddhist they are truly alive once more. Those who believe Me do not truly die in spiritual realms. For example, Patriarch Jacob is here yet people of the earth can find him among Israelis, their father or as grandfather.' The Hindus have something to say about this:

“B*rahma is known as Pitamaha, the grandfather, and Krishna is known as Prapitamaha, the father of the grandfather.” – Bhagavad-gita 11:39.*

'So between Me and father Abraham these are what you can read in the Book of John.'

So Apostle John again read the Holy Scriptures of earth:

T*o the Jews who believe in Him Jesus said:*
'If you make My word your home
You will indeed be My disciples,
and you will learn the truth
and the truth will make you free'.

They answered, 'We are descended from Abraham and we have never been the slaves of anyone; what do you mean, "You will be made free"?' Jesus replied:

'I tell you most solemnly,
Everyone who commits sin is a slave.
Now the slave's place in the house is not assured,
but the son's place is assured.
So if the Son makes you free,
You will be free indeed.
I know that you are descended from Abraham;
But in spite of that you want to kill me
Because nothing I say has penetrated into you.
What I, for my part, speak of
Is what I have seen with my Father;
But you, you put into action

The lessons learnt from your father.'

They repeated, 'Our father is Abraham'. Jesus said to them:

*'If you were Abraham's children,
You would do as Abraham did.
What you are doing is what your father does.'*

'We were not born of prostitution', they went on 'we have one father: God.'

Jesus answered:

*'If God were your father, you would love me,
Since I have come here from God; yes, I have come from Him;
not that I came because I chose,
no, I was sent, and by Him.
Do you know why you cannot take in what I say?
It is because you are unable to understand my language.
The devil is your father,
and you prefer to do
what your father wants.
He was a murderer from the start;
he was never grounded in the truth;
there is no truth in him at all:
when he lies
he is drawing on his own store,
because he is a liar, and the father of lies.
But as for me, I speak the truth
And for that very reason,
you do not believe me.
Can one of you convict me of sin?
If I speak the truth, why do you not believe me?
A child of God
Listens to the words of God;
If you refuse to listen,
it is because you are not God's children.'*

The Jews replied, 'Are we not right in saying that you are a Samaritan and possessed by a devil?' Jesus answered:

*'I am not possessed;
no, I honor my Father,
but you want to dishonor Me.
Not that I care for My own glory,
there is someone who takes care of that and is the judge of it.
I tell you most solemnly,*

***Whoever keeps my word
will never see death.'***

*The Jews said, 'now we know for certain that **You are possessed. Abraham is dead, and the prophets are dead, and yet you say, "Whoever keeps My word will never know the taste of death".** Are you greater than our father Abraham, who is dead? The prophets are dead too. Who are, you claiming to be?' Jesus answered:*

*'If I were to seek my own glory
that would be no glory at all;
My glory is conferred by the Father,
by the one of whom you say, "He is our God"
although you do not know Him.
But I know Him,
and if I were to say: I do not know Him,
I should be a liar, as you are liars yourselves.
But I do know Him, and faithfully keep his word.
Your father Abraham rejoiced
to think that he would see My Day;
he saw it and was glad.'*

The Jews then said, 'You are not fifty yet, and you have seen Abraham!'

Jesus replied:

***'Tell you most solemnly,
Before Abraham ever was,
I am'.***

At this they picked up stones to throw at Him; but Jesus hid Himself and left the Temple. – John 8: 31-58

Thus the truth in the book of the Hindus is correct:

"Brahma is known as Pitamaha, the grandfather, and Krishna is known as Prapitamaha, the father of the grandfather." – Bhagavad-gita 11:39.

Then the Lord Jesus Christ and put forth this passage to them: 'Or consider this among the Malays of the colony. Do not you say that Batahala is the Creator? And rightly you are correct. Take this passage in the book of Matthew. So the Lord called on Saint Matthew and have him read the passage:

Saint Matthew who has been observing their conversation gladly read to them the passage:

At this time the disciples came to Jesus and said, **'Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?'** So He called a little child to Him and set the child in front of them. Then He said, 'I tell you most solemnly, unless you change and become like little children you will never enter the kingdom of heaven. And so, the one who makes himself as little as this little child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.
– Matthew 18:1 – 4.

'And there He is your Batahala.' There the Lord Jesus Christ point towards His Father who was sitting on the throne and presiding over the Elders.

Or again consider this passage once more. Then the Lord, requested Saint Matthew to continue reading the Holy Scriptures:

Saint Matthew:

While the Pharisees were gathered round, Jesus put this question, **'What is your opinion about the Christ? Whose son is he?'** 'David's' they told Him. 'Then how is it' He said 'that David, moved by the Spirit, calls Him Lord, where he says:

The Lord said to my Lord:

*Sit at My right hand
and I will put Your enemies
under Your feet?'*

"If David can call Him Lord, then how can he be his son?" Not one could think of anything to say in reply, and from that day no one dared to ask Him any further questions. – Matthew 22:41 - 46

Then the Lord called Saint Mark to tell of them about the resurrection of the dead. Although Mark was hesitant for their existence in heaven was a proof of heaven and of resurrection. But for the sake of those who came from earth and will go back to it he read the passage:

Then some Sadducees – who deny that there is a resurrection – came to Him and they put this question to Him, 'Master, we have it from Moses in writing, if a man's brother dies leaving a wife but no child, the man must marry the widow to raise up children for his brother. Now there were seven brothers. The first married a wife and then died leaving no children. The second married the widow, and he too died leaving no children; with the third it was the same, and none of the seven left any children. Last of all the woman herself died. Now at the resurrection, when they rise again, whose wife will she be, since she had been married to all seven?'

Jesus said to them, 'Is not the reason why go wrong, that you understand neither the scripture nor the power of God? For when they rise from the dead, men and women do

not marry; no, they are like the angels in heaven. Now about the dead rising again, have you never read in the book of Moses, in the passage about the Bush, how God spoke to him and said: I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob? He is God, not of the dead, but of the living. You are very much mistaken.' – Mark 12:18 – 27

Although the passage above speaks of resurrection, in that instance the Lord has told them that in the three generations that were mentioned, they were in fact alive. For Buddhists and the Hindus, the next generations usually sponsor the grandfather and in this case Judah, this according to Buddha and Judah is the father of king David. Thus it was written in your Scriptures:

*I, Jesus, have sent my angel to make these revelations to you for the sake of the churches. **I am of David's line, the root of David** and the bright star of the morning.* – Revelation 22:16.

For king David came from the line of Judah yet he was born prior to the Lord Jesus Christ. Yet King David called him My Lord, ***because He was the Root and yet offspring or from the David's line.*** – Revelation 22:16

Although there were still some haziness with regard to the topics being discussed, the twins then called the attention of San Miguel that it is about time that they return to earth since the devils are now rampaging on earth and they can see it on the walls of the headquarters of the archangels.

CHAPTER XVIII

PERSIA AND THE CITY OF DEVILS

Juan Miguel told them that it would be good if they go down to Persia and find out how was the city of devils in that area of the world. He knew that, since Persia, has been in the ascendancy when it comes to intercourse of people or of civilizations as against the Israelites, they must put their eyes on these people and the activities of the angels assigned to them. For they know that angels of the good Lord have been refused and opposed by the angel of Persia and now Satan has been making this place to be their headquarters together with the one in China.

So they went down to earth once more together with Archangel San Miguel and his group of angels. They were far from the area where the city of devils was being built.

Juancho said to Juan Miguel and the rest of the angels, 'We know that this is not the end of the world but this could be the start of hardship for the people of the earth. We cannot allow the devils to make it happen we have to do something.'

Then they fly near to the city of devils, within their looking distance but far enough so as not to be seen and monitored by the devils. When they have looked at the city of devils that was being built, the one in Persia was almost finished so they decided to attack the devils and they battle it within the city of devils. This time the angel of Persia and his group decided to join the battle and they have the good angels retreated for a while. Then the Guitara de San Miguel continued to be strummed and plucked by Satan and that made them stronger and stronger so the good angels decided to officially retreat and call reinforcements from the other good angels.

The angels compatriots of San Miguel came and they were San Gabriel and San Rafael and their groups, in an instant of the coming of the angels reinforcements that the forces of the devils were defeated in the city of devils in Persia. Though the city of devils was not destroyed, it was built strong, the devils knew that they still have the Guitara de San Miguel and that the good angels will leave and they, the devils, will return to continue to flourish in their city of devils in Persia. The devils decided to return to China and there to plan their next actions. Satan said to his group that they cannot allow that the city of devils in Persia will be destroyed or be in the hands of the good angels.

'Do you suppose that the good angels will destroy the city of devils? No, they will not destroy the city of devils, instead they will occupy it, for in heaven, they usually do not destroy unless they were commanded by the Lord to destroy and in this case they will not destroy since they would want their prophecies to happen. Without these headquarters, it would be difficult for us to propagate our evil ideas,' Satan said to his devils.

In the city of devils in Persia, we can see the angels talking to themselves and trying to divine what the Lord would want them to do to the city of devils. They know that the Lord would always want to destroy evil but just like the parable of the good seed and the bad seed He will allow this to go on until the time of the end or the harvest time. San Gabriel then quoted the Holy Scriptures:

***H**e put another parable before them, "The kingdom of heaven may be compared to a man who sowed good seed in his field. While everybody was asleep his enemy came, sowed darnel among the wheat, and made off. When the new wheat sprouted and ripened, the darnel appeared as well. The owner's servants went to him and said, "Sir, was it not good seed that you sowed in your field? If so, where does the darnel come from?" "Some enemy has done this" he answered. And the servants said, "Do you want us to go and weed it out?" But he said, "No, because when you weed out the darnel you might pull up the wheat with it. **Let them both grow till the harvest; and at the harvest time I shall say to the reapers; first collect the darnel and tie it in bundles to be burnt, then gather the wheat into my barn.**" – Matthew 13:24 - 30*

San Miguel then told them that the seeds of wheat and darnel should be contrasted. The seed of the wheat is eatable while the seed of the darnel is not eatable but takes that resources off the land in competition to the wheat.

CHAPTER XIX

CHINA THE MIDDLE KINGDOM

In the same way that we have to let this city, in Persia, occupied by the demons and people that are under their sway so that all the prophecies will be fulfilled,' Explained San Gabriel, 'What we can do now is to retrieve the Guitara de San Miguel from the clutches of Satan. Now we know that he is in China in his city of devils. We already knew the existence of the place and where it is located. I wonder how good he is in choosing place. This one on top of a mountain, there cannot be any better place in China than that.

The twins decided to join the angels in retrieving the Guitara de San Miguel. This time they again fly with the help of the angels. They reached China and they have seen her magnificence. 'This is a kingdom ruled by Satan, the prince of this world, and he will continue to rule it until the Lord God decides it's time to cut the evils in this world. And that means destroying the works of Satan and his angels.' As told to them by Archangel Rafael. 'They cannot hide the fact that people here do not believe in a living God unlike the Western countries and those who have learnt the God of the Israelites.

FOR IT WAS WRITTEN ABOUT THE KINGDOM OF EARTH AND THE OF DRAGON:

Then leading Him [Jesus] to a height, the devil showed him in a moment of time all the kingdoms of the world and said to Him, 'I will give to you all this power and the glory of these kingdoms, for it has been committed to me and I give it to anyone I choose. Worship me, then, and it shall all be yours.' But Jesus answered him, 'Scriptures says:

***You must worship the Lord your God,
and serve Him alone.'***

- Luke 4: 5 - 8

'Although the Lord Jesus Christ has said that sinners are not good as other bad sinners. People are equally liable when they do not repent. The angels refused to quote the Holy Scriptures this time but the twins decided that it was necessary for them. In fact they have not seen much of the Holy Scriptures. So Archangel Rafael quoted the Holy Scriptures once more:

It was about this time some people arrived and told him about the Galileans whose blood Pilate had mingled with that of their sacrifices. And this he said to them, 'Do you suppose these Galileans who suffered like that were greater sinners than any other Galileans? They were not, I tell you. No; but unless you repent you

will all perish as they did. Or those eighteen on whom the tower of Siloam fell and killed them? So you suppose that they were more guilty than all the other people living in Jerusalem? They were not, I tell you. No; but unless you repent you will all perish as they did.’ – Luke 13:1 - 5

‘So the peoples of the world are still Our Lord’s and that is the reason that He came here, to ransom the people from the clutches of the evil one. That is the reason that we have to deal with the devils this time. Let us use a trick into handing us the Guitara de San Miguel, and in return we will not destroy the city of devils. Anyway, we will not be destroying the city of devils for now we have to let the people live in it and let them prosper under the sway of the good and the bad angels alike. For according to the constitution of heaven, every child born of humans have the good angel to the their right and tempter to their left,’ said Archangel Rafael.

‘Come on then, let us go,’ said Juancho, ‘It is now time to get back the Guitara de San Miguel.’ So despite that they were still discussing things they decided to take action. And then finally they were seeing the unfinished city of devils in China. It really looks like a ruin or something that was destroyed by something other than human activities.

BARGAIN WITH THE DEVIL

‘**S**atan, we would like to have a deal with you, said San Miguel, ‘We would like to know how much you want the Guitara de San Miguel. We would like to make a deal by leaving this city of devils to you while we get the Guitara de San Miguel.’

Satan decided to trick them too by saying:

‘With this guitar we would be able to build more cities of devils than what we have built so far. While this one is unfinished I would not want a deal with your group. Besides, how would I know that you will give the end of the bargain?’

But the good angels knew that Satan is not actually in position to negotiate with them so they showed them their force to him. And to this, Satan, relented and he let the bargain happen. San Miguel told the twins that this bargain has never really happened before and only this time. They also could not believe that Satan would give the Guitara de San Miguel back. They knew that he would rather be destroyed rather than give up what he has gained. But this time he did give up his gain rather than be destroyed.

Satan threw the Guitara de San Miguel to the good angels and as they were waiting for it to be thrown. They know that it was impossible for Satan to get near them for the good angels were holy. When San Miguel has catch the Guitara de San Miguel they decided to leave the place. Then the devils transformed again into spirit forces and let the people of the nearby places discover and go to their “as if ruined structures.”

Since China is well populated and that people are on the move, the people easily discovered the half-finished structures. For the people it was something like made because of religion. There could be some monks or people in the same activities that lived here. The plants were also there to hide some of the real composition of the structures and the other intricate designs although they were devils' designs, here that human and angelic meet again but this one, of devilish kind. However the angels of Satan can also appear like angels of light.

One day, while Satan was surveying the place, he caught sight of a beautiful woman. He thought to himself that this time he would also copy what the Lord God has done with regard to His Son Jesus or what the Nephilim did. He will also impregnate the woman that will bring forth his seed into the world. So Satan decided to show himself to the woman in human form. Satan was so appealing that it was so easy for him to seduce the woman and that they have had an intercourse.

It took them nine months waiting before the seed of Satan came into this world. It was a male child, and since Satan was a creation of God and beautiful at that, the male child was also beautiful and angelic in appearance. This time the good angels and the twins were not able to stop the seed of Satan from sprouting, it came into this world. It came into this world for a purpose; that is to fight against the Son of Man and the same time the seed of the Woman and that is the Lord Jesus Christ and Her children. Genesis 3:15 is now a reality. As it was written the seed of the Woman will bruise the head of the serpent. The offspring will fight against each other; the offspring of the Woman and the offspring of the serpent.

CHAPTER XX

SPANISH COLONY IN THE PHILIPPINES 18TH CENTURY

But the news was not able evade heaven. They learned of it and then the angels decided to revisit what was written in the book of Genesis. San Miguel took a time to go back to the twins who at this time were already in the colony doing construction works for the Church. Juan Miguel as the architect and craft maker of Guitara de San Miguel replicas while Juancho as the supervising person for the people who were constructing stone churches.

One night while Juancho was asleep San Miguel showed himself to him in a dream. 'Tomorrow, bring your brother Juan Miguel with you, and meet me at your family farm, in the barn, bring the Holy Scriptures that is in your possession. Then Juancho rose from sleep and realized that San Miguel had shown himself to him in a dream. He went back to sleep for the morning is still far from the middle of the night. After a short sleep, suddenly the cock crows and he can hear some animals already waking up. Their father will start the day again with the animals and the plants.

Juancho to Juan Miguel sharing his dream, 'Brother, San Miguel has shown himself to me in my dream last night.'

'And what did he say to you?

Any message or messages?' Asked Juan Miguel to Juancho who still have to comprehend why the angels are always visiting them.

This time for the twins, when they think and talk about the angels, they were as real as anything that they can see and touch or smell. Juan Miguel did not question the dream and in fact he wants to know what was the message. 'He told me that we go together in our barn and bring the Holy Scriptures. He will point out something to us. What could be this thing this time? If he told us to come with him I will join him.' Juancho said to Juan Miguel.

The twins ate first then they decided to go to the barn and there San Miguel Arkangel was waiting for them with his wings tucked. 'You did not take that long although I know that you ate your breakfast first before you come here. Let us go to business.' San Miguel asked them if they brought with them the Holy Scripture, to which the twins answered in the affirmative.

'The Holy Scriptures are with us.' The twins replied.

The Archangel would want them to know something. 'There is good news coming from heaven and bad news coming from earth,' Said San Miguel to them, 'The good news is that the 'word of the Lord is true and they happen,' and that is from heaven. The bad news that comes from earth is that Satan has already his child born.'

The twins could not believe it but they surmise that this must come from the north of the colony a very near place to them. Only a sea separate the colony and China from each other.

Then the archangel gestured to them to open the Holy Scriptures and find out the reading on it particularly Genesis 3:14 - 15. What was written in the Holy Writ?

Then Yahweh God said to the serpent, 'Because you have done this,
'Be accursed beyond all cattle, all wild beasts.
You shall crawl on your belly and eat dust
everyday day of your life.

***I will make you enemies of each other:
you and the woman,
your offspring and her offspring.
It will crush your head
and you will strike its heel.***

– Genesis 3:14 -15

'The texts were unclear but we can surmise that the offspring of the Woman and the Woman will be the one to crush the head of the serpent and then the serpent will strike both the heels of the offspring of the woman and of the offspring. Then both their offspring will fight against each other.' Juan Miguel said to the Archangel and Juancho.

To the interpretation of Juan Miguel that San Miguel readily agreed.

'Now, what are we to do with regard to the seed of the serpent?' Jauncho asked.

San Miguel Arkangel replied that, 'We need to be back to China to the city of devils and find out about this child or children. I will summon forces of heaven large enough that we can defeat the devils right there in there.'

THE SAINTS AND THE ANGELS IN JUDGMENT DAY

San Miguel said, 'It is then true that you human beings will be judging some of the angels in the end of time. For it is written in the book written by Saint Paul':

How dare one of your members take up a complaint against another in the law courts of the unjust instead of before the saints? As you know, it is the saints who are to 'judge the world'; and if the world is to be judge by you, how can you be unfit to judge trifling cases? **Since we are also to judge angels**, it follows that we can judge matters of everyday life; but when you have had cases of that kind, the people you appointed to try them were not even respected in the Church.

– 1 Corinthians 6: 1 – 4.

'So it is true that we will be judging the world and some of the angels as written by Saint Paul to the Corinthians,' Juancho uttered to the two.

'What are we to do now is to go to heaven and find our friend angels and be with them when we go down to earth again,' declared San Miguel to the two and he told them also that, 'I want you two to be with us in this whole endeavor. So that you can share the happenings and events to your people and ***you may also write them down for people to keep and share***. These are matters of angels and the Lord, we have to be vigilant since this will be a continuation of our spiritual battles that have come in the flesh.'

It was clear now to the twins that they are into spiritual battles that has now come into the flesh. 'Can this be an opportunity for the human beings to show its strengths in the flesh?' Juancho shared to the two.

San Miguel answered him by saying that, 'The fallen angels remain strong even in the flesh for in fact this is their strength, in making people fall when it comes into the flesh. For no less than the Lord who said: ***that the spirit is willing but the flesh is weak***.' We need to know with regard to the strength of the seed of the serpent. For this child or would be children are ***half-devils half-humans*** so in theory they cannot be as strong or as weak as their parents.'

'The only thing that differ us with them is that they will always have the seed of the serpent in their constitution while we have the seed of Adam and the Woman with us and have a promise of salvation through brotherhood with the Lord Jesus Christ,' explained by Juan Miguel to them. The sin of Adam made us weak and not because of his seed or the seed of the Woman. ***The seed of the Woman could have been strong since in the book of Genesis, even without qualification, has already said that she will have no relations as regards that seed of the serpent except as its or their enemy or enemies if we consider to bring their offspring.***

At this point in time of their discussion the twins decided to say goodbye to their parents for a while since they will have missions to do. Their parents where at a loss as to what are happening to their children but they know that just like in their other missions these ones must be of importance to heaven. The twins come and go this time but for them it was already a done thing since the two have already done their part of finishing their schooling and in fact have flourishing occupations. But the two were secretive to them; they do not talk much to them with regard to their missions except for these Guitara de San Miguel replicas that cannot be hidden from them.

There were stories about the Guitara de San Miguel replicas but what the parents want to see is the original the Guitara de San Miguel itself. But the two was truthful that the original guitar was already backed to heaven and only to be back to the Church of Mexico once the situation has stabilized. But when would the situation stabilize, since time immemorial, their father knew that angels and the devils have been in constant battle that was why people have recognized the theory of duality? Black versus white, good versus

bad, etc... But whatever their twins were doing, as long as not against heaven, they were for it. So in the end they gave their consent for the twins to go for another mission.

CHAPTER XXI

THE ARMY OF HEAVEN

The three went back to heaven and this time a huge army of angels were awaiting them. They were ready to go down to earth from heaven to do battle against the devils in the world. Immediately San Miguel Arkanghel inspected his battle ready angels, they will be going down to earth in the flesh condition and not in spirit form. But they have to be this type since the enemies will surely be in this form also. Besides, the enemies know that the good angels are now interested in the flesh condition of devils since the seed of the serpent has been born human-devil.

The angels waited for the signal of the Lord Jesus Christ before they come down. With the sound of a trumpet the angels of San Miguel went down in formation one by one. Their physical conditions were so glorious that the earth lighted as they pass down to it. The twins got a glorious body too as they go down to earth. They can now feel their strength and most likely they can now battle the devils in glorious body form. The coming down of the army of heaven to earth did not evade the notice of the bad angels or the devils. They realized that the full force of the angels are now here on earth and most likely will go to their built city of devils.

But now the devils decided to change into spirit forms for they thought among themselves that they already have physical forms in the bodies of their children, the offspring of the serpent. They knew that in spirit form they will be stronger although they also know that the angels can easily transform into spirit forms as well.

The angels decided to go down to Jerusalem and to Rome; they split in two forces. They were to rendezvous Europe then they will join forces in the colony to plan their next moves. They also have to survey the colony to find out if it has enough strength to repel any invasion from the north.

There were scout angels who roam the earth and gave reports to the archangels, and one of the reporting angels was Angel Sanbael. He now reports to Archangel Camael as to the condition of China with regard to its naval strength. 'My lord, I have surveyed the strength of Chinese navy. They do not have designs in regards to the colony as of this time. All they want is to have trading partners in the colony.

'What about the seed of the serpent, have you seen them, I mean the offspring, do you have news about them?' Archangel Camael asked to Angel Sanbael in soft inquiring manner.

'It was said that there are six hundred offspring of the devils in the human form in the city of devils alone. They could grow into around twenty million after two centuries and one hundred million after three centuries in human reckoning. That would be enough force

to muster to fulfill half the army of Armageddon in opposition to us. ***That is if they continue their procreating habits*** and continue to be guided by the devils,' relayed Sanbael to his superior angels.

'In such a case we should then return to heaven and await the outcome of the multiplications of these seeds of the devils. But in the meantime we should continue surveying the world to contain the seed of the devils to its stronghold and make sure that they do not intermarry with the seed of the Woman and her descendants.' This was the suggestion of Archangel San Miguel. 'We have to create barriers to these peoples. Mountains, deserts and waters are what we can provide so that they will not intermingle until the appointed time.'

Archangel Camael cannot believe what he heard: 'Intermingle? That is such a very delicate word, what exactly do you mean by that?'

San Miguel answered that, 'It was actually the Armageddon he has in mind. But if worse comes that finally the offspring of the Woman and of the serpent come together then they have to be prepared to divide the two and separate them immediately or they have to wait until the harvest time as instructed by the Lord in the parable of the darnel.'

We cannot allow them to unite under different races or we will be frustrated in the end by having difficulty selecting which is which among the children of God and of the Devil. Outside colors are not good precondition in selecting the children when they finally intermingled.' Explained San Miguel to the angels assembled. Then he realized that just like the gold they also have red stones to make sure that only the worthy can enter heaven and this time with the help of the saints. And we also know that the saints have white stones to distinguish them from the rest of the sinners. As it was written':

‘Write to the angel of the church in Pergamum and say, “Here is the message of the one who has the sharp sword, double-edged: I know where you live, in the place where Satan is enthroned, and that you still hold firmly to my name, and did not disown your faith in me even when my faithful witness, Antipas, was killed in your own town, where Satan lives.

Nevertheless, I have one or two complaints to make: some of you are followers of Balaam, who taught Balak to set a trap for the Israelites so that they committed adultery by eating food that had been sacrificed to idols; and among you, too, there are some as bad who accept what the Nicolaitans teach. You must repent, or I shall soon come to you and attack these people with the sword of my mouth. If anyone has ears to hear, let him listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches: ***to those who prove victorious I will give the hidden manna and a white stone – a stone with a new name written on it, known only to the man who receives it.***” – Revelation 2:12 – 17.

San Miguel continued to explain to them the hidden matters that they can use in identifying the people of God, particularly the saints from the seed of the devils. The red

stone just like the blue stone entangled the matters to themselves and continue to know who has touched them. So they decided to go back to heaven and ask for permission from the Lord Jesus as to the use of the red stone. ***The white stones have been a promised to the saints and the angels were willing to distribute the stones to the saints on earth while the red stones will be used to determine the seeds of the Watchers.*** Meanwhile the seeds of the devils will be known by the red and white stones through their reaction of the stones when neared to them.

Only San Miguel Arkangel and Archangel Camael returned to heaven. The armies of angels were left to do the heaven's bidding in an instant that they will be needed. And in heaven the San Miguel reported to the Lord Jesus Christ: 'My Lord, the mingling of the human seeds and the seed of the serpent have happened. There will now be difficulty knowing which is which when they grow and intermingle. But in the meantime we created barriers to their movements like growing mountains, putting rivers and other natural barriers from the children of your Spouse, the Church. To the south of the Dragon country is the colony and what separates them is a small sea and we believe that as they learn the technologies it will not be long before they can muster enough forces to invade the country although, today, there are no such designs in the mind of the Dragon country.'

Lord Jesus Christ replied and told San Miguel that the Dragon country is His country. It is one of the many peoples that He has keen interest. Though the Father prefers the Hebrews, He on His part prefers the Chinese. The Chinese will fulfill His bidding to have His glory be seen by His own people. ***He also has keen interest about the Hindus for to Him that the real teachings about the Spirit and Him are understood.*** If the Christians do not understand the meaning of Spirit then they miss the opportunity of becoming gods or saints in the sense of the word to which God the Father wants His sons to be. Or Saints and Sons if they are capable and holy enough. I am just a first born of the Creation or from the dead. The Father wants all to be first born and to be His sons. With regard to the Chinese who mingled with the seeds of the serpent, they can be removed after many generations and be replaced by the seed of the Woman. Besides, these Chinese, those who have no seed of the serpent, are receptive to the promptings of heaven and of the Holy Spirit.

'Do you understand all of this?' Asked by the Lord Jesus Christ to His Arkangel San Miguel who replied in the affirmative, 'Yes, my Lord Jesus, I understand all of this and I will relay all of these to the angels I left on earth to and to your people on earth. The Lord Jesus Christ discussed many things before the Arkangel decided to leave the glorious presence of the Lord.'

San Miguel then bid farewell to the Lord and then he went down to earth and to his angels that he left on the land of the Dragon country that is China. When he has reached the place he immediately told his angels the thoughts of the Lord with regard to this Dragon country and those that were impregnated by the serpent seed that was left here by the devils. He relayed that for the Lord the serpent seed could be removed from the people injected with it except for some who will carry them until the day of the last day or the Armageddon particularly the son of Perdition or the Rebel. The Rebel will lead a rebellion

in the Church of our Lord but will not succeed although at this time they are already at work.

CHAPTER XXII

GUITARA DE SAN MIGUEL IN THE HANDS OF THE TWINS

Twins, it is your time to shine once more. You have to bring this Guitara de San Miguel to the Church of Mexico. This time it must be put inside the building it has made and be guarded by the priests as one of their most sacred possession.'

The archangel San Miguel told the twins. 'I am requesting you to go back to the colony using the merchant ships of the Chinese and then go back to Mexico through the galleons.'

The twins took the long road to south china, accompanied by a dozen angels they travelled using horses and as they travelled the Dragon country they surveyed the area. They surveyed the mountains that they travelled through, the rivers and the valleys and the plateau and many other places of the country. They have also heard of the very long Great Wall of China. The Wall, which was made to ward off the Barbarians of the North and Central Asia, but only to be of no avail, their people and the nomads of the North Central Asia eventually intermingled and their races become one.

So all in all they were fourteen who were travelling downward south of the Dragon country. They came from the western side of the country and traversing an old route that has been the way of the people of China for a very long time. Centuries had passed and the route remains. People were gone and new breeds came and yet the route remains.

'Is this the so called silk road of the Old China?' Juan Miguel asked to his brother.

His brother then asked the angels about the route they were taking. The angels said that the route they were taking was an old route and this route was opposite of the Silk Road. Silk Road was toward the west and north while they were travelling downward south.

Angel Sanbael was leading the group to a pace they were going. There were inns on the road and there were places that they can have their rest. Although the angels need none of them, the twins need the food, water, rest and sleep and because of those, their travel becomes much slower. The angels cannot raise complaints since they know that the humans were created a little lower than angels and that they have weaker body and weaker spirit. That they need these provisions and the rest and sleep. They cannot be driven too much or they will collapse and the travel will be stopped so that these humans could recuperate. Thus, despite the slow pace of the travel the angels keep their good countenance and continue at the pace of the humans.

Angel Sanbael told the twins that despite the slow pace of the travel they were into good mood.

‘Does that mean that we are a disturbance to you?’ Asked Juancho to Sanbael, to which the angel replied that they sometimes want to be with this type of travel to learn more of the places in details.

In spirit form, Angel Sanbael said, angels do not have this kind of experience. They travel differently, from one universe to another, from one dimension to another. Time was constant for them, they were not affected by it. Thus they were never late they were always on time in spirit form.

‘In this travel will we be on time too?’ Juan Miguel asked. Angel Sanbael replied that they will always be on time except maybe the two of them and that would be the humans.’ The twins give a smile to the angel’s answer.

It took them one month in human reckoning before they reached the place of south China, the place where they can now board a boat and go back to the colony.

The twins bid farewell to the twelve angels who remained in the pier to see to it that they were on board. The twelve will not join them in the colony since they have to engage the devils in the city of devils in human or in spirit form. The boat that they took was a huge one and there were goods and items that they carry for the traders in Manila. There were chinawares and many other manufactured goods that the people of the Dragon country produced. They also have some sacks of rice to be brought to the colony. The colony, as far as the twins know, have difficulty producing sufficient rice for its own people. The colony usually imports rice from China, and other neighboring nations so that its population will have enough on the table.

The fact of the matter with regard to the rice of the colony was not a secret to the twins. They can observe large farms in the colony were not for rice but some other cash crops like tobacco to the north, abaca in Bicol, Sugar in the Visayas and Cebu and other products in Mindanao. It took them three weeks of voyage on the sea and then they reached Manila. In Manila the people were busy with their trading activities. They knew that the China goods that the boat they were with will be brought to Mexico via the galleon trade. They will eventually reach the other places in the Americas.

INTRAMUROS MANILA

It will take another one month before the galleon will leave for Acapulco, Mexico. There the twins decided to be booked immediately while they were carrying a baggage known only to them. There could be difficulty since they have to declare to the customs officials what they were carrying. The Guitara de San Miguel was big enough to arouse suspicion and that some Spanish sailors might get an interest in it. That was the danger that they were into. The twins then decided to go to

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros to refer the matter. When the priest has seen the guitar, he could not believe since this is only to be in the Church of Mexico. Would he be covetous or just to have a peek of it is enough?

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros told the twins that he would want to strum and pluck the Guitara de San Miguel and find out the magic of guitar or the heaven of it. As the priest was strumming the guitar; the church structure that they were in then slowly showing some intricate designs.

'It was being affected by the sound of the guitar!' The priest called out.

'How could this be? This is magic.'

The priest continued to pluck the guitar the more the designs become intricate and eventually the whole of the structure was with designs to its proper places.

'This is amazing! But I know that this Guitara de San Miguel does not belong to the Church of Manila but to the Church of Mexico.' Told the priest to the twins who were happy showing and sharing the guitar to the priest.

Juan Miguel told the priest that the guitar belongs to heaven and consequently to the saints too. It is here in Manila now for a purpose. That purpose is to make sure it has some signatures in the structure that were created just now. What else could not be perfect than that? Juan Miguel questioned the priest.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then asked the twins if they were interested in building Churches in Luzon for the posterity of the people of the colony. The twins told the priest that they really wanted to build churches in the colony but in the meantime they have to return the Guitara de San Miguel to its rightful owner here on earth and that was the Church of Mexico.

They say to the priest that there will still be a month before they will board the galleons going to Acapulco, Mexico. They requested the priest if they can again go to the kingdom of the Diwatas. The priest reminded them that the diwatas would call them and not them who will barge in in the kingdom of the Diwatas. Actually it was Juan Miguel who told him about that condition so he should not be surprised. Now the twins asked the priest if there could be a place or way to send a message to the Diwatas that they want to speak to them. The priest knew no other way but he can pray to God that they might kindly awake the senses of the Diwatas to seek for the Guitara de San Miguel or for the twins or they can make a sign for the Diwata to see in their viewing river.

CHAPTER XXIII

THE DIWATAS AND THEIR PREDICAMENT

Unknown to the three the Diwatas were anxious to see the Guitara de San Miguel. The sisters Princesses decided to consult their river to find out the Guitara de San Miguel and they saw the twins talking to the priest while Juan Miguel was holding the Guitara de San Miguel.

'There they are, said Amihan to her sister princess Mayumi.

'Yes, replied Mayumi, and it seemed that Juan Miguel is holding a guitar'.

'Is that the Guitara de San Miguel or the replicas that he would want to craft?' Mayumi continued to her sister.

'It seemed that the guitar will always be with the twins now and not to the Church of Mexico as the angels reminded them,' Mayumi continued to her sister.

Then Amihan, in soft and low voice, told her sister that they can call the three and have a look at the guitar.

'It will not be a bad thing to call them here once more and then we can take a look on the famous Guitara de San Miguel.' Amihan trying to convince her sister to summon the three we just need to request permission from our father.

'Yes, why not summon the three here?' We will be examining the guitar and if need be let us have a sample of the music and find out what it can do to our kingdom. And who knows if we can have it as well,' answered Mayumi to her sister.

Then they called some of their friends and subjects to summon the three, if they were amenable, and bring them to the kingdom and to request too that they bring the guitar in their possession.

Without question there were two dozen Diwatas who were about to go to the place of the earth people. This time they requested their monarchies to find out in the river if there are Halimaws prowling in the area.

'Our Royals,' they say, we would like to know if there are Halimaws in the area where we will be emerging. We want to know if we need to add more troops to our number or are two dozen enough.'

The royals knew that, yes, it might be that the Halimaws are there waiting their chance to go inside of their kingdom and create havocs as the Halimaws have always been

trying to do. There was once that the Halimaws have penetrated their kingdom but to their recollection there have been no Halimaws that was able to go out alive. All were dead as they retreat to find the gates. But despite such set back on the part of the Halimaws, they still continue to find ways in entering into their kingdom.

It will not be a surprise that if the Halimaws persist in entering that one day they could be seen inside the kingdom. Although one thousand Halimaws that can enter the place would not be enough to defeat them, the kingdom could muster ten thousand times ten thousand troops in snap count. And that will take only two days to muster. Their regular troops number around ten times ten thousand and need only a full day's notice and they can muster them to all gates of the kingdom. There were twelve major gates of the kingdom and hundreds of unnumbered small gates. All of these were in their knowledge and no foreigners can enter without them knowing it. There are natural sensors that can detect foreign objects and foreign people. Just like the angels the elemental principles, the Diwatas, can muster the forces of nature in making sense of their uses. So they use precious stones to their advantage that the humans cannot.

THE EMERGENCE OF THE TWO DOZENS

The Sisters Princesses then looked at the river to find out if there were Halimaws that were prowling in the area of emergence for the Diwatas, and there indeed there were but they were few and that makes the risk of requesting the presence of the three worthwhile. They relayed the message to their troops that there were indeed Halimaws, scouts, prowling the area of the emergence. But it will not be a problem since there could only be half dozen although those can ask for reinforcements. The Diwatas knew that it would take them a week before they can muster forces large enough to breach a gate if there were still Diwatas outside the kingdom. The gates of the kingdom do not show itself when all the Diwatas were already inside of their kingdom. Thus it was just once that the Halimaws have breach but that also proved to be at their detriment.

DIWATAS, ANGELS AND HALIMAWS

Can a halimaw defeat a diwata on a one on one confrontation? This was their question prior to knowing the capabilities of the Halimaws but then again the superiority of Diwatas have always been proven to be the truth. There must be differences in their biological composition and of the diwatas and those differences make the Halimaws feel inferior to the Diwatas. These feelings of inferiority make the Halimaws more ferocious against the Diwatas and against the humans. The Halimaws also have no conception of the existence of angels until one day that they encountered a dozen of them. They tried to fight them by the thousand and they realized the ferocity of the swords of angels have almost no bounds when they were totally decimated in a single encounter.

The battle intercourse of angels and halimaws had made a great lesson to the Halimaws in knowing who was who in the battle field thus they advanced a bit by having scouts now. These scouts were what the Diwatas were seeing in their river. The river that gave them enormous advantage compared to the humans or to the Halimaws. They need not go out when there were dangers outside and they go out when there were friendly humans in the vicinity. These are simple rules that the Diwatas instill to their subjects and that made them safe up to now.

It is time that the two dozen Diwatas that were ready to fetch the humans be given order to go forward and emerge in one of the southeast gate. They can easily defeat the scouts of the Halimaws that were near the area of emergence.

‘Malaya, you may now go to the place of the humans. Remember the positions of the Halimaws scouts near the southeast gate. They are not many but for sure that they will be fighting you as you emerge from the gate. It is to them a glory to be able to hurt anyone of you or be able to kill some of you even if that means decimation of a thousand of them. Remember their lessons with the powerful angels. Now they cower at the sight of angels,’ Mayumi relayed to Malaya - the leader of the two dozens.

‘We will be there my Royal, Malaya said to Mayumi, we will then go to the place of the priest to be able to talk to the humans.’

For the Diwatas they also awed by the name Juan and Miguel since they were taken from a saint and an angel. The angel warrior was so much in their memories because they have witnessed the decimation of the Halimaws when they encountered the angels of heaven. The Diwatas then tried to copy the large swords of the angels and find out if they can use and have the same effect when they use them. It improved their war materials but not to the point that a dozen Diwatas can decimate a thousand Halimaws in one encounter.

Malaya and his group decided to emerge at the kingdom of humans and at the same time those who will fetch the three changed their clothes into human clothes. Then the half a dozen walked toward the seminary and inquired about the three. They found out that the three were already at the port waiting for a communication with the customs people and from the sailors. The Diwatas then proceeded to the port and find out about the three. They were already very near the three before Juan Miguel recognized Malaya.

‘Malaya, you are here! What makes you come?’ Juan Miguel asked while in the form of embracing the Diwata.

Then Malaya gestured that they must not raise the suspicion of the people that they are from other mystical kingdom.

‘We are here my friends to ask you to come to our kingdom and bring with you your Guitara de San Miguel and we would want to know if there are any message from the Noble One?’

The three looked at each other and then they told the Diwatas that indeed they have messages and not only messages but stories to tell with regard to the Guitara de San Miguel, the angels and the Noble One.

‘There could be no better time than this time to talk to the royals of your kingdom,’ said Juan Miguel. I have many stories to tell, I will relay what the Lord has told me as regards to the last battle,’ continued Juan Miguel.

‘If you will permit, we will ask the Princesses to send a contingent with us to Mexico and Europe and they may find out the places and people that shaped the colony,’ Juancho said to the Diwatas.

Three decided to finish their transactions with the port authorities and the customs first before they left for the Diwatas’ kingdom. They knew that it was better to finish the responsibilities to the authorities rather than be disturbed by them later and become a hindrance in stepping into the ship to Mexico.

‘Humans have this tendency to be bureaucratic and hinder the smooth flow of goods and people. Authorities have this insatiable desire to control everything. They cannot permit something that they cannot control or at least some semblance of control.’ Malaya said to himself, ‘We have been observing them since the time that they come in here in the colony these white people.’ That was the reason that we were advance than them or that our race trust each other more than among themselves, he continued to himself. ‘Maybe because we do not covet material things that was the reason, here they have thieves and many other doers of iniquity.’

When all were finished the group then proceeded to the seminary since the priest would want to tell their congregation that he would be out for a time. This time they used animal carts to go to the seminary. The transportation of the Diwatas’ kingdom and the humans were the same as of this time though among Diwatas they have huge flying animals that can carry people. These huge flying animals make the transportation of Diwatas faster than the humans could on earth. They, birds, were also an advantage that made them superior to Halimaws in fighting them. The carts were slow and only this time that the Spanish authorities have been clearing trees to make way for the carts and the people and their cargoes when they were trading. Life in the Diwatas’ kingdom is easier and happier this according to Malaya who has been talking to the priest.

Seldom that the higher asks permission to a lower person when he was leaving a place but this time the priest informed Agatha.

‘I will be away for some days if not weeks but surely I will be returning.’ He said to Agatha who was at a lost to where will the priest go. ‘I will be with these friends, we will be looking for something and that means the other priest will take over my duties for a time. Kindly tell Father Emmanuel Trinidad.’

Then the group proceeded to the kingdom of the Diwatas. Right now they were twenty seven in total and just the same the Halimaws were there to disturb and molest their peace of travelling.

‘The Halimaws are there!’ Shout one of the Diwatas.

Then he alerted his companions. The Halimaws that were in there, being scouts, were outnumbered. However they continue to fight and attack the Diwatas. This time the Angels swords replicas were used by the Diwatas despite being the replicas some of the efficacy of the sword did not diminish they were able to acquire some of the qualities of the Angels swords. The Diwatas used a different kind of metal too in their unique metallurgy. The outcome was expected, all the Halimaws were dead and the soil was so much disturbed that the dust covered the entire place and the place could not be immediately recognized. After the dusts subside the group cannot be found in the human kingdom. That was a good cover for them when they entered the gate of the Diwatas’ kingdom.

This time the group were fetched by the birds that were the transportation system of the diwatas. The birds were huge enough to carry two people at the same time. They look very similar with the humans’ eagles although they were a lot bigger thus they can carry people at their backs. The twins were so happy with the development and about the birds. They have been into air but that was something supernatural, being with the angels. This time it was as if leisure, being at the back of the birds. The birds were intelligent they already knew where to go and to rest and bring down their air passengers.

‘Are these birds go to war with you as well?’ Juancho asked to their hosts.

It was Malaya who answered him, ‘Yes, they do come with us during wars and in rescue operations. They are one of the most subtle air operators that we have. They are good scouts too and they can carry our troops to distances that only them can do. That is a superiority of this kingdom as against the Halimaws outside.’

DIWATAS KINGDOM TURN TO CHRISTIANITY

Inside the Diwatas kingdom the days were still summer, there were no changes except for some days that were very much unusual in their kingdom. Malaya told them that there were times just very recently, in Diwatas’ Arka years, when excessive rains were threatening the horizon by showing so much dark clouds. And indeed, one week there were excessive rains that almost flooded the kingdom.

‘Our people were not so accustomed to it that they panicked. They brought their children to higher places of the kingdom, subjects that you cannot see in many months were in the vicinity and on the stairs of the palace. That never happened to us in one Arka years. Only this time that heaven showed so much water up there that even the Royals decided that it was time to offer sacrifices to heaven. We could not believe it and we were horrified for as you know that animals here have been our friends since time immemorial.

When you kill an animal it was as if you killed a Diwata since the animals can talk to us,' this was according to Malaya.

'Then one of the kingdom priest told us that outside there were people who offer plants and plant products to their offerings to heaven and to that we have to resort. For, to kill these animals is abomination to us.'

Malaya continued his explanations, 'So we decided to go to one of the churches that you have and find out what you offer in your celebrations. We discovered that you have grapes and bread. We have bread but not grapes so we decided to buy from your stores but still we do not know what to do with it. It will be an abomination to you Christians. The Royals then decided that perhaps it was about time that we also become Christians since as Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros has said, the Noble One and Lord Jesus Christ were very similar if not the same. This was one of the reasons why we also want to know more about the beliefs of Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros, Nature seemed to be prodding us to know your beliefs.'

Juan Miguel said to them that, 'Perhaps it was the days when Satan was making his city of devils. The Guitara de San Miguel has come into Satan's possession in some days prior to their arrival here and he was able to create some unfinished structures in China, as if ruins, and some finished structures in Persia. That could be the days that you experienced the very dark clouds and stormy days. I hope they were not but if they were, from this day forward you also will now experience some rains and that is a prelude to winter which you were not accustomed to have.'

Malaya told them that it is better to report the things to the Royals at once. So they moved and went inside the palace where the royals were. There is silence in the palace and it is Malaya who broke the silence: 'Rajah Matikas, here now are the people of the kingdom of earth. They are here according to your summon as relayed to the Princesses.'

Then Rajah Matikas welcomed their guests and decided to let the guests eat and drink first and be refreshed before they go to business.

Then the Princesses take a look at the Guitara de San Miguel and they were amazed at its beauty. But that all there is to it for them, the Princesses do not know how to play guitar. They know that heaven wants rhythm.

Then they turn their attention to the group that were now talking to their King, Rajah Matikas.

'We can talk over the food your good Rajah Matikas.' Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros said to Rajah Matikas.

To this the Rajah decided to join them eating and started to talk to his guests. 'I think, as relayed to me by Malaya, that you already knew the reason why we decided to have you here as guests, once more.'

'Yes, replied Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros, we already knew it and Juan Miguel has an answer with regard to it. He was the one who was with the angels of heaven when they encountered the devils. He was also a witness to the establishment of the structures that were created by the rhythm of the Guitara de San Miguel. He can tell you things, besides the two have been to heaven also so they can tell us if the Noble One and the Lord Jesus Christ were the same. As you will know, this I will go to the topic of religion that God and His companions descended here on earth and they confused the language in Babel during the time of the Tower of Babel construction. I can quote what was written in the Holy Scriptures if you would want and here how it goes:

THE TOWER OF BABEL

Throughout the earth men spoke the same language, with the same vocabulary. Now as they moved eastwards they found a plain in the land of Shinar where they settled. They said to one another, 'Come let us make bricks and bake them in the fire.' – For stone they used bricks, and for mortar they used bitumen. – 'Come,' they said 'let us build ourselves a town and a tower with its top reaching heaven. Let us make a name for ourselves, so that we may not be scattered about the whole earth.'

Now Yahweh came down to see the town and the tower that the sons of man had built. 'So they are all a single people with a single language!' said Yahweh. 'This is but the start of their undertakings! There will be nothing too hard for them to do. **Come let us go down** and confuse their language on the spot so that they can no longer understand one another,' Yahweh scattered them thence over the whole face of the earth, and they stopped building the town. It was named Babel therefore, because there Yahweh confused the language of the whole earth. It was from there that Yahweh scattered them over the whole face of the earth. – Genesis 11: 1-9.

'Now I would want to distinguish this descend of God in contrast to the descend of the Lord Jesus Christ. Our Lord Jesus Christ descended to earth but through a process called by the Church "**Incarnation**". Incarnation includes the pregnancy of the Woman and the birth of the child. And if you may my Rajah, said Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros, I will now discuss to you the life and teachings of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Archangel Saint Gabriel was sent by God to a town country of Judea to a lady named Mary and announced to her the incarnation of the Lord Jesus Christ. He will be named Jesus for He will save His people from their sins. He is also to be called Emmanuel or "God is with us." He will be called Son of God for His father is God Himself and this happened through the help of the Holy Spirit. Thus the Virgin Mother of God conceived.

Then His mother Mary visited lady Elizabeth, her cousin, who was also pregnant to her son, John the Baptist. Mary stayed three months to her cousin Elizabeth's place then she returned to Judea.

Then the birth of our Lord Jesus Christ happened in Bethlehem, the town of David their king once. There was census at that time as ordered by the Roman Empire to which Judea was a province. So people were called to be in their respective birth places. Joseph the Husband of Mary was from the birth place of David, that was Bethlehem. So to fulfill the prophecy, Our Lord was born in Bethlehem.

After He was born, to fulfill the Law of Moses, Israel's Great Prophet, He was circumcised on the eighth day. And when He was twelve years old He went to Jerusalem and there he was lost by His parents for three days. Eventually they found Him in the Temple discussing things with the doctors of the Law. When His parents asked Him why He did stay in the Temple for three days His answered was: "Don't you know that I have to be in my Father's House or business." Then He went with them to Nazareth an obedient child.

Jesus Christ received His baptism from John the Baptist when He was about thirty years old.

Then when it was time for Him to reveal Himself to Israel He called twelve Apostles to be His companions. And Saint Peter was the paramount apostle among the twelve. Then He revealed His glory by making wine out of water at a wedding feast at Cana in Galilee at the urging of His Mother.

Then He started to teach the approaching coming kingdom of God. He also cured many and those that were possessed by the devils.

Then He showed His glory to some of His apostles when ***He transfigured*** before them together with Prophet Moses and Prophet Elijah, the two Prophets came down from heaven since their long dead bodies had been buried [at least of Moses for Prophet Elijah was said to be taken to heaven through a chariot].

Then when they returned to Jerusalem He institutionalized the Eucharist, or Breaking of the Bread, in remembrance of Him. And that is the Mass that you are seeing we are celebrating with bread and wine every week.

After the breaking of the bread the Lord went to the mount of Olives and prayed there. Then He was arrested and the trial of the Lord followed.' [Here the priest explained why was the Lord was on trial]. Then the Lord was scourge at the pillar after which He was crowned with thorns by the Roman soldiers. Afterwhich He carried His cross going to Golgotha or place of the skulls in Hebrew. There He was crucified and died.

But His story did not end there; He resurrected on the third day, meaning, He rose from the dead. Then he ascended to heaven and seated at the right hand of the Father and there He will come again to judge the living and the dead. His Mother Mary was assumed to heaven body and soul and was crowned as Empress of the Universe.

Then they again look at the paintings that were left to them by the Noble Lord and they realized that they were really talking of the same person. That is of the Lord Jesus

Christ. Then to institutionalize the preaching of Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros he decided to teach their kingdom priest of the Holy Rosary. From there the priest knew that he can then baptize them in their river. He taught the kingdom priests the formula of Christian Baptism and then they baptized the whole Kingdom in the Name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit.

Then Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros introduced Juan Miguel once more to tell of the stories that he has been into when they were with the angels. Juan started the story about the angels when they were already in China. The Diwatas requested Juan Miguel to tell them more because they want to know more about China.

So Juan Miguel give a brief introduction of China once more, 'She is a country north of the colony with a sea separating us from them. They have emperor whom they also call the Son of heaven. Son of heaven, in a sense that he was the one who was allowed to communicate with heaven through sacrifices. And when was a sacrifice to heaven necessary? When they are visited by calamities or any portents in heaven. Just like what happened to you here in your kingdom. I mean the very dark clouds and the continuous rain. China is a huge country in the middle of Asia, a continent on earth, thus they also call their kingdom Middle Kingdom.' There were many other things that Juan Miguel told them about China and then finally he returned to the topic of angels and the Guitara de San Miguel.

Juan Miguel continued, 'As you know we now suspect that the forebodings of the sky could be the time when Satan was able to hold of the Guitara de San Miguel. There will also a time when he will be able to put his seed to a woman in a tribe in China and there they will propagate and fight the Rider and His army. The Rider is the Noble One and the His army are the angels of His Father who is in heaven. They will fight in the last battle that will happen here on earth. To that we hope that you participate.'

Malaya explained to the group that, 'We already have seen how powerful these angels and how they fight and how they decimate their opponents. In fact, here we copied their weapons and hoping that we can have the same powers in fighting the Halimaws and indeed we get some form of advantages as regards the combats that we have been into. We also look for some metals to match theirs but there was none here in our kingdom. Thus from time to time you can see us scouting in your place. We were actually looking for some form of metals for our swords and many other weapons.'

Juancho joined the conversation and said that what is important now is that the Guitara de San Miguel is with them and that it is better that they now bring it to Mexico.

'We cannot allow that the guitar is with us for long when it is not intended for us. Then another important thing for us now is to contain the spread of the seed of the serpent. They are in a certain part of China and

Persia, they are being protected by the angel of China and the angel of Persia. They are both powerful angels and together with Satan they can build a very strong army to fight the Rider.'

Rajah Matikas then asked, 'Was it not written in your Holy Scriptures that the Rider and His army will defeat the beast and their armies?'

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros then quoted from the Holy Scriptures that, 'Indeed, the Rider and His army will defeat them with His truth that comes from His mouth.'

'How could that be? The Rajah asked.

'Truth has something that it can move mountains in human affairs. Spirit forces are stronger than flesh so we can expect that from Him since His Holy Spirit is the Spirit. Then the priest quoted from the Holy Scriptures once more:

THE MESSIANIC DRAMA

W*hy is this uproar among the nations?
Why is this impotent muttering of pagans –
Kings on earth rising in revolt,
Princes plotting against Yahweh and His Anointed,
'Now let us break their fetters!
Now let us throw off their yoke!'
The One whose throne is in heaven sits laughing,
Yahweh derides them.
Then angrily he addresses them,
In a rage he strikes them with panic,
'This is my king, installed by me
On Zion, my holy mountain'.*

*Let me proclaim Yahweh's decree;
He has told me, 'You are my son,
Today I have become your father.
Ask and I will give you the nations for your heritage,
The ends of the earth for your domain.*

*With iron scepter you will break them,
shatter them like potter's ware.*

*So now, you kings, learn wisdom,
Earthly rulers, be warned:
Serve Yahweh, fear him,
tremble and kiss his feet,
or he will be angry and you will perish,*

for his anger is very quick to blaze.

Happy all who take shelter in him. – Psalm 2: 1-12

That is what we call the Messianic drama.

‘With regard to what happened to Satan, he was sent down to earth and he and his angels lost their place in heaven. Now it is impossible for them to return to heaven. Thus to make sure that they will not be having difficulty here on earth, they would like to enslave the humans. And that the twins would not want to happen so they are now in a quest to contain the seed of serpent in spreading.’

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros continued that there will actually be a real battle between the forces of good and evil. We just do not know when will that be but it will happen as it was written.

‘All the other histories were just preparations to it. The underlying reason for this was that the Lord Jesus Christ would want to show His glory to Israel. He will decimate the forces of humans that will assemble in Jezreel valley. He will also show his glory to the pagans who will assemble in Jezreel valley and in Jerusalem. The pagans will trample the Temple in Jerusalem and sacrifice pigs there, something that is an abomination to the God of the Israelites. That insult to the God of the Jews will change the stance of God and will turn His wrath to the pagans who went there and they will be obliterated in that battle. Then we know that the Lord Jesus Christ will come down or already has come down to establish His kingdom here on earth.’

‘And what would that kingdom be? Rajah Matikas questioned them.

Father Juan Sanchez Oliveros explained that, ‘It will be a kingdom like no other. The government of the world will be on the shoulder of the Lord Jesus Christ. He is a sure peg that is put in place in God’s house and that house is the kingdom of God. He will rule the nations with iron rod and that he will rule them also with justice, and peace will abound in his rule until the moon is no more. For it was written in the Psalms:

MAN LITTLE LESS THAN ANGELS

I *look up at your heavens, made by your fingers,
at the moon and stars you set in place –
ah, what is man that you should spare a thought for him,
the son of man that should care for him?*

***Yet you have made him little less than a god,
you have crowned him with glory and splendor,
made him lord over the work of your hands,
set all things under his feet. – Psalm 8: 3 – 6. Or***

God, give your own **justice to the king,**
your own righteousness to the royal son,
so that he may rule your people rightly
and your poor with justice.

*Let the mountains and hills
bring a message of peace for the people.
Uprightly he will defend the poorest,
He will save the children of those in need,
And crush their oppressors.*

Like sun and moon he will endure,
*Age after age,
welcome as rain that falls on the pasture,
and showers to thirsty soil.
In his days virtue will flourish,*
A universal peace 'till the moon is no more;
*His empire shall stretch from sea to sea,
from the river to the ends of the earth.*

The Beast will cower before him
and his enemies grovel in the dust;
the kings of Tarshish and of the islands
will pay him tribute.

*The kings of Sheba and Seba
Will offer gifts;
All kings will do him homage,*
All nations become his servants.

*He will free the poor man who calls to him,
And those who need help,
He will have pity on the poor and feeble,
And save the lives of those in need;*

*He will redeem their lives from exploitation and outrage,
Their lives will be precious in his sight.*
(Long may he live, may gold from Sheba be given him!)
*Prayer will be offered for his constantly,
Blessings invoked on him all day long.*

*Grain everywhere in the country
even on the mountain tops,
abundant as Lebanon its harvest,
luxuriant as common grass!
Blessed be his name forever,*

*Enduring as long as the sun!
May every race in the world be blessed in him,
and all the nations call him blessed!*

*Blessed be Yahweh, the God of Israel,
Who alone performs these marvels!
Blessed forever be his glorious name,
may the whole world be filled with his glory!
Amen. Amen! – Psalm 72: 1-19.*

‘Or if we quote what was written in the book of Isaiah about Him and His rule on his Father’s house:

I *dismiss you from your office,
I remove you from your post,
and the same day I call on my servant
Eliakim son of Hilkiah.
I invest him with your robe,
gird him with your sash,
entrust him with your authority;
**and he shall be a father
to the inhabitants of Jerusalem
and to the house of Judah.
I place the key of the House of David
on his shoulder;
should he open, no one shall close,
should he close, no one shall open.
I drive him like a peg
into a firm place;
he will become a throne of glory
for his father’s house.** – Isaiah 22:19-23*

That is how the Lord Jesus Christ will rule the world and His people.

Then there was a shout coming from the Temple in the kingdom: ‘All heads of the households had been baptized!’ [This was the priest of the kingdom.] The kingdom has turned Christians and they would want now to have the bread and wine for their celebration. It was a problem that the priest was able to give a solution since the Church has provisions for that in the canons.

This was the cue that the priest has been waiting it was time to leave the place and return to the human kingdom. ‘I would like to request from our hosts that the earth people be given permission to leave and that the twins be allowed to complete their missions,’ said gently the priest to their hosts.

The hosts reluctantly allowed their guests to leave. Mayumi told them 'Why so soon? You have not round the kingdom and here you have to leave again?'

It was the priest who answered, 'That can wait the paramount thing now is to make sure that the twins are on track in their missions. We cannot delay them. We have to leave. We will see you again. ***We will put a sign in our places when it is time for us to come back to your kingdom again.*** We want to be your regular visitors and that has been talked between us three. May God bless us in our different endeavors,' then the three bid farewell to their most gracious hosts.

THE EMERGENCE II

The group then looked at the river to scout the place of their emergence since they have been known to the Halimaws. There were now around a hundred of Halimaws at emergence gate. They have been waiting to strike whoever emerged in the area. So the Diwatas decided to bring the Angels sword replicas so that they will have great advantage against the Halimaws. They also decided to bring them a hundred and each fifty have their own captain. And again the group emerged led by Malaya and Maganda. They are the two captains of each fifty.

Immediately they encountered the Halimaws and they fought them valiantly. The Halimaws was not expecting the Angels sword replicas. Thus they were obliterated in after so much fighting. Some of the Halimaws who were not in the fighting left the place running and again learn a lesson in what happened. Then the twins emerged together with the Guitara de San Miguel. The group then proceeded to the Church seminary and the three go inside and say farewell to the group of Diwatas.

'It was our most fruitful visit to the Diwatas kingdom,' said the priest to the twins, 'maybe even the next visits will not be equal since this visit was able to turn the whole kingdom into Christianity.'

The priest shared to the twins that conversions like these only happen during early years of Christianity and during the middle ages when people were still ignorant and that only the rulers were educated.

'Imagine our three weeks in the kingdom, we were able to baptize every heads of household of twenty million. Of course we have to teach many of them the formula of baptism. The Lord Jesus Christ is successful in turning these people to Him. Unlike when He just visited them. Now, we the disciples, were able to share the Church to them,' Said the priest.

The twins now were in a hurry to return to the port and report to the galleon captain that they will be in the ship when it finally sails for Mexico.

'Captain, we would want to be in the galleon and here is our payment.' said the twins. The captain then told the twins to give the payment to the person in-charge in taking the payments and they should get their passes in return.

'This is a new innovation,' said Juan Miguel, 'it was not like this the last time that I travelled to Mexico.'

1734 MURILLO VELARDE MAP AND THE GALLEONS

Before they boarded a galleon they came to a place wherein maps were being displayed and one caught their attention. It was a first graphic illustration of the map of the Philippines. It was finished on year of Our Lord 1734 it was a Philippine Map, it was sponsored by no less than a priest in the Philippines Father Murillo Velarde. It was a great map showing the whole of the archipelago. Never was there such a map that showed the composition of the nation that the Spanish were giving sense of nationhood. The twins admired the artist then they proceed to board the galleon.

'Just like before Juan Miguel, but this time are you with you your twin brother? The Captain of the ship inquired.

'Yes, he is my twin brother and we are going to Mexico together this time.' Juan Miguel answered. 'We cannot postpone this voyage that is why we insist to be here on your ship.'

'There is no problem with that. Two persons can always be accommodated in here. Even if you add more. Hehehe!' 'Mexico is a nice place and if we will be lucky we can also create some money from it. Hehehe!' Grins the Captain of the ship. 'As you know Juan Miguel, this will be a long voyage so perhaps you want to introduce the oceans to your brother.'

The captain then realized that the twins were holding a guitar tightly. 'Could you not relax,' he said to the two, 'no one will take your guitar from you. There are lots of that in Mexico.'

But the twins knew that the Captain of the ship had no idea of the guitar that they were carrying.

'Only if he knew he would be taking this guitar from us,' whispered Juancho to Juan Miguel.

Then the twins become uneasy with the situation and they decided to be under the deck of the ship.

'Spanish galleon's captain and crews are good people are they not?' Juancho asked to Juan Miguel.

'Of course they are good, but we have to be careful because we cannot run and we cannot swim our way to Mexico. The angels are not here to fetch us if something bad happens.'

'But we can always call on them, I mean we can always pray,' said Juancho.

'Pray that we should do,' Replied Juan Miguel. Then the two took out their rosary beads and started to pray.

After sometime they felt that the air in the ocean were getting cooler and cooler and then sleepiness comes to their mind and body. And finally they were able to sleep. The next day they feel they were well rested and the doubts of yesterday were gone it was a new day and a new hope.

'Ah, Said Juan Miguel to himself, 'This is the hope that we are looking, when as if everything is new and we can start again. But here we are in the middle of an ocean and we cannot move except in this ship, there must be something last night that made us sleep than usual. San Miguel could have shown himself to us,' Juan Miguel expressing his thoughts to Juancho.

'How long will we be here in this ship my brother?' Jauncho asked.

'The last time I travelled was three months and I do not think that has changed in that short duration. We will be voyaging to Mexico in the same duration,' replied Juan Miguel.

The day seemed very long but eventually they became accustomed to it. Three months was such a very long time. But since they were two in the ship they never run out of stories with regard to their adventures. Juancho was telling his brother how he accomplished the fortified government offices in Cebu and nearby places.

'Those forts, the fortified walled places, will surely help those who are inside in defending themselves against the Moros.' Juancho said.

'Although I do not think that the Moros should be forever be our enemies. They are also children of Abraham. It will be better if we make peace with them,' Jauncho said again to Juan Miguel.

'And why do not you tell that to your friends in the Gobierno Civil? They will surely listen to you,' Juan Miguel asked. 'Yes why not? It will make life easier down south of the Philippines.

But Juancho knew that it was not that easy. Any move or improvement that could be made in the colony comes from Mexico and Mexico asks permission always from Spain. And that was not an easy thing to do. A simple communication will take half a year before an answer will return to the colony. And that was not conducive to changes that were necessary since every time there will be changes in the colony that must be addressed. Besides, the elites that were in the colony do not want any change, which was understandable since they were the beneficiaries of the system. That includes them, but he does not care much if there will be changes for the better. I have always dreamt that improvements would come but who cares from the Gobierno Civil, Spain was the strongest Empire once and they feel that way up to this time. It is just that Great Britain was amenable that the Philippines will remain in the hands of the Spaniards.

‘Maybe not for long,’ he whispered to his brother.

It took three long months and then finally they reached Acapulco, Mexico. It was not that easy but the wait was worth it. There was no other way that they can travel faster except if the angels came or the Diwatas lend their huge birds. Although the birds cannot fly that long so still the angels help remain the fastest route to take. But angels do not always show themselves, only in extraordinary circumstances that they show themselves to humans but they always help. The twins immediately went to the priest Father Conrado Abellar.

CHAPTER XXIV

BACK TO MEXICO

Luckily for the twins, they need not wait long when they went to the seminary of Father Conrado Abellar.

'Oh. You are back my friend and now friends. Hahaha! This must be your twin brother Juancho? Father Conrado Abellar welcomed the two.

'Ah. Yes, Father. He is Juancho my twin brother.' Juan Miguel replied to the priest.

'And, oh, you bring the Guitara de San Miguel with you? Good that you were able to retrieve it,' Father Conrado Abellar said in amazement.

'It was not me Father but the angels. Satan was constructing his city of devils in China and Persia so the army of heaven showed their force to him and he could not resist and they made an agreement with him' Tell Juan Miguel to the priest.

'**Agreement with the devil?!** That would be so unusual for the forces of heaven to do?' The priest asked Juan Miguel and could believe what he heard from him.

'I think, as shared by Juan Miguel, they allowed the unfinished structures to remain standing so long the Guitara de San Miguel will be back to Mexico. And the way they showed me, Explained Juan Miguel, the cities of devils that were built will be inherited by humans. They will propagate there together with the seed of the serpent.'

'So finally the seed of the serpent will come out,' replied the priest still dumbfounded and amazed.

'Yes Father, and most likely they will come out of China or Persia, we just do not know who will be stronger offspring,' shared Juan Miguel.

But the angels of our Lord put natural barriers to their city of devils so that they will not be able to mingle with all of the people of China. In the angels' estimate, if the serpent seed populate the city of devils, by 20th century their population will reach one hundred million,' shared again by Juan Miguel.

'And what will be the gene compositions of these tribes? Are they tribes?' Father Conrado Abellar asked Juan Miguel with regard to the serpent seed.

'Yes, Father, they seemed to be the neighboring tribes in the city of devils. Unfortunate tribes of China and Persia,' added Juan Miguel. China is a beautiful and huge

country. There was such thing as Silk Road going west of their country towards Central Asia and Europe?’

‘Ah. Yes, there was such thing as Silk Road in China but the more dynamic this time are Beijing and the southern coastal cities,’ replied Father Conrado Abellar.

‘And the southerners were the ones who were settling in the Philippines,’ interrupted Juancho. ‘They were well established in the colony even before Spaniards came into the place. So it was really God’s intervention that we have to be Christians,’ to this the priest agreed.

‘If you will look into the surrounding nations you are the only Christian country in that area of the world,’ added the priest.

Then they turned their attention to the Guitara de San Miguel. ‘Is this really the Guitara de San Miguel? Then why did it bring evil into this world?’ Juan Miguel asked the priest.

‘The guitar made the prophecies possible. It has been a very long time since the prophecies were made and history seemed to be different and if religious people did not see the silver linings our beliefs will be different. That is perhaps the good news that that guitar brought,’ explained the priest.

‘When our prophecies are fulfilled, the Old Testament and the New Testament, then we know that we are on the right religion. And if we are on the right religion we know we will be safe if we follow the teachings of the Master. ‘So the guitar is still made in heaven whatever happens?’ Juancho tells to the two.

‘Yes, my friend. Heaven has a way of rectifying things and we should not worry much about things not going our way,’ answered the priest to the inquiry of Juancho.

The three looked at the guitar once more. With its intricate designs all that will see the guitar will have an interest on it. They will be marveling on what it can accomplish on earth. Although not all would be able to accomplish the things that it can accomplish since the guitar knew who and what types of people it obeys. Satan was obeyed because the guitar knew that he came from heaven and once he was its master. That was the time when Satan was still called **Lucifer, his angel’s name. Lucifer means light bearer**. A name assigned to very few angels since if we can notice the names of angels are Miguel, Gabriel, Rafael, Sanbael, Camael, etc... All ends in el, except his.

‘Was it a premonition to what will happen to him?’ Juan Miguel asked to himself, although the Spirit knew it from the very beginning.

Then the three decided to bring the guitar to its proper place. The priest in fact has already made preparation with regard to the place for guitar. There is a vault especially designed for the safe keeping of the guitar.

‘This time it will not be taken from the Church of Mexico anymore,’ he whispered to the twins. ‘It belongs here and for the good of the Church of Mexico it will remain here.’

The twins look at the guitar for one last time. ‘This is the will of heaven and we have to obey it,’ uttered Juan Miguel.

Then the priest took his keys and opened the vault then placed the guitar inside it.

‘Perfect! This is really for this guitar,’ bellowed the priest to them.

They left the place relieve as regards the guitar now they have to face the reality that the city of devils had been built and the only consolation that they have was that the one in China was incomplete. Nevertheless the seed of the serpent has been made alive and this will be their next big problem. Certainly these ones were above the daughters and sons of men but lower than the angels. They were an aberration of nature if they look to the scriptures for it says that ***“man is made a little lower than angels”*** and yet here a human above human.

The three returned to the seminary to take their dinner. It was now evening. Father Conrado Abellar made the helpers prepare something for them so that they can talk and eat at the same time once they were at the table.

‘You know, twins people here in Mexico are fond of beef so I have you prepared with a beef menu. I hope you will like it,’ Father Conrado Abellar said.

Then the twins laugh. ‘Hahaha! You know Father that we are still taking care of some cattle in our colony, although we are not much affected because we know that this is the end of cattle. After serving their masters they will still be eaten. Hehehe.’

‘Father, do you think that the product of the seed of the serpent will be like the Nephilim? I mean they are more human than human?’ Juan Miguel queried to the priest.

‘The circumstances seemed to have some similarity and some differences. ***The Watchers did not fight God or San Miguel and his angels.*** In fact they were on the side of San Miguel during the primal battle, there were written accounts on some apocryphal writings, instead they were sent to earth as Watchers. Then they left their proper abode to join with the humans, with the daughters of men. Thus they cannot really be considered fallen angels,’ the priest bid to Juan Miguel.

‘I am fascinated, but I do not understand the word abode?’

‘Abode means home but in the context of the writing was sort of place or office or condition, like being angels. So the Watchers left their being angels to join the humans,’ explained the priest to Juan Miguel.

Juan Miguel then continued the conversation: 'Saint Paul said that we are to judge some of the angels. How that happened when the fallen angels are already condemned and the angels are higher than us as written in one of the Psalms?'

'Yes that is written in the first letter to the Corinthians chapter six and it is what is written:

'As you know, it is the saints who are to 'judge the world'; and if the world is to be judge by you, how can you be unfit to judge the trifling cases? Since we are also to judge the angels, it follows that we can judge matters of everyday life; but when you have had cases of that kind, the people you appointed to try them were not even respected in the Church.' – 1 Corinthians 6:2-4.

Saint Paul knew of the angel of Greece and somehow he encountered pagans who were devoted to this angel and then he realized that since they were devoted to the angels they could function as angels too, or elders, in the court in heavenly places, or he meant the spirit abode. For it was said in the Psalm:

THE GODS THE JUDGES

G*ods you may be, but do you give the sentences you should,
and dispense impartial justice to mankind?
On the contrary, in your hearts you meditate oppression,
with your hands you dole out tyranny on earth.
Right from the womb these wicked men have gone astray,
these double talkers have been in error since their birth;
their poison is the poison of the snake,
they are deaf as the adder that blocks its ears
so as not to **hear the magician's music**
and clever snake-charmers spells. – Psalm 58: 1 – 5.*

Or in Psalm 82 as quoted by our Lord Jesus Christ:

G*od stands in the divine assembly, among the gods he dispenses justice:
'No more mockery of justice,
no more favoring the wicked!
Let the weak and the orphan have justice,
be fair to the wretched and destitute;
rescue the weak and the needy,
save them from the clutches of the wicked!'*

*Ignorant and senseless, they carry on blindly,
undermining the very basis of earthly society.
I once said, 'You too are gods,*

*sons of the Most High, all of you',
but all the same, you shall die like other men;
as one man, princes, you shall fall.*

*Rise, God, dispense justice throughout the world,
Since no nation is excluded from your ownership. – Psalm 82*

'Juancho asked the priest: 'How come He called them gods?'

The priest replied: 'According to some; because they are judges and the Supreme Judge is the Lord. If such is the case they can rightfully be called gods. But not only that they are judges, we humans can also rightly be called gods because we are made in the image and likeness of God. Besides, in silence, we know that we are gods, because we have spirits from the Spirit of God. And spirits are not supposed to be separated from the Spirit. That was said among the Nephilim, that they have the spirit of God. I will quote what God said about them:

Yahweh said, '**My spirit** must not forever be disgraced in man, for he is but flesh; his life shall last no more than a hundred and twenty years.' – Genesis 6: 3.

Then the priest continued, 'Perhaps the saints will really judge the angels. Right now the saints on earth are lower than the angels but time will come when the saints are higher than the angels. When an angel descends he is higher than the humans here on earth but when a saint ascends to heaven he is higher than the angels in spirit. That is why we saints on earth would want to reach heaven and the first being is the Lord Jesus Christ. He taught us the "Way".'

What is the "Way"? Juan Miguel queried.

The priest continued to quote the Holy Scriptures:

'The simplest answer is what the Lord Jesus Christ said: I am the Way the Truth and the Life; no one comes to the Father except through me.'

'But how can we go through the Way?' Juancho continued.

'In the book of Acts of the Apostles there they talked about the Way, explained the priest, 'and here is what written in the book as written by Saint Luke:

'My brothers, my fathers, listen to what I have to say to you in my defence. When they realized he was speaking in Hebrew, the silence was even greater than before. 'I am a Jew, 'Paul said 'and was born at Tarsus in Calicia. I was brought up here in this city. I studied under Gamaliel and was taught the exact observance of the Law of our ancestors. In fact I was full of duty towards God as you are today. **I even persecuted this Way to the death**, and sent women as well as

men to prison in chains as the high priest and whole council of elders can testify, since they even sent me with letters to their brothers in Damascus. When I set off it was with the intention of bringing prisoners back from there to Jerusalem for punishment.'

– Acts of the Apostles 22: 1 – 5.

Then the twins understood that the priest was speaking of the Lord Jesus Christ as the Way.

'It is kind of difficult to grasp but we are learning. This Guitara de San Miguel has given learning in theology as we progress along the way. But I am still at a lost about the Way. How can Saint Paul persecute the Lord Jesus Christ when He has already ascended at that time?'

'Good question, replied the priest, I will continue to quote the Holy Scriptures in the same book of Acts of the Apostles:

M*eanwhile Saul was still breathing threats to slaughter the Lord's disciples. He had gone to the high priest and asked for letters addressed to the synagogues in Damascus, that would **authorize him to arrest and take to Jerusalem any followers of the Way**, men and women, that he could find.*

Suddenly, while he was travelling to Damascus and just before he reached the city, there came a light from heaven all round him. He fell to the ground, and then he heard a voice saying, 'Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?' 'Who are you, Lord?' he asked, and the voice answered, 'I am Jesus, and you are persecuting me. Get up now and go into the city, and you will be told what you have to do.' – Acts of the Apostles 9: 1 – 6.

'So to that effect', continued the priest, it was already the Church that Saint Paul was persecuting yet the Lord Jesus Christ said: ***'Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me? So in absence of the Lord Jesus Christ here on earth, the Church replaces Him as representative. Thus the Church and Her people become the Way.'***

'But, let us return to the topic of judging angels,' said Juan Miguel,

'How come the saints will judge the angels?'

'The saints,' said the priest, 'as you can read in the Acts of the Apostles, suffered and suffering here on earth, and that make them capable of judging the angels who as we can see did not suffer. Suffering cleanses us and purify us of moral impurities.'

'Although in the previous discourse of the Lord Jesus Christ in the book of Matthew He said to the effect that flesh will also be saved. How true is that, Father?' queried Juan Miguel.

'Of course it is true that the flesh will be saved in the end for the Lord said that, 'If the sufferings and birth pangs were not shortened, no flesh will survive,' replied the priest.

'Why do not you call on San Miguel that he might again carry you to heaven and see in their walls what will happen in the future?'

The twins decided to call on San Miguel to bring them to heaven once more. But the answer was not immediate. Then they decided to call on the King of Heaven, the Lord Jesus Christ. And He answered them. At once the Prince of the Heavenly hosts was sent to them in human form.

'Ah. There you are San Miguel, sorry for taking you away from your tasks. We are concerned about what would happen in the future and particularly the Armageddon,' Juan Miguel said to San Miguel.

'You should not concern yourself with the end time but to what is present. For example, we should be concerned that the serpent seeds have already into China and Persia. That should be limited to their space of operation and not be able to penetrate into the whole population,' explained San Miguel to the twins. 'Nevertheless, I will bring you to heaven and let us find out what awaits the future of men,' continued San Miguel.

CHAPTER XXV

HEAVEN AND THE 68 CORNERS WALLED HEADQUARTERS OF ANGELS

At once the Archangel brought them to heaven and in heaven the glorious choirs of angels were singing. The twins could not believe what they are hearing. If they do not really have missions they would stay in heaven to continue listening to the angels. Not only they were brought to their glorious bodies but they forgot everything. Sufferings, sadness, sickness and there seemed to be no loss of loved ones. This is really heaven, they saw that people brought there are so happy that they truly forget everything that happened to them on earth.

On the walls the angels remind them of the previous encounters that the Israelites came across as they worship idols and go far away from Yahweh their God. There is a particular scene that San Miguel wants the twins to see, this one was history of the Israelites:

‘Solomon died in 931 B.C. then the once prosperous, powerful and known kingdom of Israel was split, the northern tribes breaking away from the kingdom and created the northern confederates. The reason for this is that the northern kingdoms had too much of taxes from the kings of Israel and they were asking for reprieve but they got none instead they were taxed the more.

Holy Scriptures recorded it in regards to the political schism that happened to Israel:

ISRAEL POLITICAL SCHISM

The rest of the history of Solomon, his entire career, his wisdom, is not all this recorded in the Book of the Acts of Solomon? Solomon reign in Jerusalem over all Israel lasted forty years. Then Solomon slept with his ancestors and was buried in the Citadel of David his father; Rehoboam his son succeeded him.

As soon as Jeroboam son of Nebat heard the news – he was still in Egypt, where he taken refuge from King Solomon – he returned from Egypt. Rehoboam went to Sechem, for it was Sechem that all Israel had gone to proclaim him king, and they said this to him, ‘Your father gave us a heavy burden to bear; lighten your father’s harsh tyranny now, and the weight of the burden he laid on us, and we will serve you. He said to them, ‘Go away for three days and then come back to me’. And the people went away.

King Rehoboam consulted the elders, who had been in the service of his father Solomon while he was alive. ‘What reply’ he asked ‘do you advise me to give to this people?’ ‘Act as servant of this people now, ‘They said ‘humor them, treat them fairly, and they will be your

servant forever.’ But he rejected the advice given him by the elders and consulted the young men who had grown up with him and were in his service. ‘How do you advise us’ he asked ‘to answer this who have said to me, ‘Lighten the burden your father imposed on us’?’ the young men who had grown up with him replied, ‘Give them by the answer to these people who have said “You gave us a heavy burden to bear, you must lighten it for us”, says this to them, “My father little finger is thicker than my father’s loins! So then, my father made you bear a heavy burden. I will make it heavier still. My father beat you with whips; I going to beat you with loaded scourges.”

On the third day all the people came to Rehoboam in obedience to the king’s command: ‘Come back to me on the third day’. The king, rejected the advice given him by the elders, gave the people a harsh answer, speaking to them as the young men had recommended. ‘My father made you bear a heavy burden,’ he said ‘but I will make it heavier still. My father beat you with whips; I am going to beat you with loaded scourges.’ The king in fact took no notice of the people’s wishes, and this was brought about by Yahweh to carry out the promise he had spoken to Ahijah of Shiloh to Jeroboam son of Nebat. When all Israel saw that the king took no notice of their wishes he get him this answer:

*‘What share have we in David?
We have no inheritance in the son of Jesse.
To your tents, Israel!
Henceforth look after your own house, David!*

And Israel went to their tents. Rehoboam, however, reigned over those sons of Israel who lived in the towns of Judah. King Rehoboam sent Adoram who was in charge of forced labor, but the Israelites stone him to death; whereupon King Rehoboam obliged to mount his chariot and escape to Jerusalem. And Israel has been separated from the house of David until the present day.

When all Israel heard that Jeroboam has returned, they summoned him to the assembly and made him king of all Israel; no one remained loyal to the House of David, except the tribe of Judah.

Rehoboam went to Jerusalem and mustered the whole House of Judah and the tribe of Benjamin, and hundred and eighty thousand picked warrior, to fight the House of Israel and win back the kingdom for Rehoboam son of Solomon. But the word of Yahweh came to Shamaiah the man of God. ‘Say this to Rehoboam son of Solomon, king of Judah, to the whole House of Judah, to Benjamin and to the rest of the people, “Yahweh say this: Do not go to fight against your brothers, the sons of Israel; let everyone go home, for what has happened is my doing”’.

Jeroboam fortified Sechem in the Mountain country of Ephraim, and lived there. Then, living there, he fortified Penuel. – 1 Kings 12:1 - 25

The kingdom of Israel was divided under this condition. As you can see in the walls, there Rehoboam mustering an army to fight his brothers but Yahweh stopped them,

instead they left it alone for the time being. Then what remained of the Kingdom of King David but the tribe of Judah and of Benjamin and some Levites.

You will see how the hearts of the people are corrupt for after the political schism there come now the Religious Schism.

ISRAEL RELIGIOUS SCHISM

Jeroboam thought to himself, 'As things are, the kingdom will revert to the House of David. If this people continues to go up to the temple of Yahweh in Jerusalem to offer sacrifices, the people's heart will turn back again to their lord, Rehoboam king of Judah, and they will put me to death.' So the king thought this over and then made two golden calves; he said to the people 'You have been going up to Jerusalem long enough. Here are your gods, Israel; these brought you up out of the land of Egypt!' He set up one in Bethel and the people went in procession all the way to Dan in front of the other. He set up the temple of the high places and appointed priests from ordinary families, who were not of the sons of Levi. Jeroboam also instituted a feast in the eighth month, on the fifteenth of the month, like the feast that was kept in Judah, and he went up to the altar. That was how he behaved in Bethel, sacrificing to the calves he had made; and at Bethel he put the priests of the high places he had established. On the fifteenth of the eighth month, the month he had deliberately chosen, he went to the altar he had made; he instituted a feast for the Israelites, and went up to the altar to offer incense. – 1 Kings 12: 26 - 33

'In anger Yahweh sent them conquerors from Assyria for the Northern Kingdom of Israel and that was in 722 B.C. because of their continuing idolatry. God showed them how he punished those that do not obey him. Many of them died, they put the women and the children to sword. There were wailing all around the area as you can see in the wall. People were running all around Bethel but none came to their rescue. The Army of Jeroboam were routed and most of the people lost their will to fight,' explained San Miguel to the twins.

Juan Miguel said, 'I can see people being brought to the sword. They were running all over the place but none can save them since the army of Jeroboam had been overwhelmed, all Israel was being decimated. Even their temple of idols were destroyed and now the Northern Kingdom has nowhere to go. And one by one they left the place of Israel to go to northern part of the world.'

I was in that battle of the Assyrians,' said San Miguel, 'but only to protect the Israelites from too much decimation for the orders of the lord must be carried. Just like when I showed myself to Joshua I can say that I am on neither side until the Lord made me side with Israel but in that case I was not to say. As you can see, there in the wall, I was tending the wounded and the dying together with **Archangel Rafael – the angel of health**. The dead I carried to the bosom of Abraham.

Shalmaneser, king of Assyria, besiege the city for three years. His successor Sargon was able to accomplish the feat of conquering the northern tribes of Israel. Many of the

people were brought to the Northern Kingdom and they were brought to Assyria; the upper classes. The lower class people of Northern Israel went to Samaria and intermarried with the local people, while the Israelites that were brought to Assyria intermarried with them. They were not concerned about the seed of the serpent since the Seed of the Woman will come from Judah or the line of King David, as you can see on the wall. The destinations of the people were different. These northern tribes who went to exile never returned to their place or homeland.'

After massacre of the Northern Kingdom of Israel the southern Kingdom of Judah and Benjamin stayed prosperous up to 209 years until such time that they were then succumbed to idolatry themselves. So in 586 B.C. God Yahweh visited his people again but this time to deliver them to the Babylonians. The Babylonians captured and sacked the kingdom of Judah in 586 B.C.

'Where are these Israelites going, these lines of people going north?' Juan Miguel solicited.' 'They are going to Babylon a great city at that time. It was a long walk but as you know many in Israel at that time were also rich so they can afford to have a beast of burden for them to be carried.'

Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, despoiled Jerusalem and took treasures from the people of Judah, from the temple of Solomon in Jerusalem. The leading men of Judah were taken to Babylon, around ten thousand of them. As you can see king Zedekiah at that time was also captured who attempted to escape. Then Jerusalem was taken and the walls were destroyed, treasures of the temple were also taken and finally they burned structures that you can see in Jerusalem temple being burned. Then the remaining leaders of Judah were taken to Babylon and then the rest were, the poorest people, fled to Egypt.'

Archangel continued, 'Nebopolassar was the father of Nebuchadnezzar and king of the most powerful nation on earth at that time.' Then San Miguel showed the two persons on the throne.

'This one was the father and the other one was the more famous king Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon. After defeating the Assyrians there was relative peace in the Babylonian empire and then they developed their commerce and had massive building programs. The Babylonians' Empire go as far as the Mediterranean sea.

Chebar river was the destination of the Jewish captives and they were treated as colonists. To remain political allegiance with the Babylonian empire was the aspiration of the Babylonians from the Jews and in return they lead normal lives. During this time that Prophet Daniel came out and became a government official. Many Jews in Babylon became very much wealthy in comparison with the local counterparts. But when the seventy years of captivity were over they decided to return to Israel, their homeland to establish the Kingdom of Israel once more.

The Jews from Jerusalem were more faithful to Yahweh than they were in their land. That was the most important lesson that they learned during the seventy years of captivity.

As you can see in Babylon there were many wealthy people but they do not know the Living God so for some time the prophet had difficulty assimilating with them but the people of God survived.

San Miguel is still talking, 'Then let us go to the time of the Lord Jesus Christ. There you can see Archangel Gabriel announcing the birth of our Lord to His Mother Mary. There also when His mother visited Mother Elizabeth, the mother of John the Baptist, and greeted her. The Queen of angels stayed there for another three months and then they returned to Nazareth. After which there was a census so Saint Joseph has to return to Bethlehem and together with him was Mama Mary and there she gave birth to a son whom they called Him Jesus. He is that baby boy in a manger.'

Juancho interrupted, 'Is that the place where animals eat?'

'Yes,' Said San Miguel, 'That was how humble our Lord Jesus Christ. I will also show you the river where the Lord was baptized. 'You can see that river? That is what the Jews call Jordan River. Then the other place up is Galilee particularly Cana where our Lord turned the water into wine. And there is Jerusalem the beloved city of David.

Now I will show you the event during the destruction of Jerusalem and the temple after the ascension of our Lord Jesus Christ. That was in 66 – 70 A.D. There was so much destruction that so many people were killed and just what our Lord prophesied there was no stone left on top on another stone to pave the way for his prophecy as what the Lord Jesus Christ said:

DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM TEMPLE

***J*esus left the Temple, and as He was going away His disciples came up to draw His attention to the Temple buildings. He said to them I reply, 'You see all these? I tell you solemnly, not a single stone here will be left on another: everything will be destroyed.'** – Matthew 24: 1 – 2

There were many other wars that happened in the world that if I show to you all I suppose that your earthly life will be here until your body rests together with your ancestors. But I will give you history altering battles;

THE VISIGOTHS AND THE OSTROGOTHS

‘As the Roman Empire became corrupt and debauch the Lord decided to visit them with the help of the barbarians near its area. The Visigoths and Ostrogoths. These barbarians gave judgment to the Roman Empire, they destroyed the city and decimated it to the ground,’ explained San Miguel. ‘But there is a setback to that, the roads that have been built, buildings and civil works were stopped and for three hundred years there was none who are minding stuff like that, thus the empire broke up and became a waste. The Eastern Empire was ruled at Constantinople and the Western Empire was ruled by Rome. Rome was the one that transformed into something different. The Clergies made the bureaucracy of the defunct empire work for them. Under this condition that Saint Augustine came into the defence of the Christians. He defended the Christians, who were being blamed for the fall of Rome. He eloquently gave answers in his treatises and was able to absolved the Christians of the blames for the fall or Rome.’

‘As you can see,’ San Miguel continued, ‘Europe remained Christian and that was thanks to some brave leaders on the side of the cultured people. There was once a battle of Lepanto in 1571 wherein the forces of Christian Austria were undermanned but not over fought by the Turks. In the Battle at the sea, with the help of our Lady of the Rosary, our forces won against the overwhelming forces of the Turks. There were many other wars that Europe went into in the name of God and famous were the Crusades.’

San Miguel continued the history of men, ‘Then one of the greatest war ever happen was the humans called first world war. Here many of the prophecies happened and will happen because this war happened, for example the birth of the prostitute or many call a princess, the woman who rides the beast or the princess who tamed the beast. But these were in accordance with the will of heaven. As you can see in this war many nations joined together to war with each other. It was a catastrophic war as you can see how many deaths. There were many weapons used and in here that people put their hope that this “Great War” as they also called it will stop all future wars. But they were mistaken. As you can see those young people in the trenches will be back to the same situation after a mere little above twenty years.’

WORLD WAR II AND THE NUCLEAR BOMB

San Miguel continues to tell of the future of men to the twins: ‘There again they started the World War Two. This was a more destructive war of all time. There were sixty million people’s lives were wasted. Many nations joined in this war and they lost thousands and some countries millions of people. But then again the Lord God Jesus was vindicated because the prophecies in the book of Revelation were being fulfilled. That means that his return to this earth will be forthcoming.’

Then suddenly Juancho pointed to something blinding thing: 'What is that mushroom cloud that has a blinding light?' Was it a weapon or something?'

San Miguel Answered, 'That was what the people called Nuclear Bomb, the place that you see it was detonated is the so called Nevada desert and the clandestine project that they did it was called 'The Manhattan Project' [after a place in New York City of the United States]. That mushroom cloud was a very powerful 'bomb' that can destroy cities and countries. I will show you how they will use it in the future. The flying objects that you are seeing were called airplanes. They fly like birds and they can go long distances. Then as you can see the plane drops the bomb on a city, they called it Hiroshima, Japan, a country far east of Asia, then you see the mushroom cloud. If we look at the destruction below you will see how it obliterated structures and buildings. Then look at the people who were dead and burned and those that who were almost dead with severed hands, feet, legs and skins that were no longer in the hands or body. Babies were crying because they cannot tolerate the heat of the bomb and they called the heat radiation.'

Then another bomb of that kind was dropped in Nagasaki, Japan, the same country that was bomb the previous days. The effects were the same, destruction and sufferings for the people of Japan. There were moral concerns for the leaders of the country that dropped the bomb but they reasoned that they want to end the war in the soonest possible time without much casualty to their countrymen. The country that made the bombs possible was the country in the north of Mexico that we have been observing for a time. It is a very young country with very much potential. She will be called United States of America.

In their history they become very strong and even the colony will come to their hands and improve it to the point that many people will become rich in material sense and many will change to their religion too. Then after this humans called second world war came the cold war between the western bloc of Europe and United States as the nation north of Mexico was called versus the Eastern bloc of Europe and the Union of Soviet Socialist Republic [USSR]. This war did not turn into a full blown war but a war of spies and technologies.'

Then the twins asked what is Socialist? San Miguel answered that Socialist is a person who believed in the collective ownership of properties. Collective meaning all people own the properties. In contrast to Capitalism, which foremost is the United States and Western bloc countries, which put the ownership of properties to a person or few people.

San Miguel told them that it was actually him who was on the side to the USSR and making sure that the Cold War will not become a full blown war. While the United States of America has the spirit of Saint Paul and John the Baptist.

Then the USSR was also able to invent the nuclear bomb and that it meant that nations can destroy nation with the destruction that I have shown to you. And flesh might not survive. 'Continued San Miguel', because their Philosophy at that time was Mutual Assured Destruction [MAD]. Meaning one can bomb the other to destruction and vice versa:

'A*nd if that time had not been shortened, no one [flesh] would have survived; but shortened that time shall be, for the sake of those who are chosen.'* – Matthew 24:22

The Philippines, the colony, will be in the hands of the United States for ***She was bought for twenty million United States dollars from Spain.*** There will come a time when China will also have her designs in regards to the Philippines. She will challenge the United States hegemony in this area of the world. The Philippines is the most coveted price in this area of the world because she is the Way [Southeast] and the 1734 Map of Father Murillo Velarde.'

'What is the 1734 San Miguel? Asked Juan Miguel.

'She is the flesh in this world of spirits wherein when people have nothing to eat,' Replied San Miguel, 'thus people will be in competition to have Her.

With regard to your Armageddon twins? Here is the story; there is a wide road being opened to the west of china going and ending near Israel. The pagan invaders will use the roads in invading the city that the Lord loves. As was written in the book of Matthew about the siege of Jerusalem:

SIEGE OF JERUSALEM

W*hen you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, you must realize that she will soon be laid desolate. Then those in Judaea must escape to the mountains, those inside the city must leave it, and those in the country districts must not take refuge in it. For this the time of vengeance when all that scriptures says must be fulfilled. Alas for those with child, or with babies at the breast, when those days come! – Luke 21: 2- 23.*

Here I will show you how the fighting will unfold. There coming from the east the confederacy of nations that twill fight Israel, number one of which is China, then Russia and Persia. Their cities of devils by this time had already produced enough number of soldiers ready to fight in the last battle together with the beast as was prophesied in the Holy Scriptures of the Christians. There you can still see me, San Miguel, fighting on the side of some Christians and Israel.

Juancho and Juan Miguel were looking very intensely on the walls were moving visions were happening. 'What are those chariots without horses with fire in front and smoke at the back?'

'Humans called them tanks or Main Battle Tanks [MBT].' Explained San Miguel, 'that are very dangerous weapons that it can destroy buildings, tanks also, fortifications and

many other structures. They all can kill people that will be hit. People now have preponderance of killing their own kind and they do it in the most effective and efficient way possible.'

'You see the destructions that are happening. There are airplanes everywhere and they seemed cannot be stopped. And at this time as you can see the million armies are winning by pushing the Israeli Army to Jerusalem. And in that condition that the Christian armies involved themselves, the Visigoths and Ostrogoths,' explained by San Miguel.

'Wait, Said Juan Miguel, 'I am seeing metal ships raining fire to heaven and from heaven to the million armies! The million armies are being burned alive and many airplanes are joining the battle by dropping fires from heaven.'

San Miguel told them that those metal ships are real ships but made out of metal. The fire they are firing are called missiles and they create blasts when they reached their targets while the airplanes are also dropping bombs and missiles. These are the weapons of the world in the future.

And thus that will end the great battle of Armageddon.

Juan Miguel then told his observation, 'The way the walls show it to us, it seemed it is not that scary.'

The scary thing is if the events are not the Armageddon, for example if there were still World War III while USA and Russia on the opposite sides. These two young countries will be very strong when the time is ripe for Armageddon. If the leader of Russia decides not to fulfill Armageddon then that will be a catastrophe. But the man from Russia will be a statesman and have concern for the world and he is a Christian. The evil that we have to beware of was the beast and the false prophet,' explained San Miguel to the two.

THE FUTURE ECONOMIC SYSTEM AND THE 666

'Can you show us the economic system of the beast and the false prophet?' Juancho asked to San Miguel since he has scant knowledge about the false prophet, the 666, and the beast.

'The people you saw are those that have numbers on their forehead or on the right hand. Despite reading and hearing the prophecy about this numbering they still took the number for convenience without thinking of their souls or the life after. As you know they will be condemned to lifetime of death. For as Saint Paul says: ***'Life is in the Spirit and death from the letter.'*** As you can see the people are using the numbers to transact their businesses for unless you do not have the number of the beast or of the false prophet you cannot buy or sell,' continued the angel.

Actually their statement of 'who-can-compare-with-beast; how anybody can defeat him' is a parody of my name 'who is like God.' 'Who is like God' is the equivalent of Miguel.

As you can see on the wall,' this is San Miguel explaining, 'there are people who went to places wherein they cannot be reached by the false prophets and the beast. Most people that need to have the mark of the beast are in the cities since their transactions in the economy are what the future called "electronic."

'What is electronic? Juancho asked. 'It is a type of energy wherein people and object are submitted and they can know who you are and what you are buying. So those that are in the cities are most affected because their government would want to control everything from them, including their money. Thus the government is able to control everything,' San Miguel said.

Then he showed a computer invented by the humans. 'What is that? The twins queried.

'This is a sample of the machines that will facilitate the control of people in the future as wanted by the beast to happen. Then San Miguel showed then a television too and the false prophet was talking from it.

'That is amazing,' exclaimed Juan Miguel, 'and what do you call that box thing?'

Future people will call this television. The false prophets will use the television to expand their reach and occupy every household and preach to them false gospel.

'Juan Miguel, look the box is able to speak and it tells many things.' 'It seemed there were many inventions in the future San Miguel?'

That television is a wonderful invention but was used into something bad. False prophets will use that to propagate their lies with regard to the gospel and many will be led astray. The false prophet who look like a lamb but spoke like a dragon is the one that will cause people to be branded with his name which is 666. 666 is equivalent of a name of man short of perfection; he will be an instrument by the beast and the dragon in propagating their triumvirate. Then people will not be able to buy and sell without his number,' explained San Miguel.

'By the way here are the stones for following and locating the gold on earth.'

The twins took the stones and keep it to themselves.

CHAPTER XXVI

THE MUSHROOM CLOUD AND GOLD OF OPHIR ONCE MORE

San Miguel said to the twins that they have to go down now since they still have to follow the trace of the gold and find out what were their uses for the Church and the people of Spain.

And at once the twins went down to Mexico and went to Father Conrado Abellar. Father Conrado Abellar inquired from the twins as to what happened in heaven. The twins were glad to tell the priest about the existence of heaven but there were on the walls that they saw to be disturbing. Like the beast and the false prophets who will brand the people, rich and poor, small and great to their right hands or on their foreheads and anyone that does not have the brand would not be able to buy or sell without the number of the beast and his number is 666.

With regard to the Armageddon, there was such a very strong army lead by the beast that will fight the Rider and His angels but they were defeated. We also saw metal ships that throw fire to long distances that defeated some of the armies of the beast and they have some 'so called airplanes, that dropped fires from heaven as well. And the most scary part was the existence of mushroom clouds that exploded in what San Miguel called the World War II of humans. There were lots of casualties from Hiroshima and Nagasaki in Japan.'

'Japan is just northeast of your colony or the Philippines, while China is just north of your country?' Said the priest. It seemed that your country is being spared from the cataclysmic happenings. Your nation is chosen. But not for very long. ***For Magog will send fire to the undisturbed islands.***

Yes Father we are being saved from cataclysmic events but we never know in the future because we have seen those metal ships that can float on water with much armaments that can destroy cities. China if she became like that can easily invade our country so does Japan. The future is scary especially with regard to the nuclear bombs,' said Juan Miguel,

'Nuclear bombs, what is that?' Asked the priest. 'Those were the mushroom clouds that can obliterate cities and destroy million lives in just one explosion,' explained Juan Miguel. 'But the angels told us that we should not worry since the time will be shortened so that flesh will still be saved.'

THE GOLD BARS

‘By the way, Father Conrado Abellar, ‘we need to go and find out the locations of the gold bars here and in Spain,’ said the twins to the priest.

‘With regard to the gold I can help you here in Mexico,’ said the priest to the twins.

‘Let us find out outside and let us go to the bank where they are located. Last year they delivered twenty tons of gold bars to Spain while five tons remain in here. The gold have many uses for sophisticated and no use for brute people. If you were not asking, we use the gold here in Mexico to enhance the economy of the nation and at the same time in propagation of the religion that we have. As you know there are still lots of pagans in this area. We have to convert them all to Christianity, and of course with the help of His Mother,’ Continued the priest.

The three just take a short walk and they were near the bank. Then instantly the stones of the twins blinked and the priest realized that there are something with the twins. The twins explained that the stones were given to them by San Miguel to track the location and destinations of the gold bars. Lord Jesus Christ would want to make sure that the gold bars are being used by His Church in propagating the Faith of Christianity. The priest told them that there are now fifteen tons of gold bars in his estimate. In this part of the World gold bars will remain with the Church of Mexico to propagate the economy and the faith in far flung places of Mexico. The twins take note of what the priest said.

‘By the way, Father, we are not here to make formal accounting of the gold bars, we are here as informal messengers of heaven to find out the gold bars.

We will also visit the gold bars in Spain and find out their uses. Then the twins and the priest went back to the seminary. The priest take a look at the stones that were given to them by the Archangel. ‘This must be of some great value, Juan Miguel.’

‘Yes, Father, but we do not take a look at it as such since these serve a purpose. That is to locate the gold bars. Imagine the composition of these stones how they are able to know the location of gold in faraway places. In heaven, they call the process entanglement of matters. We do not know it, we just take it as such,’ explained Juan Miguel. ‘We now have to go to Spain, Father. May we kindly ask when will the ships leave for Spain?’ ‘We also need to know as to what are happening in the gold bars that were being brought in there,’ continued Juan Miguel.

Father Conrado Abellar then informed them, ‘There will be ships going back to Spain two weeks from now and I would like you to be there. They will also carry some crates of gold bars and it will be good for you to know as to what happen to the gold bars.’

Juan Miguel replied, 'Father thank you always for helping us in this quest of ours. Without you we will not be able to find the Guitara de San Miguel and most likely we will be lost. We were also able to know more about our faith and lastly the city of devils did not happen here instead you have great structures here made by Guitara de San Miguel. I hope to see you in the future.'

Father Conrado Abellar then told them, 'You have old from the time that I first saw you and now. You were still young but not before that were still lad. Do you think, since the time that you left China and Persia, they already have people settling in the city of devils? That would be the greatest news after the Good News of our Lord Jesus Christ for now the prophecies were fulfilled. And these news were not in the newspapers or mainstream government but only to us, selected few and the angels.'

Juancho said, 'Let it be like that Father, so that even if the mainstream history is not in consonant with the prophecies, we know for sure that they will happen.'

The twins continued their conversation with the priest and waited for two more weeks before they finally decided to join the ships for Spain. They also saw the bull carts load and unload the gold bars to the ships. This time the ships that were going to Spain were escorted with armed ships. They cannot take chances against the pirates. These gold bars are necessity for the people of Spain. They have to make sure that the whole empire is functioning properly. Half of South America is a territory to Spain and that make her Queen of the world.

It took the twins two months before they reach Spain. The twins knew they were not from here but they feel like they were at home. Besides, their grandfather was from this place. Madrid was a good place, a beautiful city. The saying was then true that angels in heaven need telescope to have a peak of Madrid. She is truly beautiful. The buildings were made of stones and then the two suspected that these could also be made using the Guitara de San Miguel. Although there were buildings that do not have much of the intricate designs of the Guitara de San Miguel. This could be mere genius of the human architects who designed them.

The twins followed the crates, now the horses and carriages of gold bars. And just the same the gold bars ended in the Bank of Spain. From there the twins observed more. They realized that goldsmiths buy gold to create the jewelry that Europeans like very much. There were also other uses that gold have that the twins looked into. The biggest use that they saw as they study more the uses of gold was its use in money for their economy. Although they have some sense about the economy the twins were much more knowledgeable in trading and agriculture. But they have been into using silver coins and some gold coins. For them it was mission accomplished.

Then they go to the other destination of the gold bars which was Rome. In Rome it was being brought for the safekeeping of the Pope or the Vatican. As the twins enquired they learned that gold bars being brought to Rome were used by the missionaries as pocket

moneys to propagate the Roman Catholic faith in other places of the world like China and India.

THE CITIES OF DEVILS IN CHOSEN PLACES

Finally they asked San Miguel to come to them and bring them back to the Philippines without using the ships. But this time the Archangel has different mission from the Lord Jesus Christ. He wants the twins to see one more time the cities of devils and find out how many have had settled there. At once they were brought to Persia and there they look at the progressed that the settlers have done. The devils did not always show in human form and this time that they come they were in spirit form while San Miguel and his group were in human form. But the stones that the angels were carrying showed different colors when they were near the results of the devils and humans. The angels knew that prophecies truly happened.

After Persia they now go to the city of devils in China. Just the same the structures in China were like ruins since they were unfinished. The seed of the serpent has already propagated and they will be preparing for the Armageddon that was prophesied by the Holy Scriptures. But the twins knew that it will not be in their time since they were merely in the 18th century barely after the nations' 1734 Map was commissioned. It means that the colony has just recently known her exact land mass and the islands that were included in territory of the colony.

'What is your prognosis of the seed of the serpent?' San Miguel inquired to the twins.

Juan Miguel told, 'San Miguel, that I am not worried since they have seen what will happen in the end of time.'

Juancho on the other hand, 'I am concerned that they will be stronger than the humans and that they will enslave the humans in the process.'

'What are we to do then?' San Miguel asked Juancho and Juan Miguel.

Juancho who suggested a solution: 'We put more barriers to their cities of devils and make sure that those that have been inside would have difficulty going out so that they may not procreate with the humans.' 'The barriers will slow down their movements and it will just be in time for Armageddon to happen when they are finally out it will also slow their population count.'

The idea was agreed then and the Archangel then called on his group to create additional barriers to the going out and going in to the city of Devil in China and Persia. They have to make sure that enough of the numbers for the Armageddon will be produced until the announcement of Armageddon.

CEBU, PHILIPPINES ONCE MORE

Then the twins decided to go home and this time the angels decided to bring them to Cebu. When they were in Cebu their parents have been waiting for them for a very long time.

‘Mama, how are you? We are here.’

‘Oh. My good Lord! Alfredo! Alfredo! Your children are here!’ Shout Monica to her husband.

Alfredo at once goes downstairs to see who arrived. Their parents immediately gave their hands to the two and they took the hands in Filipino fashion of respect. They call it *mano* or hand in Spanish.

‘We thought we will no longer see you. It has been twenty years since the first time that Juan Miguel started his voyages. That is how long it was my dear children,’ said Monica.

The twins could not believe them that they have been away for twenty years. All they know was that they were aware by at least three years or four years the most. The reckoning of time varies in the Diwatas kingdom and in heaven. It was truly true that “one day in the house of the Lord is like a thousand years elsewhere” whispers Juan Miguel to Juancho. Now they can have many stories to tell to their parents, the Lord Jesus Christ, the Guitara de San Miguel and the cities of devils, the Diwatas and the angels. The parents could not believe the stories that came from twins but they were two of them who were telling of the stories, the parents could do nothing but believe.

Now it is time to return to their common occupation. Juan Miguel knew that he can now create the Guitara de San Miguel replicas and create money out of it and find out too if the replicas can have some magical qualities. And the 10th guitar he has not been given to Mr. Caballero. So Juan Miguel decided to box one and crate it for Manila to be given to Mr. Caballero. It will be expensive to send the guitar but since he learned from the man, he will really send the Guitara de San Miguel replica.

THE CHOICE OF SELENA

It took him one month wait before a ship will go to Manila. There he sent his package for Mr. Caballero, the Master Carpenter. But his tasks were not finished yet he still has to visit Selena. The only girl he had admired since they were young. How was she? Most likely she will also be in her late thirties since we were away by twenty years in our parents reckoning. That means she could already have a husband of her own. But it is worth a try to go to their place and find out.

Juan Miguel knew that Juancho is also interested in Selena so he called him and asked permission that they will go to the place of Selena and find out if there is love inside of Selena for him or for them.

Juancho decided to come as well. It will be the two of them that will be looking for the lady. It was a kilometer away from their place before they can reach the place of Selena.

It was still afternoon when they arrived at the place of Selena.

'Good afternoon. We would like to talk to Selena,' inquired the twins.

The father of Selena came out.

'Good evening sir, we would like to talk to Selena,' greet Juancho.

'Oh. The twins are here. It has been a long time since the last time that I saw you two. What happened?' Come on go inside,' invites the father of Selena.

The two went inside and find out what have become of Selena, Selena came out as beautiful as ever. As they started to talk they realized that Selena remained single and never had a fiancé. Then the twins stated their intention of marrying Selena. The lady was dumbstruck since she said she cannot give an answer yet. She asked for some time and she will call on the twins as to whom she chose.

The twins then returned to their respective occupations. Juancho asked for permission from their superior in the Gobierno Civil, if he could still be admitted? The official was actually looking for someone with the same qualifications and experience as Juancho. So he immediately got the job and started the next day. This time they were doing a bridge from one town to another. This will be a huge project since the bridge will run up to a kilometer. The Spanish Gobierno Civil has not created such suspended bridge that long in the Philippines. Juancho have to handle a thousand people but this was not new to him since he has had this same number of workers under him before they went to Mexico.

Juan Miguel on the other hand continued his Guitara de San Miguel craft replicas and produce the guitars in much slower pace by giving attention to details on what he was doing. He also wants to be perfect as much as possible in copying the Guitara de San Miguel. There was uniformity in his products that is why people who were buying them were satisfied with the guitars. One day when there were much guitar display in his shop he decided to play one guitar according to the strum and pluck that he made when he was strumming and plucking the real Guitara de San Miguel. The sound was good to his ears but what he was looking for was the magical elements of the music. Then suddenly the other guitars that were on display move like in dancing fashion. Then the saw dusts that were there in the work shop move like they were forming something.

'The guitar replicas have magic too!' He shouted to himself. 'The guitar replicas have magic too!' He shouted to himself again. 'Hahaha! I made it! I made it! I can now make something from heaven.' Then he knew that the guitar replicas can form something but not build like the original Guitara de San Miguel.

Immediately he told his discovery to this brother and they tried again and again. Juancho then realized that it is true indeed that the guitar can form something.

'What then can it form that people will have use of? He asked himself.' Then they tried some furniture and it was able to prepare some of the parts and when they finally pluck and strum the guitar to the tone of the angels that was shared to them it build a solid table with simple designs. The twins were amazed to what the replicas can make but not to all music that they react. People who want to have something out from them still need to know the music of heaven.

Then it was time for the Selena to call them both, and the two were excited. Selena was now in her late thirties while the twins were near forty years old. As usual in a Filipino home, hosts prepared something for their visitors. They ate first and the twins were nervous as to what will be the outcome of this courtship that they underwent. Here they were loving the same lady and promising the same name and almost the same quality of life. Then the lady came out and talked to them for a while.

'Actually, I am so confused as regards to this decision that I will make but I also know that you are brothers , twins at that, and that you are also the best of friends, so I pray that you will respect my decision,' explained Selena to the twins.

'Okay. Hmm. I am choosing Juancho to be my boyfriend and fiancé.

Juan Miguel was so disappointed, but what can he do? Selena has made a choice since Juancho has a stable job and maybe because ever since Juancho has been in the mind of Selena. Juancho on the other hand was so happy with the decision of Selena. He cannot ask for more at that time. Although he was also thinking of his brother who was so disappointed at that time.

'But what can he do?' Juancho said to himself.

There should only be one between us, and Juan Miguel was not the choice. Juan Miguel asked to be excused and then he goes straight home. At home he went to his guitar shop and played some of his guitars. Being lonely he tried some of the music that were lonely and in his amazement the weather was obeying him. The clouds in heaven were forming and about to give its rain.

'At least, he said to himself, 'heaven is sympathizing with me. Hehehe!' He did not complete the music thus the rain did not pour that day.

Then he planned his next moves. He decided that he will stay in Manila near the carpentry shop of Mr. Caballero. He told his plans to his parents and his brother Juancho who agreed and gave him some silver pesos to be able to start his guitar shop in Manila. It will take two weeks more before a next voyage to Manila is coming. He told them that he can wait for the ship and in the meantime he will sell all the guitars in his inventory and cash them so that he can start in Manila. With regard to his tools, he will carry them all to Manila except for some that cannot not be carried. He said to them that he will just buy some of the tools in Manila when he arrived there.

After two weeks the ship for Manila arrived. He said goodbye to his brother and wish the couple good luck. Then he boarded the ship for Manila. It took him two weeks before he arrived in Manila. Once in Manila he went straight to the place of Mr. Caballero who welcomed him. However he at once told his intention of renting the place beside the carpentry shop of Mr. Caballero. That very day that Juan Miguel goes down of the ship, Mr. Caballero helped him in negotiating the rent for the place beside the carpentry shop of Mr. Caballero in Tundo. And there Juan Miguel started his guitar shop once more. But despite of being busy with his craft, Juan Miguel never forget heaven and his friends among angels. Thus one night he again called on San Miguel that he be brought to heaven once more.

JUAN MIGUEL IN HEAVEN WITHOUT JUANCHITO

It took sometime before heaven answered. San Miguel and his group went down one evening while the rain was pouring. 'What can we do for you our friend Juan Miguel?' San Miguel inquired to Juan Miguel.

'As you could have known, it was Juancho who got the hand of Selena and celibacy might be my destiny. Could you bring me to heaven once more and discuss to me the future things that will happen and the weaponry that will be used by people. It gives me such interest to the advancement of people particularly their architectures and weaponry and many inventions.'

Then at once the angels brought Juan Miguel to heaven once more. There in heaven he was brought to the control room of the angels and the futuristic room for the weaponries of human.

'Remember,' Juan Miguel, 'all these weaponries of the humans were obsolete when it comes to what we have here in heaven,' 'explained San Miguel. 'But for their sake and because of their fierce countenance we will study them as if they were the best that there could be.'

CHAPTER XXVII

THE CONTENDING EMPIRES

The nuclear weapons, the mushroom clouds, are no longer a monopoly of the United States.' Said San Miguel to Juan Miguel. 'You know that pigmy country north of Mexico? 'They have become a very powerful country and as I have told you they will be ruling most of the world in the future and they are already in the process of making it happen.' San Miguel continued. 'While the Union of Soviet Socialist Republic [USSR] has already invented their own nuclear weapons and they call it hydrogen bombs both of them can obliterate each other. These bombs can obliterate cities in one strike as what I have shown you into what happened to Hiroshima and Nagasaki of Japan. And the bad thing and scary things that happened since the invention of the nuclear weapon or as the humans called it "Weapons of Mass Destruction [WMD]" was that it proliferates among countries that have enmity with each other. After USSR invented the hydrogen bombs then came the United Kingdom, China, India, Pakistan, France, Israel and North Korea.

Some of these countries do not even exist as we speak but I can show you the countenance of these countries. The USSR as empire will collapse since the system was not conducive to human nature of selfishness. The reason being that their collectivism did not give incentive to people: to the industrious, people remain in a dole out forever and very few really work. It was their government officials or bureaucrats who were benefiting much from the system while agricultural and industrial productions were down,' explained San Miguel.

'What is industrial production?' Asked Juan Miguel. San Miguel lectured him about economics of the world.

'The world as you know is engage in the trading of goods and as you can see in galleon trade. For example, you can see the products of China go to Mexico for selling and distribution to other areas of America. As the people progresses, for example three hundred years from your time on earth, there have been much more products that were being produced and the USSR was not able to produce enough of all of for her people, of their empire. Particularly food thus there came famine in some areas of their Empire. Thus the prophecy about the Rider and the black horse happen. For it was written in your Holy Scriptures:

THE BLACK HORSE AND ITS BLACK RIDER WITH PAIR OF SCALES

When he broke the third seal, I heard the third animal shout, 'Come' Immediately a black horse appeared, and its rider was holding a pair of scales; and I seemed to hear a voice shout from among the four animals

and say, 'A ration of corn for a day's wages, and three rations of barley for a day's wages, but do not tamper with the oil or the wine. – Revelation 6: 5- 6.

Juan Miguel asked San Miguel: 'What does the vision mean?

'The USSR has been a powerful country militarily but they neglected the part of their system that will give them stability. The production of their food was neglected to the point that people were starving and only the very few were given more food than the whole population. They ration their food of corn and barley to their people every day after they work while Europe and the United States had so much opulence for their people to eat. The situation in the USSR was so dire that many human analysts expect that they will collapse as an empire. But they continue to hold onto their beliefs that without God they can survive in this world. They have an atheist belief in their schools.'

'Then Africa completes the prophecy too by succumbing to famine and want of food for their people. By 20th Century, Africa will be the most populous continent in the world,' continued San Miguel.

'And what is atheist My Dear San Miguel?'

'Atheist is a person who does not believe in God or higher being. All they believe is the preponderance of matter in everything. Meaning they do not believe in the existence of spirit or the creator being. Many intelligent people who lived in their empire were made scientist and scientist were those people who study nature objectively. Let say, they have made medicines, machines, and many other things like airplanes. The one that you saw flying and also of metal ships and finally the metal ships that you also saw throwing fire in the air. By producing so much for their chariots and metal ships and airplanes they neglected the weightier things for their people, food, clothing and shelter and medicines. Thus the people revolted against their masters in the Kremlin, Kremlin is the political seat of the USSR, just like Intramuros in Manila, Philippines. And their leaders were overthrown and the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics was dissolved into many other independent states and the remaining entity that inherited the empire were the Russian Republics.

The Russian Republics were then made into Federal States just like the United Stated of America. Russia became a State with a Federal form of Government. Russians became adherents of Orthodox Christianity once more. Religious tolerance was allowed in the country and many of its former atheistic believers became believers of the Church of our Lord. According to some analysts, Russia allowed the break-up of the USSR empire without firing a shot or bloodshed was because Russia got the lion's share of the resources that were there in the land area that were left to them by the USSR. They have all the resources like oil, gas, minerals, land for agriculture and many other stuff necessary for nation building, the other republics that broke up got nothing except for few gas and oil. However without strong political leader it was believed that the Russians might again squander their natural resources. Thus the name Vladimir V. Putin will emerge in their country and make Russia strong again.'

'Juan Miguel asked San Miguel: 'What you are telling me are already 21st century events. Are these events leading to the Armageddon?'

'Yes, San Miguel replied, and if you will still live during that time you will see the fulfillment of the prophecies. There are allied to Russia at that point in time. Russia is not as strong as the United States, the country north of Mexico, but it has enough nuclear weapons that can also obliterate the United States. Thus as much as possible the United States do not want an open war with the Russians as much as the Russians do not want an open hot war with the United States.'

When the USSR collapsed there were already five hundred million long firearms that the USSR has produced and were provided to the world at large causing casualties on many countries. They fomented revolutions and wars to the detriment of peace, together with the United States. Right now, those five hundred million long firearms are enough to build the army of Armageddon. Thus it was said in the book of Revelation:

THE 500 MILLION LONG FIREARMS. THE SWORD

W*hen he broke the second seal, I heard the second animal shout 'Come'. And out came another horse, bright red, and its rider was given him this duty: to take away peace from the earth and set people killing each other. **He was given a huge sword.***' – Revelation 6:3 – 4.

This red horse represents the revolutionaries and the communist and socialist countries of the world. They were carrying out revolutions worldwide to take away peace and establish a Godless society for the benefit of humanity with preponderance of putting mammon over God. They would want to seize power from elected people and establish governments that will provide materials things to the people and to exercise human power and human mind on the rest of the population. They want to control the people and let the leaders the only thinking persons in their system. All other peoples were there to be slaves whether they acknowledge it or not.

Let us then continue with what will happen in the future. Here again I will quote from the book of Revelation continue San Miguel:

THE FOURTH HORSE, DEATHLY PALE

W*hen he broke the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth animal shout, 'Come' immediately another horse appeared, deathly pale, and its rider was called Plague, and Hades followed at his heels.*

They were given authority over a quarter of the earth, to kill by the sword, by famine, by plague and wild beasts. – Revelation 6: 7 - 8

As you can see there will come a time when people will be living in many cities of the world. There will be population of ten million people per city or more than that up to twenty million people. With the number of people in the cities run to millions diseases will abound and rats carrying viruses and microbes and tamed yet sickly animals will roam their cities. There will breakdown of civil order and people will kill people. There will also be stealing, kidnapping and illegal drug addictions everywhere in their cities. Thus the pale horse will be carrying death on its heels.

People will be clamoring for more security from their governments and they will ask that they be secured from these calamities and plagues. And in return they will turn over their freedom from the authorities just to have the security they were asking. Then misunderstanding with many people of many cultures will happen thus they will also secure for them a One World Religion as written in the book of Revelation:

ONE WORLD RELIGION

***T**hen I saw the Lamb break one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four animals shout in a voice like thunder, 'Come'. Immediately a white horse appeared, and the rider on it was holding a bow; he was given the victor's crown and he went away, to go from victory to victory. – Revelation 6:1 – 2.*

The one with bow in his hand is a religious leader who will win over many people of every tongue and languages so that they will have one religion and do not quarrel with each other. Religion makes people friendly with each other. Seeing that people of the same religion are friendly with each other, other religions will then come to his banner and they will become one, religion of a bow as in rainbow, religion of different peoples and of different colors.

Then Juan Miguel got interested with the nations assembling north of Mexico. To which a prophecy of angels were also said. That it will conquer the whole world and establish the world as One World Empire, just like Alexander the Great of Greece. But will eventually relinquish it to a more powerful empire just like of Rome. Peoples will speak its language while the political system will be that of its inheritors.

'Can you tell me more about the United States of America, asked Juan Miguel.

The United States of America as they are called became strong because of the idealism of their founding fathers. They are happening now as we speak for their foundation is in 1776, a few years from now. They are of ideal kind of government of men through the agreements of the governed through their document called constitution.'

'And what is a constitution?' interrupted Juan Miguel.

‘It is a document, or agreement, wherein the people declare their inalienable rights while giving the powers to the government of the United States to a minimum, and the Government as enforcer of the will of the State.’

US became powerful too because the states in North America decided to join them and as a result they gained territories and populations. Gaining territories means more resources and having more people. Having more people means more industrious hands to make the place prosperous.

Then they had a so called Civil War, war of citizens of the same country, that made the victors more powerful and in effect they also created their army out of the militias that fought in the civil war. Eventually, being a continent with huge oceans to their west and to their east they created a Navy of which the world has seen to be the strongest so far up to the 21st century.

‘I see in the United States parades of those people and those big toys, what do you call them, I mean those big toys that float?’ Juan Miguel queried.

‘Ah. They are called mascots by the people, they have parades to commemorate happy things and events that previously happened to them,’ explained San Miguel. ‘That is culture and traditions.’

THE WEAPONRIES OF THE FUTURE

‘**T**he Russians also have their own parades in their country and they will be making it on the 9th of May every year. The difference is that the Russians are parading their advanced weaponries and many other armaments to showcase what they got and as a warning to their neighbors not to mess with them. Meaning, they should not pick a fight against the Russian forces.’

‘San Miguel continued, ‘these are happening while the lives of the people of Russia are not that high in the index of having materials things that are needed. The Russian even called on angels particularly me to protect their Motherland. As you can see the lines of soldiers with long firearms more advanced than the ones being used by the Spaniards of our time. But do you see the similarities?’

‘Yes, my dear San Miguel,’ replied Juan Miguel.

‘And the Large trucks, those long horse less carriages with green color with something on top is called trucks with intercontinental ballistic missiles,’ continued San Miguel.

‘What are Intercontinental Ballistic Missiles?’ San Miguel then has to explain things to Juan Miguel.

‘Intercontinental Ballistic Missiles are like javelins that can reach continents coming from another continent. Just like when you have your voyage from Philippines to Mexico. They do not use wind as power but the fire that you can see at the back of the Missiles. The one that is flying is the missiles and they carry the nuclear bomb that you have seen explode in Hiroshima and Nagasaki and Japan.’

‘So in that case, San Miguel ‘you mean that it can reach the place of target, like javelin, from that faraway place and destroy a city or a country,’ explained Juan Miguel.

‘You are right my friend and that is why it makes it very dangerous and evil. This was the weapon that our Lord was saying that the time will be shortened or there would be no flesh that will be saved.’

In their military parades, explained San Miguel, they will always show the advance weapons that they have because at some point in the 20th Century, Russia know that they are a bit weaker than the United States thus they have to showcase to their own people their armaments to show that they are in fact strong. This is also a rallying point of the people to respect the armed authorities and maintain stability in their country. Russia calls on my name thus they usually fond of the number 24. They even named a province of them out of respect for my angelic rank. And yes I protect them as I protect the people of God while the United States call on no one but, some, to the Lord Jesus Christ alone and His Father. The Russians of the 21st Century calls on the name of the Lord Jesus Christ too.’

‘There were many other armies of the same thinking as the Russians that they call on their military to parade their weaponries. The same conditions, they have to show that they are strong, to their constituents and their neighbors. The reason behind this, continued San Miguel, ‘is that they are actually weaker than the United States.’ China as example, they always commemorate their victories in war and they take it as a cover to showcase the new weaponries that they have. North Korea is also parading their weapons, ‘San Miguel explaining to Juan Miguel, ‘his future knowledge of the complex nations that will play the history of the future. Persia or Iran in the future will also become a big player in the history of the world. Iran now, is also parading their military prowess to impress their own people.’

Juan Miguel Asked San Miguel: ‘Are these showcasing of their military powers good or bad for the countries involved?’

‘In the perspectives of their angels they are good because the people of these countries are becoming subservient to their military rulers and when military rulers have the ascendancy, they then develop the military more than their other industries. And that has an effect to people allowing their soldiers take the lion’s share of the resources of the nations to be given to their military without complaint or objections. Thus their military will become stronger and stronger. And that parading of forces will eventually signal to each other countries that are involved that they are in fact strong. Their forces become snappy,’ this according to San Miguel.

'For those that do not parade their forces eventually become degenerate and they practice or training only in groups and they do not have the group thinking of being one as military. They do not see themselves as strong and as one. That is the reason that they operate in small areas only and away from the traditional invasion style of countries and not imposing their hegemony as a result. Although they have the elements of secrecy which is very much needed too in military,' continued San Miguel.

'For you, my dear San Miguel, is it necessary to have these military parades?' Juan Miguel asked to San Miguel.

'For me it is. As you know I am the leader of the all of angels in heaven when we go into battle. To exercise your battle capabilities, discipline will make you stronger, and to project power in military terms is also good in confidence building.'

San Miguel told Juan Miguel that he will show more of the weapons that the humans are using in the 20th and 21st centuries.

'So you see those metal ships that you have been seeing. Those are what people call destroyers and the missiles that you see coming out from them are called cruise missiles. They have far away targets yet they are able to reach their targets and hit them with the conventional bombs.'

Juan Miguel interrupted. 'What is conventional bombs.

'These are the bombs that have the same power just like your cannons in the forts in contrast to the bombs with nuclear bombs. The cruise missiles destroy only their small intended targets. And how they are being controlled unlike the javelins. Humans were able to invent the satellites.'

'Satellites. What are satellites?'

'Satellites are like the moon that has control over other inventions of the humans. It can make the cruise missiles go where they want it to go thus they can destroy targets at long distances.'

'Then San Miguel showed him a submarine firing cruise missiles once more. So Juan Miguel asked the Archangel, why is it that whales blew cruise missiles too?'

San Miguel told him that it was not whale but submarine, another invention of human beings that can also fire cruise missiles below the sea. 'There seemed to be too much inventions human have when it comes to the last days. They are dreading the last days since they can destroy much of the things that went against their way. 'But, said San Miguel, the forces that will make much more of the Armageddon are the horse less chariots and the locusts. People call them tanks and helicopters. And these tanks and helicopters will make or break the invasion of the prophesied people.'

'But then how really will the Armageddon will come in detail. You have shown that us in passing in the last time that we were here. But this time he will show how it will fulfill those that are written in vivid description,' remembered Juan Miguel.

San Miguel at once brought Juan Miguel to their walls of visions. In the walls there San Miguel explained that Economic constraints might be the one that will compel China to march to Megiddo, they also learn of the existence of the serpent seed in the flesh. They will train the armies of China and they will create up to one hundred million people to be able fulfill their agreement with the other nations that are into sending their contingents too. Persia who became Iran will be sending their own contingent in millions too. Russia will also be sending thousands and most of the armaments that will be used in the war on the side of those who will fulfill the Armageddon will come from Russia.

They will have surface to air missiles, fighter jets with air-to-air missiles, destroyer ships and cruise missiles, long range bombers, tanks and artillery missiles and aircraft carriers. They also have fighter jets that are very efficient in bombing their targets. And lastly they have an overwhelming quantity of armies at their bidding.

Though Israel is prepared she is still in quandary as to what is happening in her neighborhood. The Arabs are massing forces against her so does the Iranians and her allies. That will be their condition before the Armageddon.

As Juan Miguel was looking on the wall, he saw how the armies of the beast were amassing near Jezreel valley in Israel. Contingent by contingent the armies are coming to the place. They all hold long firearms and full of ammunitions in their bodies ready for battle.

CHAPTER XXVIII

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA YEAR 2060 A.D.

In the meantime, in North America, the United States, the major ally that Israel has is experiencing economic hardships. She is now into forty trillion dollar debt and China and all of Asia, including Latin America and Europe are doing economic embargo on her. The Commonwealth nations are also experiencing economic hardships, only Australia, New Zealand and Canada are in good economic conditions because of their natural resources. Thus the United States is not in a position to help Israel at this time. But Europe, being a rich continent offered something to the United States so that she can help Israel in her quandary. Germany proposed that the Fatherland would finance the defence of Israel through the armaments of the United States.

The Jews of the United States proposed that both their monies and of the Germans be used for the defence of Israel. The Fundamentalist Christians believe that the Lord Jesus Christ will come at the appointed time before the annihilation of the people of Israel. The Jews being non-believers are pessimistic and they would rather resort to the strength of the armaments of the United States, Europe and Israel. The strength and effectiveness of the United States' armaments might not be enough in dealing with these two hundred million strong army of the beast.

Juan Miguel asked San Miguel if the Lord Jesus Christ will come in that battle. The answer was, do not know. Only the Father knows. There have lots of Armageddons that happened in that place and the Lord Jesus Christ did not descend only to interfere in the affairs of men. But the Spirit certainly always takes sides in the affairs of men. For example, in World War I and World War II, the Spirit of the Lord took side in favor of the Russians by sending plagues and diseases to the enemies.

But this time, time is of the essence, the Chinese are now training their troops in their country and readying to march to Megiddo, North Korea is doing the same. Indonesia will be sending troops through their ships so does Malaysia, Myanmar and Thailand and many other ASEAN countries. Pakistan is also sending troops and Afghanistan, Turkmenistan and all the other Central Asian Republics except Armenia. The presidents of each country are now on television on earth saying death to Israel.

AT A BOARD ROOM IN THE WORLD TRADE CENTER IN NEW YORK CITY.

Representative of the Pope, 'We have to immediately decide on how much money does the United States will be needing so that their armaments will fly, run and the ships will move or Israel will be annihilated in three weeks the most. We can deposit gold bars to United States Federal Reserves.'

The German Representative then continued the discussion by saying that they can provide up to twenty trillion Euro loans and a help to lease some of their bases in Germany for refueling, hospital and combat operations.

The Vatican, according to the representative of the Pope is also amenable to ten trillion Euros help for the United States all in the form of loans, financially bonded and the transfer of gold bars might commence immediately to the United States Federal Reserves.

The United States of America cannot accept these conditions. The help should not be in the form of loans since the reason is that they are here for a just cause of helping a country or a nation to survive a possible genocide. The neighbors of Israel have no other purpose but to kill the Jews and that all there is to it.

‘Besides if the United States will it, the US State Secretary said: ‘We can easily nuke these unfriendly neighbors and all these shit will stop. We still have that capability.’

US State Secretary Venus Gates talking to the Jews: ‘How much are you willing to provide to finance the operations in this prophesied Armageddon? Are you not interested at all and would just consider nuke strike to these neighbors of yours. Remember, Egypt is your friend now and Jordan as well. You have peace accords with them. I mean Israel has peace accord with them.’

The representatives of the Jews discussed it among themselves then they finally decided. ‘We will provide twenty trillion US Dollars not in the form of loans but as expenditures for the operations and help to the economy.’

In the meantime in Heaven, Juan Miguel told San Miguel that, ‘it is amazing that all the conversations on earth are recorded here in heaven. That none happen without heaven knowing it.’ The Vatican Secrets were also not secrets in heaven. For example, their many hospitals, parochial schools, publishing houses and universities are all recorded in heaven aside from the number of Churches in each Catholic country.

San Miguel said: ‘If you want classified information, you should rather go to heaven and you will learn the real history of the people of the earth and other people on other earths. None escape our notice here. Besides that one you are seeing and listening is in 2060 and you are only in 1760. Imagine that in your mind.

Those who have a talk in New York, the Jews, then suddenly told their counterparts that it is about time to tell the President of the United States of what they have agreed. The US Secretary of State agreed. Then the US Secretary of State went out of the room and took her jet going to Washington D.C., Virginia to relay the message on what had transpired in the conversation in one of the secret location in New York. The US Secretary of State believes that the additional fifty trillion dollars would be enough to keep their economy humming in the next one hundred years or so. To its optimum capacity and that the innovations that they put will be in place with such amount of money and at the same time

they can finance a prolonged war with the Asian countries. The only problem that they have is that Russia is now siding with the Asians. Without Russian armaments the war will not commence. This is really up to the Russian leader because the Chinese knew that without the Russians they too cannot go to war up to the area of the Israelis. Sure China is very strong but only within her reach, North and South Korean war can be started, and they can invade the Philippines with US Military token resistance. They can even reach as far as Australia and the whole of South East Asia. To their north they can also run a campaign of war in the Central Asia but that would infuriate these countries who for more than 50 years now have been having friendly relations with China. Besides, if China went to Central Asia uninvited then they will risk a war with Russia. So it is a good thing that they rather do the Armageddon.

For China, they have a question of Japan. For sure she would not want to give the Philippines to just anybody. It has been hundred years since the time that Japan has been trying to get the Philippines in her orbit, although surreptitiously. Though Japan is not that big in terms of its population, technologically they are still a power to reckon with, Japan is still a very strong power.

To the United States the monies that will be provided to them will be used for the rebuilding of the economy that was destroyed in fierce competition with China and India, Japan, Germany and the rest of Latin America and Asia. The Commonwealth of Nations helping the United States was not enough to make the economy of the United States strong again. Their economic demands are not sufficient for the efficiency that the advance technologies of the United States require. Whole of the world should be her market this time and she can only expedite that if the war commences and that she reach all areas of the world without permission.

But in the meantime the focus is on the real estate of the world. We will know who will rent to whom after the war.

'First I would like to know the budgeting of the monies that we will have. By the way, are we to issue bonds for these loans?' President Johnson Cummins asked his Secretary of State Venus Gates.

'Yes, Mr. President, we will be issuing bonds for these monies. I suggest that the money of the Jews should also be given bonds so that it will be fair for all those that provided the monies.

'Is our cause just, my dear Secretary of State? the President asked once more.

'Certainly Sir. It is also about the real estate of the world. It will be the children of the Woman versus the seed of the serpent for this real estate,' quote the Secretary of State Venus Gates.

'By the way, where is the Secretary of Defense, Michael Hancock,' inquired the President.

The attendants of the President of the United States then called on the Secretary of Defense. And when he arrived at the Oval Office the President told him about the monies, in form of gold deposits, that will be provided by the Vatican, European Union in Euro cash and Jews in US Dollars for the defense of Israel and the many other democratic nations in the world.

Michael Hancock is the Defense Secretary of the United States. He is at age fifty and still good looking and single, stands about six feet four inches tall with black wavy hair.

‘Where should we put the money,’ Asked the President to the Secretary of Defense, ‘I mean for your defense industry? I did not realize that the Vatican has so much wealth at her disposal, where do they got such amount?’

But he also answered his question: ‘Yeah, I forgot that She is a worldwide Church and she has parochial schools, publishing houses and hospitals and many other financial undertakings. This Jesus Christ is truly better than all of us.

Yes, Mike, kindly give me your answer.’

The Secretary of Defense then told him that: ‘The planners would want to build another twenty of the B2 Spirit 2 bombers and a few other stealth bombers. We will also build another six aircraft carriers to be able to defend the Philippines, this is the price that China has been asking Russia since the year 2020. But I suggested that we double the long-range bombers.

The President interrupted the Secretary of Defense: ‘Aside from Israel, the Philippines, the Pope wants her protected, could be provided with antimissiles and antiaircraft batteries and aircrafts for defence. For sure the Filipino Pilots can fly our fighter jets too. They have one of the best computer players in world. I do not think that will be a problem for them. Why did not we do it?’

‘It was the policies of the previous administrations Sir. Besides, we have to remember, Sir, that the Chinese are well entrenched in the Philippines. They have intermarried with the local people for hundreds of years now and that is one of their leveraged to work on. The only way to counter that is to work with the Spaniards and their remnants in the Philippines. They have still a sizable population loyal to them. The pure Filipinos do not like the prideful Chinese in the Philippines. If they will have their way they would have built boats to return these Chinese to China,’ explained the Secretary of Defense with a grin on his face.

The president continued: ‘And what other part of the defence industries would you want the money to go?’

Michael Hancock said, that in the production of airlift aircrafts, the modern artillery missiles and some modern tanks and land transportation vehicles. These are needed once the war started and if we have won.

Then the President of the United States of America called on for a meeting with his cabinet members.

‘Guys I called you here because as we know the Shanghai Cooperation Organization [SCO] is now planning to invade the land of Israel and will probably exterminate the Jews. With a use of nuclear bombs the Israelis can defend themselves but what then after using the dirty bombs? Their lands will be unusable for the next twenty thousand years. That will not be acceptable to sane Israelis. They might as well return as wandering Jews than destroy their Holy Land.

China has billions of people and India too, but India is neutral in this conflict.

‘What about the Catholics?’ Inquired the Secretary of Defense. ‘The Pope has billions people loyal to him besides they have had numbers of crusades against the Muslims before. Can they not participate in this conflict once more?’

‘The President answered, ‘the Catholics have learned their lessons they will not risk their people besides they provided us with ten trillion Euros in the form of gold deposit to prosecute the war with an understanding that the Philippines will be defended against pagan China.

‘But, the Secretary of State interrupted, ‘that there is an understanding between the Chinese and the Bureaucrats in Vatican that each will not interfere in its own sphere of affairs. Thus the Vatican usually says that Beijing is being polite with them, I mean to the Catholics. I would just like to express that concordance with the Vatican and Beijing.’

The President answered: ‘And why would the Vatican buy ten trillion Euro bonds from us if they are not siding with the United States this time?’

‘You know the reason now?’ Said the Secretary of State. ‘That the greed of the Chinese knows no bounds. They would want to be the ruling class in the Philippines and make the Filipinos their slaves. Ah, typical of the angelic seed, many of our intelligence units in that country said that local products, like cooking oil and other consumer goods are imported, the traditional coconut oils are no longer in the shelves of the Chinese stores. Thus the coconut farmers of the Philippines are very much affected.’

‘The Vatican is concerned with the economy of the Philippines at this time,’ uttered the Economic Secretary of the United States.

Mr. President continued the Secretary of Defense and the Economic Secretary: ‘We also need to secure the supply lines that we have, from Latin America, South Africa and

Australia. Canada and other European countries are secure unless Russia decides to invade them.'

'Russia will not risk a war in Europe because as we know NATO remains strong,' said the President.

CHAPTER XXIX

BAKU AZERBAIJAN 11:00 P.M. LOCAL TIME.

In Baku, Azerbaijan the leaders of the Shanghai Cooperation Organization [SCO] are also having a meeting.

The leader from China speaking to the group: 'It is about time that we wrestle the leadership of the world from the Caucasians and have it for us. We will have the world as our heritage and then the Jews and the Americans, the Germans and all the Europeans will rent from us.' 'We have to win this battle for the world. "As we know the meek shall inherit the earth."

The Russian President then interrupted, 'How many modern tanks do you need and the long range bombers, the fighter jets and the artilleries and the consumables?

'The Chinese leader said that there will be lots of it since the war will not be contained in Jezreel valley alone but on the entire world. Besides, China wants the Philippines and for sure the United States will provide stiff resistance and the Filipinos will be fighting guerilla warfare because just like in the World War Two, USA will leave the Philippines for a while and return as liberators.'

Then the Chinese leader raised the concern of securing their supply lines for raw materials. He looked at the Russian leader and waited for a reply. The Russian leader said, 'Do not look at us, we can defend our supply lines. Why do not you continue securing your supply lines in Latin America, the Middle East and Africa? For us we can handle what we have and defend our own supply lines. Don't worry the gas and oil will continue to flow to your huge pipes.'

By the way, said the Chinese leader, 'How many are your contingents in this battle of the Armageddon? The Chinese proudly said that they will be sending one hundred million strong army to finally destroy these arrogant people, the Jews and the Caucasians. And Russia, how many will she send to Jezreel valley?

'We will be sending you weapons and one hundred thousand of our soldiers some mounted on horses.'

'What is that contingent?' Said the Chinese condescendingly.

'Look Mr. Premier, if we send all our armed forces we will be risking our western borders to the attacks of NATO. And we cannot afford to have that to happen. As you can see, Germany is strong now, and none can prevent the fatherland from invading any country in Europe even France, which is a nuclear country. Germany is not saying openly

but she is a nuclear power. As you know Ukraine is a hostile country to us, and the Ukrainians are in our immediate western border.

The other leaders of the Shanghai Cooperation Organization said that they will compensate to make sure that the two hundred million strong armies are achieved. No less.

Then the President of Iran said that they will send five million contingent.

Then the leader of Russia expressed to them their conversation with the leaders of the United States as regards the use of nuclear weapons. 'As you know friends, that with the use of nuclear weapons, even if we win, the real estate that we are fighting about will be of no use to us in the next twenty thousand years. And that means we will also be annihilated in the process and also with untold sufferings that we will cause to the people of the earth. It has therefore been decided by us and the leadership of the United States and NATO not to use nuclear weapons. All that will be used in this war are conventional weapons. To which I think is in our advantage simply because of our superiority in numbers.'

'The armaments of the Caucasians are now almost obsolete,' said the Chinese Premier, 'Although we still would like to use the Russian made weapons we know that China has superior firepower now. Remember that the gunpowder was invented in China. Besides, what is that agreement all about?'

'Mr. Premier you know that we have to rule the world together with the other countries as our vassal states what world will you rule then? What about the Indians and Japanese on our western and eastern borders? Japan has not said what position she is and for sure she will not give up the Philippines. She has so much investments in that island nation.'

'Japan has been our enemies since the time that China and Japan met. Though they copied some of their civilization from us but for sure she would not want to be under our leadership. The rock that we have been fighting in the east China sea is big deal for both of us. None for sure will give up on that. Japan has several aircraft carriers and they have Main Battle Tanks that can really destroy war materiel.'

The Iranian President then interrupted the conversation of the Russian leader and the Chinese leader. 'As you know, said he, 'it has been the eternal mission of the leaders of Iran to conquer and subjugate the Zionist people. The Israelis are our mortal enemies. Their beliefs are abomination and they are arrogant people. They think that they are the only people in the Middle East that have the right to live. They want us to relegate into second citizen status and become subservient to them. As leader of the Muslim World we cannot allow that. We are close to two billion people and they are merely one hundred million people what are they to us if we finally decide to invade them?'

The Russian leader knew that it was jealousy that prompt the Muslim people to hate the Jews, their own kin. The Russian leader has none of these religious tones of the Muslims but he also has religious tones of their own. That they would want to fulfill the prophecies

as they were written in the Holy Scriptures of the Christians. Russia being a Christian country would want to find out the truth about the prophecies. The Jews are to blame in making their economic hardships by lowering the prices of the oil producers thus the marketers are having the upper hand to which the Jews are paramount investors.

There were many other reasons that the Jews were to blame yet they have not the hard evidence or actual account of the doubts that they have. It was just a convenient way of blaming the Jews every time there were social unrests in their countries and that make the world blind to the many good things that the Jews have done.

‘Why are the Jews being hated,’ asked Juan Miguel while watching them from heaven, ‘by many people if not all the people of the world.’

San Miguel replied that, ‘since time immemorial the Jews have been fighting the serpent seed and that they are aware of that. Remember the Genesis 3:15? And because of it, the world hated them. First, the Philistines, second, the other Canaanites in the land that Yahweh promised them. The difficulty with this land was that there were so many inhabitants that have already been settling there when Yahweh gave it to them. But they must uproot the paganisms that were in there so they have to fight for the land and make it a land of Monotheism.’

‘The Israelites of that time were not very strong because they were few except during the time of King David and his son Solomon,’ continued San Miguel. Then finally the ten tribes of Israel left the other two tribes thus they become weaker and weaker the more. Now they were scattered abroad in the land of Greece, Rome and many other lands in Europe. Since they are not Christians and that Europe is a Christian continent they are prone to abuse and persecution.

But since it was said by the Lord in the Holy Scriptures during His trial:

When Pilate heard them say this his fears increased. Re-entering the Praetorium, he said to Jesus, ‘Where do you come from? But Jesus made no answer. Pilate then said to him, ‘Are you refusing to speak to me? Surely you know I have power to release you and I have power to crucify you?’ You would have no power over me’ replied Jesus ‘if it had not been given to you from above; **that is why the one who handed me over to you has the greater guilt.**’ – John 19: 8 – 11.

That is why the Christians of lower learning blamed the Jews for the death of Jesus. The death that was prophesied, but since it was prophesied why complain? The scriptures wrote that it must happen.

Then the leader of Iran gestured to the leader of China that they must talk together and find out what Russia was all about.

Why it was sending so small a contingent in uprooting the Jews from Israel?

Chinese Premier answered it for the Russians, 'You know that the Russians are Christians.'

'The Iranian leader then interrupted, 'Then it means they hate the Jews and should be glad to see the Jews leave the place of Israel and give it to the Arabs like the Palestinians and the Lebanese and the other Arab people in the area?'

'But they also see the Muslims as wild and untamed people that cannot be governed,' explained the Chinese Premier. 'Only China is able to deal with you in delicate manner and here is your Prophecy:

Then the angel of Yahweh said to her [Hagar]:

*'Now you have conceived, and you will bear a son,
and you shall name him Ishmael,
for Yahweh has heard your cries of distress.*

***A wild-ass of a man he will be,
Against every man, and every man against him
setting himself to defy all his brothers. – Genesis 16: 11 -12***

'Thus as you know, said the Premier, 'We have the red and green alliance since the 1960's. That's a hundred years of alliance. There are lots of us that became prosperous in the process and at the same time we became very strong as an alliance of close to four billion people.'

The Iranian leader felt that the Russian leader has some reservations with regard to their would be undertaking. However, they also knew that the Russian leader has this undertaking inherited from the defunct USSR, the Godless Empire that once rule almost more than half of the world.

'Could this be his personal belief with regard to Prophet Jesus Christ?' Silently told the Iranian leader to himself. Since Muslims believe in Jesus Christ as a great prophet and a very good moral teacher.

'My dear Russian President, you know that Christians and Muslim do not like the Jews and we all want to see the Zionist out of Palestine – Palestine, being the term referred to the land occupied by the Jews as it was called by the Muslims.'

'Well, my dear Iranian President, not all Christians hate the Zionist Jews. As you can see the Protestant Christians would want to defend the Jews and foremost of them are the Americans. Americans on their side is big problem for us. In fact if I were not to side with you, China and Iran would be having difficulty engaging war with the United States,' explained the Russian President to the Iranian President.

'By the way, can you say hi to the Ayatollahs, they bring this Armageddon to the people of the world. Up to this time, Iran and Saudi are embroiled in catastrophe in Yemen.'

‘Oh. Yes, of course we would want to have our 12th Imam to return as well.’ We are people of religion and in this case we are willing to die for it. We are Aryans and you know that. We have to unite and stop this infection of the world of the Jews.’

The Russian President then decided to know who will put the bill for the restoration of the Russian Defence industries. Certainly they must be upgraded before we can compete with the NATO on at par basis.

The Chinese Premier raised his hand and told them, ‘We will be putting 40 trillion Yuan plus thousands of technicians but you must assure us of our wheat, minerals, oil and gas supply.’

Then the Iranian told them that, ‘they can now provide one hundred billion tons of oil for the prosecution of the war provided the Russians supply the necessary surface to air missiles to protect the oil depots, oil refineries and oil production areas and most importantly the nuclear sites. We cannot allow the Israelis to bomb these vital installations. Then to counter the possible US aggression in these areas we would want to have your fighter jets and an aircraft carrier to be able to counter the possible deployment of naval assets of the United States in our area.’

‘But the best war materiel that can be used in Armageddon are the fielding of air assets, the bombers. Remember, one helicopter is equivalent to twenty tanks,’ said the Russian President.

‘We have four of that helicopter carriers each can carry twenty helicopters each so that would be equivalent of eighty tanks and we are building four more. And if china would want to have their own they can order from us,’ shared the Russian President.

‘China said it is ordering ten of such kind of helicopter carriers to solidify its hold onto the Philippines and the South East Asia and possibly include Australia in her orbit. And the cost is at two billion dollars each,’ continued the Russian President.

The Chinese Premier said that ‘Japan not being here means she is siding with the allied forces. Or we just have to be wary said the Chinese Premier. ‘Only after the hostilities have begun that we will know who is for us and who is against us.’

North Korea who was also present at the meeting said that they will manufacture ten million assorted conventional missiles and the four thousand nuclear capable missiles. They will also mass an at least ten million strong army to support the two hundred million armies that the Chinese would want to achieve. According to North Korea they must convince India to join the Armageddon to augment their force and take off the yoke of the western people from their shoulders. It is about time that we make our chance happen in this 21st century. In fact we are nearing the 22nd century, said the Dear Leader of the North

Korea, Kim Jong Lee. It is about time, it is about time. He repeatedly said to the leaders in attendance.

The leader of the Russian Federation then continued his statements with regard to the requirement of the countries that are in there. 'How many tanks does the People's Republic of China need?' The answer was ten thousand tanks. Helicopters? Five thousand helicopters and additional forty helicopter carriers, how many Armored Personnel Carriers? Forty thousand. And the long and short firearms? Three hundred millions both for a total of six hundred million. 'Then the ammunitions?' For the firearms two hundred billion for the missiles we need one hundred million of each assorted, ordered the Chinese Premier. After the war we will be the strongest if war materiel remained intact.

'In that case we have to build plants in China and in Iran to be able to satisfy the requirements,' explained the President of Russia.

China said in return, 'Indonesia and Malaysia are offering their places to have such plants. And remember, Manila would be our vassal country after this war. We will have her as our price,' said the Chinese Premier happily expressing his thoughts.

Then the group decided to adjourned the meeting and go home and prepare for the actual battle that will happen at Megiddo. With these the leaders rode their own airplanes going to their respective countries.

As the Russian President was flying home, inside his mind, he was contemplating if such undertaking worth the taking; such cursed real estate? They have too much why risk for more. But China and Iran are insistent. Irony, he said to himself. Philippines is the real price that the Chinese wants and the South East Asia but why Israel as the battle ground while Iran's reasons are religious in nature. He was thinking much this time. Could this be the Aryans versus the Jews. Real Aryans are in fact not hostile people but peaceful people and Aryans simply means:

'The Aryan word is applicable to persons who know the value of life and have a civilization based on spiritual realization. – Conversations on Bhagavad-gita.

I cannot imagine the hate of the Iranians against the Jews. 'Could this be the hate that the former colonies are bringing back to the colonizers but never was the Persians under the Jews. In fact it was the other way around. They have had enough and they want to settle it at Megiddo. The Jews are unlucky this time since their place is the chosen one to host the incoming cataclysmic event. Russia should be thinking this much over and over because Germany now is on the side of NATO and Germany as an enemy is formidable. Although according to their intelligence sources, Germany does not wish to be involved in a hot war again. Instead they would want to finance the US to prosecute the war for the Jews. What if we allowed both the Chinese and the United States to settle their differences at Megiddo, only the two of them? That would mean that if China won then we

would have no share in their victory and we would be relegated to an unknown status. The Chinese are proud people and they do not want to be relegated to secondary status, instead they want to be the leader that is why they eager this battle to happen.

Again the Russian President continues to contemplate the matters in his mind. His people are Christians and in that case they also believe about the Jews, that the Lord Jesus Christ was a Jew. Priest in their country said that the Christians are the Jews of fulfillment, meaning the Jews who already have the Messiah. Unlike the Jews of today who are still in anticipation. Will the Lord Jesus Christ come before or after the war? Nobody knows, that was also the question of Christian leaders before and after the two world wars that preceded this one. Russia cannot back track into this agreement with the Asians, we have to do it or we will forever be subservient to the whims of the Caucasian people. When he arrived in Moscow he will convene a cabinet meeting and for sure they will be against this move. But they already have talked about it before and this will merely be a reiteration. It will now be about the implementations of what have been talked before, operational details and tactical actions. The Grand plan is already being enforced.

The Russian President then convened his Cabinet. He called on first to his Prime Minister and the Head of Duma.

‘Welcome back Mr. President,’ Sergey Alkanoff said to their President Anatoliy Kamenov. ‘I am happy you arrive safe after that dangerous meeting.’

‘Yes, indeed, it was a very dangerous meeting that we had. SCO is metamorphosing into something that the members have no control. It came to have its own mind now and we are the subservient followers. Even China cannot control what it is doing. If you will get me on this, there is a higher power that control SCO now.’

The Prime Minister of Russia then inquired about the metamorphosing SCO. ‘What is that? The Law of Mastermind of Napoleon Hill?’ [The Law of Mastermind says that if two or more people gather they create another (sometimes temporary) mind.]

‘It seemed my dear Prime Minister,’ said the President of Russia. ‘Even in the Holy Scriptures it was written that:

I tell you most solemnly once again, if two of you on earth agree to ask anything at all, it will be granted to you by my Father in heaven. For where two or three meet in my name, I shall be there with them.’ –
Matthew 18:19 – 20.

You know Sergey, I should not be saying these things. Although we are not as secular as the United States, matters like these should be sole responsibility of religion. I do not want to brag my religion to the world, in our positions we should be reserved about it. The bad thing with the mastermind of Napoleon Hill is that we do not know if the mastermind is good or bad. But as of now none can control this mastermind of the SCO. Be

wary of it Mr. Prime Minister, there will be times when you will be attending its meetings. Try to observe the mastermind that I have told you.'

The President then turns his focus on the leader of Duma. 'Mr. President, we are consciously doing this Armageddon and I do not think that we can still retreat from this undertaking. China has committed so much resources to it, manpower and money. Do you think we should back out from this nonsense?'

The Head of Duma then replied that they should look to what was written in the Holy Scriptures. 'What is written my dear President?'

'Maybe you can recite it for me Mr. dear President of Duma:

THE 16:16

T*he sixth angel emptied his bowl over the great river Euphrates; all the water dried up so that a way was made for the **kings of the East** to come in. Then from the jaws of dragon and beast and false prophet I saw three foul spirits come; they looked like frogs and in fact were demon spirits, able to work miracles, going out to all the kings of the world to call them together for the war of the Great Day of God the Almighty – This is how it will be: I shall come like a thief. Happy is the man who has stayed awake and not taken off his clothes so that he does not go out naked and expose his shame. – **They called the kings together at the place called, in Hebrew, Armageddon.** – Revelation 16:12 - 16*

'Why is it like that?' We are conscious of fulfilling the deaths of our soldiers,' asked the President of Russia. 'But I do feel that we will be more blessed after this Armageddon than those that did not participate. At least we are at the hands of God fulfilling His prophecies, unlike the other peoples who remain spectators and do not care about the words of God.'

Although I have a question, is there any other way out of this by not going into war? It then seemed that there will only be lull in conflicts then another major event will happen, in this case a possible war. Peace is intermittent unlike in Roman times.'

'Sergey, I would like to ask if where are the other precision products coming from?'

Sergey Alkanoff then answered, 'they come from Japan but we reverse engineered all of them so that we will not be beholden to the supply availability especially from Japan.'

'In that case let the production then begin,' said the President of Russia.

In no time then the Russian defence industries started to manufacture armaments and they also started to produce manufacturing plants to be put in China, North Korea, Indonesia, Malaysia and Iran. There were many other countries that want to have manufacturing base for the armaments to be built but Russia and China can only

accommodate much. There have been the so called 3D printing and they already included them in their manufacturing process and yet still the demand was so much. Some Muslim countries then requested that some short and long firearms be built in their countries to which the Russian and the Chinese agreed. They know they will be in violation of the arms non-proliferation treaty, but who cares at this time?

Juan Miguel could not believe his eyes that the events of the 21st century are unfolding before his very eyes.

‘To which side are you my Prince San Miguel?’

‘I cannot tell you at this time because as always we are in neither side for now. Although the Angel of Persia is always loyal to them, I mean to the Persians. They have perfected the communication between his people and him thus they can easily recognize it when they will have a loss of life or when they will be winning in a skirmish.’

But San Miguel told Juan Miguel that he is actually the protector of the people of God that at the end of this he will play in the sides of the Israelis just like the old times.

‘But what about us the Catholics will we be as one religion in this?’

The representative of the Pope wants the Protestants to win but he did not commit the Catholics in battle. He let the monies of the Catholics work for them,’ San Miguel observed in the Battle Plan of the Pope.

‘In which case, whoever wins the Catholic countries or your whole populations will be relegated to secondary status, meaning you cannot decide the history of nations,’ replied San Miguel to Juan Miguel.

‘But you are our patron and in that case you also decide the fate of nations, do not you?’ Juan Miguel asked to San Miguel.

‘Yes, I do influence the history of nations but in all of this it is the Lord God that is in full control and decider of all things. Besides, your Pope would only want what are good for his flock. ***God ratifies what Our Lord Jesus Christ’s priests do on earth,***’ shared San Miguel to Juan Miguel. ‘Not all people have the privilege of knowing that truth. ***That is one of the secrets of the keys of the kingdom of heaven.***’

‘The Guitara de San Miguel what would be its role in this end time? Asked Juan Miguel.

‘There will be role for the Guitara de San Miguel in this end time but as of the moment I cannot divulge to you all, just one, the softening of human hearts. The music that will come from the guitar can soften the hearts of humans and be like loving people. That is why the Lord God has said that

“I will make your hearts of stones into a heart of flesh.” And I think that would be the greatest achievement that music of that guitar can make, to soften the hearts of men. People will become compassionate and they will not get angry to their neighbors anymore and all will have good interpersonal relationships. Jews will no longer oppress the people of Palestine, the Jews will no longer be oppressed by the people of the world and many other such kind of changes in human heart,’ San Miguel explained to Juan Miguel.

‘Human heart is sick and it needs healing. Healing that is heavenly in origin. Coming from the Lord Jesus Christ Himself. But that does not mean that all the hearts of the people will be touched by the hands of the Lord. He can also say to us angels go and heal this person particularly to San Rafael who is the angel of healing. He can pluck the Guitara de San Miguel and see what healing it will bring to the people who are sick both in mind, soul and body.’

‘Right now I know that your heart is hurt,’ said San Miguel to Juan Miguel, ‘I know that Selena chose Juancho over you as regards to who will be her partner in her lifetime. I know that hurts and the reason that you accepted it readily is that Juancho is your twin brother and best friend.’

‘You are right there, my dear archangel San Miguel!’

‘But no worry,’ Said the archangel, ‘Marriages are made in heaven. Cupid has no match with me when it comes to pairing people for marriages.’ Continued San Miguel. ‘Remember Mr. Caballero? He has a daughter somewhere in Spain who studied there and she is coming back to the Philippines via Mexico. She is also at your age and if you are amenable I can fly you down to Mexico and have Father Conrado Abellar introduce you to her.’

Juan Miguel replied that it is not yet in his mind but the Armageddon.

‘There will be preparation for that and I think it will still take twenty years for the opposing forces to be strong. The bonds that were bought from the United States will also take effect five to ten years from now. Their economy will be back on track and they will be producing superior armaments at great costs. But the world economy will be close to them still except for some that has been made open by their former President Barack Obama in the early years of the 21st century,’ explained San Miguel. ‘Thus war for the meantime is a necessity for the world so that all will become one. It is just a matter of who will side to whom. Your country will not be siding with the Asians but will try to remain neutral but she cannot be neutral because she is in alliance with the English Speaking countries. That means she will be fighting on the side of the United States while the enemies of United States will be placated by the Pope to spare the Philippines. China on the other hand will not listen to the Pope but instead will send invading forces to South Central Luzon and have that part of the Philippines as its initial territory. That landing of the Chinese on the South Central Luzon will not be taken lightly by the United States. Instead they will react aggressively and from the part of Luzon, that is called Subic, the United States will give a counter attack together with the Filipino people to repel the invaders,’ San Miguel then

stopped his explanations of events to Juan Miguel. 'Those were just some of what will happen in the future when Armageddon arrives. Actually it is not confined to Israel but the whole world will be involved in the conflagration.

CHAPTER XXX

THE UNITED STATES AGAIN

In the United States their President was moving around the country inspecting the factories that were being built and the other ones that were being upgraded. Then he goes to the assembly plants for their Abrams XV tanks. The tanks are now being assembled ready for battle in just five hours lead time. This will be an advantage for them since the battle will be with the preponderance of tanks.

'Mike, does the navy have enough ships to transport these types of tanks to the Middle East?' The President asked to his Defense Secretary.

'Yes, Mr. President. The fact is that ten thousand tanks have already been in the Middle East through the Egyptian, Jordanian, Kuwaiti and Saudi Arabian buying covers. I do not know how the Russians can match up with that. There are also Leopard 24 tanks that come from Germany and I think the numbers are at four thousand pieces. '

So the roads that the Chinese are building are not enough for the oceans that we cross only to deliver these massive numbers of tanks and tank ammunitions,' inquired the President.

'My dear President, Missiles are the name of the game now. That is why our new tanks have missiles embedded and no longer the conventional firepower unlike 20 years before. Even our artilleries are missile based,' explained the Defense Secretary.

'What about the helicopters how many have we in the Middle East? Asked the President.

'We have three thousand helicopters in Israel, all assorted, meaning we have for attack, airlift and other transport. All are under the custody of the Israeli Defence Force [IDF]. There are also two helicopter carriers in the Mediterranean together with our 9th fleet of aircraft carriers and destroyers,' reported Defense Secretary Michael Hancock.

'We are very much ready now my dear President only that we cannot start the war. We are awaiting the Chinese or the Iranians to do that for us,' explained the Defense Secretary.

'What about the Russians and the Chinese what do they have?' The US President inquiring to his Defense Secretary.

'They are almost at par with us. But the Russians are ahead in numbers when it comes to helicopter carriers. They have four in the black sea and they are building four

more. But their advantage in helicopter carriers is compensated by lack of aircraft carrier support. In spite of having their helicopter carriers being fitted with defence mechanisms that can bring down jets and missiles. In their last meeting it was said that the Chinese have ordered ten of those helicopter carriers of which half will be deployed in the South China Sea, to project power in the South East Asia. (America of the 20th century). Whispered the Secretary of Defense to their President. We teach this country to be like us, only that this Dragon is humungous than us. China also has stationed a fleet of an aircraft carrier near Australian waters,' continue the Defense Secretary.

What about the Indians, where are they on this? asked the President.

They are uncommitted Sir. They do not want to get involved. They say, they are more interested in fixing their economy than involving in this nonsense,' laughingly said the Secretary of Defense.

'I will call their Prime Minister later. What time is it in India now? Asked the President.

'It is 5:00 A.M. local time of India, Sir, said the Defense Secretary.'

'Then I will call him after four hours,' replied the President of the United States.

After four hours the President of the United States then requested a call to the Prime Minister of India. The assistant to the United States President then called on her counterpart in India. Jinky was dialing the number of the Prime Minister of India using secured line. The other side then took the call and then Jinky said that it was the president of the United States of America. Amina, the secretary on the other side, then gave the telephone to the Indian Prime Minister.

'Good morning Mr. President, what can I do for you?' The Prime Minister of India said to the President of the United States. 'It is just like a call center, eh.'

'Hehehe! [Acknowledging the existence of United States Call Centers in India.] Good morning Mr. Prime Minister, as you know the time is foreboding to an either good or bad. Just like before during the cold war, your country is into non-align movement yet somewhat aligned with the Soviets,' The President said to the Prime Minister.

'That is almost one hundred years ago Mr. President. Realities are different now. The Indians no longer wish to delve into the past. We no longer blame Great Britain for what we are now. We have been independent since then,' explained the Prime Minister.

'My dear Mr. Prime Minister, as you know China has already fixed their military installations in the South China Sea and poised to take the Philippines to be their vassal state. There was a recent meeting of the Shanghai Cooperation Organization in Baku, Azerbaijan and in there they are planning their chance to be the ruler of the world this

time. And by the Law of the Jungle they have to wrestle it from us, English speaking countries.'

Then the Prime Minister replied, 'At this point in time that is a very scary undertaking. Look, Mr. President, all of the major players today in the international arena have nuclear weapons. The smallest North Korea has their plutonium and hydrogen bombs. For us Indians this is madness and does not make sense.'

'Chinese leaders at this point in time are not sensible. We cannot take chances we have to act. Remember Mr. Prime Minister that you have border dispute with China in the Himalayas and when worse happens, you do not want to be alone in defending it,' knowingly explained the President of the United States.

'Why, will you help us defending the border in the Himalayas? Of course you will not, you let the International Tribunal on border dispute resolution do that,' retorted the Prime Minister of India.

'Only if you and China want that resolved peacefully to which I doubt. We admit that it was the United States of 20th Century who taught the Chinese of their current behaviors. But this is 21st century and behaviors like that are too dangerous,' admits the President of the United States.

'Mr. President, I would like to talk to you more about this but I have other commitments. Can I call you as soon as possible that I finished my responsibilities to my people?' requested the Prime Minister.

In the meantime that the President of the United States is waiting for the call of the Prime Minister, he called on his defense secretary, the secretary of the navy, secretary of the army and the head of the joint-chiefs-of-staff.

'Gentlemen, I have here you called to tell you of most important thing that happened yesterday. It was about the meeting of the Shanghai Cooperation Organization in Baku, Azerbaijan. What do you get from our sources?' the President of the United States inquired to his cabinet.

'It was the Secretary of Defense Michael Hancock who answered that it would be better to call on the CIA and NSA to find out what they got in the meeting. Hancock took the initiative to call on the CIA and NSA to find out what they got of the meeting in Baku, Azerbaijan. Then two persons came in rushing to the office were the meeting is.

'Mr. President, reporting for duty sir,' Daniel Janssen and Andrew Goldman said.

'SCO, yes, SCO is the topic here, the meeting yesterday? What do we got from them?' Asked Michael Hancock.

Daniel Janssen answered: 'Sir there were no details but China is into requesting from Russia that they be built additional helicopter carriers. And obviously these will be deployed to South East Asia.'

'And the target of these helicopter carriers is the dear Philippines into submission,' express the President of the United States. 'Mike, how many troops do we have in the Philippines?'

'We stationed sixty-six thousand soldiers in that country sir. That is under the Visiting Forces Agreement [VFA]. They are mostly stationed in the North of the country particularly the Army base in Tarlac and Subic Port and Clark Airfield and in an undisclosed locations in the island of Palawan,' said the Secretary of Defense.

'Mike, where the hell is Palawan? Questioned the President.

'It is the long island west of the Philippines lying in the South China Sea or the Filipinos called West Philippine Sea,' replied the Defense Secretary.

Then the President of the United States asked Hancock the possibility of hot war in the South China Sea. 'Sir, with all due respect, the Chinese has fortified their installations and it will mean they are ready for any eventualities in the area. Besides the price that they want most is the Philippines, because most of businesses in that country are controlled by the ethnic Chinese. They are also intermarried with the leading families in that nation,' said Michael Hancock knowingly.

'What the world is looking now is how the Eagle and the Dragon will turn out to be in this world in the intercourse of their governments. I mean government and not States, because these will be proactive and active engagements between us and them.' 'Just like in the 1940s when Japan invaded the Philippines, China has the same design except that they are already entrenched in the country, I mean the ethnic Chinese.

'What about our friends in the country? Friends in the Police and the Military, the businessmen who are allied with us?' questioned the President of the United States.

'You know sir in that country people will go to where the money is and they do not want to risk their lives fighting Goliath. The only people who will do that is now allied with the Chinese, ever since, I mean the Marxists. And we do not want to deal with these people,' said Michael Hancock.

The President then interrupted: 'But, look at our relationship with the Vietnamese? They used to be their enemy but now we are best of friends and if I can remember it well, Vietnam was the first country to sign in the Trans Pacific Partnership trade agreement that the former President Barack Obama had passed to Congress.'

'Do you mean sir that we will be dealing with the Marxists!' softly replied by the Secretary of Defense.

'Weak as we are now we cannot engage China in an immediate battle. Now, if they decide to invade the Philippines, we can offer stiff resistance and retreat to Australia, just like during World War II, when Japan bombed and invaded the Philippines. The same thing will happen this time. Now, it will not be the Elites who will offer resistance but the masses and that will be led by Marxists and the leadership of the Filipino Chinese will not be found this time to defend the country, again,' explained the President.

'Why again, Mr. President?' Asked the other Secretaries.

'Because it was the Marxists who offered real resistance to the Japanese invaders during World War II and they will do that again if and when China do the same thing that the Japanese did,' explained further by their President.

'Do you suppose then, Mr. President that we cannot allow the Marxists to win and deal with them the way we deal with Vietnam?' Asked Michael Hancock.

'Not at all Mike. I am just saying history. We are principled people we will still deal with the same people that dealt with us before: the intellectuals, the elites and the middle class and a sizable protestant population of the country, around 20% of the two hundred million people. Can you do the math for me, Mike?'

'They will be around forty million protestants,' replied Mike Hancock.

'Look Mike, we are still in the rebuilding stages of our economy. Not all of our manufacturing plants are running at optimum only the defense industry is at its minimum level. If it continued in the next three to five years we will be behind China in production of many materials needed in war effort. I am not a warmonger but I am being realistic. China has been very assertive in the last twenty years or so and I know that will continue, and if they have a chance they will gobble us up also. I have to be thankful with the European Union and the Vatican for the monies they are willing to put in reviving our economy. With regard to the Jews, well, they have always been for us and their money is with us. They do not put their monies except in the institutions that are controlled by English Speaking countries including themselves. As you will learn, there will be no precious metals in Israel and other precious stones too. They are here in our country. They believe that it is still the safest place on the planet for items worthy of value.'

'Let us go back to the topic of the SCO. Are there other things that they talked about that we know? The President asked the intelligence people.

'Mr. President, as you know, Russia is a Christian country while China is pagan and Iran and the rest are Muslims. Perhaps we can appeal to Russia in terms of religion. Maybe we can request the Vatican to handle this thing for us?' Daniel Janssen explained to the group.

'I will ask you a question Mr. ...

'Janssen Sir, Daniel Janssen.

'Okay, Mr. Janssen. Are you a Catholic?'

'No Sir,' replied Daniel Janssen.

'I am an Evangelical and I agree with you. We can appeal to the Russian President on religious grounds. But if he does not listen what leverage still do we have with him?'

'Their natural resources Sir, they have so much natural resources to protect and we know that China would really want that for free if possible.' explained Daniel Janssen.

'But China is buying their natural resources at market prices and yet China remains cheaper in price than our manufacturers,' replied the President.

The Department of Trade Secretary Jenny Brewster: 'Mr. President as you know the United States is committed to quality products and we also follow strict rules when it comes to labor, safety and environmental standards that cost us so much money unlike the Chinese who would let their workers remain in squalor, sub-standard products and degradation of their environment. There is so much smog in Beijing that they sometimes cancel classes and offices because of pollutions.'

'I understand you on those matters Jenny but the world has accepted the things as they are. We have to be ingenious enough to overcome the advantages that China has. The only good news that happened in the last three years was that Germany has led the nations of the European Union to lift their trade embargo with us. They now prefer to trade with us than with China for the reason that China was also destroying the fundamentals of their economies. And with that lead of Germany and Latin Countries will surely follow suit of buying products from and will give preferences to us in terms of allowing their natural resources flow to us,' explained the President. 'The only remaining market then for China are part of the Middle East, Russia and Central Asian Republics, Africa and the whole of South East Asia, the ASEAN. Those are huge markets. What remain to us are the Commonwealth Countries, Latin America and Europe. The world is really divided.'

'If I may talk, Mr. President, Gentlemen, In South East Asia, ASEAN and the Middle East there are odd man out in those areas. In the ASEAN it is the Philippines. This country as we know have the culture and religion of the West particularly the culture of United States and of the Catholics. They speak English more widely than Tagalog in their country [Tagalog being the main language of the central and southern Luzon]. They look to the Vatican for guidance and watch English movies more often than their Tagalog counterparts. They also have many relatives in English speaking countries: America, Australia, United Kingdom, Canada and New Zealand. Their loyalty cannot be with China except for the

ethnic Chinese. And their neighbors in the area are mostly Muslims and Buddhists,' expounded Andrew Goldman.

'Mr. Andrew... What?

'Andrew Goldman Sir.'

'Okay, Mr. Andrew Goldman, are you a Filipino?

'My Grandmother Sir.'

'Do you have contacts in the Philippines? Of course your relatives. But aside from relatives, do you have other contacts in the government or business sectors that do you think we can tap and be a base of our interests for our continuing preponderance in the islands?' queried the President.

'None sir. Said Andrew Goldman embarrassed with regard to his ethnicity contacts. 'I have just visited the Philippines once, Mr. President, Sir, twenty years ago after graduation from college.'

'Do not be embarrassed, most of you Filipinos still want to work here in our country because of the opportunities afforded to you. And if I can remember that was the time when the Jews started to build their Temple in Jerusalem. And right now it is already finished. And they are the odd man out you talking about in the Middle East?' guessed the President.

'Yes Sir', they are the people that I was talking about. Both are of Judeo-Christian Civilizations. None, except the Chinese, visit Chinese websites in the Philippines. If you will look at their web site behaviors, Filipinos visit English Speaking countries web sites eighty percent of the time. It only shows that they are attuned to us than to their region particularly to China. They do not understand China and perhaps only the scholars would want to understand China and the ethnic Chinese.' state Andrew Goldman as a matter of fact.

'You call that Jews Judeo-Christians, to that statement I will agree. Because whether the Jews like it or not: they are still influenced by the Christian civilization. Being a Republican I know that Christians and Jews should work together to defeat the Extremists of Muslims. Those are the blight of this wonderful world. I am evangelical for all you to know and that affects my decisions. I run for presidency in that platform and I will deliver to American people under the principles of Evangelicalism. I do not care much about what the Supreme Court will say with regard to my neutrality and secularism. That Secularism has made this country so weak and cannot position itself in the world as a true representative of Judeo-Christian Civilization unlike the Latin America or Germany. Germany as you would know is the birthplace of Martin Luther, the religious reformist of the 17th Century that made the proliferation of religions in the West possible including Evangelicalism,' shared the President to his hearers.

‘Are you a Catholic Mr. Goldman?’

‘I am Sir,’ replied Andrew Goldman.

‘Can you explain to me your beliefs or any belief that make you stay with your religion,’ requested the President.

‘Sir, Mr. President, I am not a practicing Catholic but I can recite our Apostle’s Creed, If you will give me time, sir,’ said Mr. Goldman

‘Ah. Your Apostles Creed. Yeah, I know that by heart that ancient creed of Christianity. “The Catholic Creed that shaped the Western thoughts: The thoughts that are the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit.” I would just like to work with the revolutionaries of religions and that makes me work with zest,’ explained the President... Going back to SCO, what are other things have they talked about?’

Michael Hancock answered: ‘According to their official statement, the SCO in the next ten years will be fighting the menace of drugs and terrorism in their borders and they will do it in cross border fashion. Meaning they will have multinational teams that will precisely fight these stuff. But I do suspect that that the multinational teams are cover for their clandestine operations that they will do in other borders that are not members of SCO. In one instance they have violated the sovereign borders of Yemen by sending an at least one thousand troops inside it to fight the Saudi Backed government. Iranians were the leading actors in that breach of the borders. The SCO forces do not have badges on their uniforms but from our sources they are known to be the teams that were made by the SCO. They are now copying our special operations teams.’

‘Russia made it for them. Remember the Crimean crisis how the uniformed Russians entered Crimea forty years ago without insignias or badges. They entered Crimea that was part of Ukraine! They entered there for the benefit of the Ukrainian rebels. Then finally they annexed the peninsula and incorporated Crimea to their country. The big reason for this was that there were sizable ethnic Russian Majority in the area and that Crimea was a host to a naval base for Russia in the Black Sea,’ explained the President of the United States.

Michael Hancock said: ‘The Russian are upgrading the capabilities of these SCO members. And in that case they can only go as high as the Russian technologies, designs, techniques and philosophies in combat and warfare. If we know and know how to counter these stuff then we can have an advantage over the whole SCOrganization.’

Then the phone of the President rang. It was Jinky on the other side: ‘Mr. President it is the Prime Minister of India.’

The President then immediately dismissed his subordinates but let the Secretary of Defense remain with him. 'It is the Prime Minister of India,' said the President to Michael Hancock.

'Hello, Mr. Prime Minister, I am grateful that you call. We have been waiting for your call while we were having a meeting here in our Oval Office. By the way, Good morning or almost noon here,' welcomed the president to the call of the Prime Minister of India.

'Mr. President, a pleasure to talk to you again. As you can see we wish not to get involved in your Armageddon. We do not have that kind of prophecies in our religious books. All we have is the purification of our self to attain the Nirvana or the Krsnaloka or Goloka. What we have is the saying in one of our Holy Books and I will quote it for you:

'O Partha, happy are the ksatriyas to whom such fighting opportunities come unsought, opening for them the doors of the heavenly planets.
– Bhagavad - gita.

And we know that it was the verses that the European Aryans used in starting their world wars. But I will have a proposal to you. We know from reports that the industrial productions of the United States are very much lower than that of China, at least in volume. We are not speaking of quality here. And China has a third world market for their products, although they are not loyal to the Chinese brands they still buy the products because they cannot afford the western products,' explained the Prime Minister.

'Mr. Prime Minister, I would be very glad to hear your proposal with regard to Armageddon,' replied the President.

'To compensate for your lower capacity in the production side of your industries we propose that you build manufacturing bases here in our country. We will do it as a joint venture and as a return we will allow the products, yours and locally manufactured to enter in our markets. In that case you can increase manufacturing output in the United States by bringing some of them here in India. Included in the deals are the transfer of some high technologies for defensive purposes so that China will not poke their nose in our area of influence and that the Indian Ocean will remain an open ocean that all can traverse. In that way also, we can make sure that Australia can be defended in case she is attacked and asked for help from us,' proposed the Prime Minister of India.

'Mr. Prime Minister, the proposals are very good and compelling knowing that the signs of times are foreboding for the English Speaking Countries. Besides, we, the Americans have been looking for a footing in the Far East for a long time. Those that are friendly to us,' explained the President. 'I will give you a call regarding this once I convened my cabinet before lunch this day. By the way, what terms of the deals do you want from us?'

'Mr. President, we want no less than 60/40. Sixty percent ownership from us and 40% ownership from you while majority of managers and technicians will come from you

and the manufacturing plants remain property of the United States. The Chairmanship of the Board is ours while the operations will be United States. Then the other details will be iron out by our negotiators,' suggested the Prime Minister of India.

'Thank you very much for your call Mr. Prime Minister and I will give due considerations to your proposals. But as you know, we have many internal projects as regards our industries and our defense industry is in good shape. If I may add to you, the Latin Americans have changed their armaments in favor of our defense materiel. They seemed cannot understand the Chinese while the Russians would want to give them outdated armaments,' shared the President of the United States.

Then the two put down the phones to their respective receivers. The president then was able to give a sigh of relief for the positive words that came from the Prime Minister of India. It cannot come in other times like this when everybody knows that the SCO is preparing for something grand. The President would like to talk to the President of the Russian Federation but for the time being he knows that rivalry and deprecation of the Western Governments to the Russian people made the Russian contemptible of the West. Without the United States Russia knew that NATO has no match with it. How can they match the cruise missiles that they have in their destroyers. They also have aircraft carriers, the intercontinental ballistic missiles that they have in their silos, trucks, submarines and aircraft carriers not to mention the modern helicopters and tanks that they have.

MILITARY PARADES

...The President has been watching the Parades of Russian, Iranian and Chinese Militaries and also of the North Korean Military before lunch break. 'Mike, what do you think of these parades of militaries of these countries with huge armies?' The President asked to the Secretary of Defense.

'Sir, when I was still at 30 years old we used to think in the Military that those parades were to showcase what they got in terms of military technologies. To show that they were snappy, and that they were powerful and that they got techniques and discipline but we know of the opposite. And now twenty years after, they have become self-fulfilling prophecies. They are now strong, advanced in military technologies, smart and snappy, they are disciplined and they are now powerful. That is also for internal consumption. The people are proud of their military and they usually do not rebel against their authorities,' explained the Secretary of Defence.

'Yeah, I believe you. Russia, when there are crises in Europe and on its western borders, can mass their military with complete war materiel in their western border in just three days with an at least one hundred thousand strong. We can also match that but in a smaller scale since we already have changed philosophy when it comes into prosecuting wars. What we can mass are fighter jets, bombers, fleet of strong ships and aircraft carriers plus Special Forces. Imagine the United States showcasing its military prowess in the

streets of New York. Will not our citizens say? Wow! We are indeed very strong! But why are we not doing that Mike?' The President questioned the Defense Secretary once more.

'Sir, maybe, because the framers of our constitutions were farmers and industrialists, lawyers and men of letters and not generals,' answered Michael

Hancock, the Defense Secretary: 'It has not been a habit of our country to showcase our armaments to other nations only to our allies and to them we only give the old and used hardware. We are very much jealous of our technologies to which it has given us an advantage for the last one hundred years. But that internal breeding of technologies have limits. We have to open to other countries. India for example is advance now, Israel, South Korea, China, Russia, Germany, Japan and many European countries too. Their technologies are interbreeding and that means they are improving at a pace not matched by the United States. Their costs have gone down to 70% of our costs. Their quality is good, reliable too in desert environment, in oceans, in air or in icy places. We have to learn the lesson of the Spanish Empire sir. They were not able to upgrade despite having so much wealth at their disposal. As you know Sir, robots create more robots at higher speed and higher capacity or advance capacities,' shared the Secretary of Defense.

'Perhaps it is about time that we should also have our own Military Parades,' suggested the President.

Secretary of Defense: 'That would be a very good idea Sir.'

They then finished their conversation and went for a snack break. After snack break the cabinet members were called for a meeting to discuss the proposal of India as regards the military technologies and the putting up of manufacturing plants in their country. The president was already amenable but he wants to find out the thoughts of his cabinet as regards this issue. There was also the pressure of China upgrading their capacities or that China has already used robots more in their production processes fifteen years ago. Thus what India would want is to be able to catch up and at the same time be at par in military technologies to defend their territories.

In heaven, San Miguel and Juan Miguel were talking.

'What does this have something to do with Armageddon? Juan Miguel asked to San Miguel.

'As you know, it will be the armaments of the nations that will be used here. And you know, people are warlike in nature. They are insecure and yet they want to dominate each other. These transfers of technologies will give a different complexion to the players for the Armageddon. While India is neutral in not sending her delegation to Jezreel valley still, in her interest, she would want to be able to defend herself in case the United States and the allies lost in Armageddon or that if the United States win the war, she is secure in the opulence that will follow,' explained San Miguel to Juan Miguel.

‘With regard to the Guitara de San Miguel, the music that comes out from it can be used in technologies as finisher and toner because it is so precise and that are what high technologies need.’

‘Therefore they will again look for the guitar once they have learned of it. Although the United States has no belief in that, only the Latin Americans believe and the Filipinos. Only Japan will be using the guitar to tone their precision materials because despite not being Christians they believe in the Lord Jesus Christ. Japanese also believe in angels. And your guitar replicas will again be vogue and can be used in future technologies,’ continued San Miguel.

THE INDIA WEIGHT

It was 02:00 P.M., local time, when all of the cabinet members of the President of the United States came to the White House. They now have to discuss the issue of India. They were already briefed about the topics that will be discussed. So the cabinet members go to the oval office prepared together with their staff that are knowledgeable about technologies and India.

The meeting office is not that big but enough to pack the secretaries and have their places comfortably. There are telephones for the different departments and other bureaus of the US Government. As of this time the United States is still the most powerful country in the world yet the hegemony she is establishing in the world is being challenged by China and Russia. China for example allow its citizens to learn English so that they can understand the business language of the world yet in their internet connections and web sites they do not allow much their citizens to view external sites. China is like a huge intranet. That gives China advantages and disadvantages. For the policy makers of China they believe that the advantages outweigh the disadvantages. But the world believes otherwise, because the Chinese were limited to internal knowledge that they have. The other knowledge, either superior or inferior cannot get into their World Wide Web system.

Inside the meeting office there were computers for the world wide web and computers intended only for the US Government use; a simple intranet yet heavily encrypted.

‘Hmm.’ The President clearing his throat. ‘Gentlemen, I am calling this meeting because of the issue of India. As you know it has been 20 years since China and Russia and particularly the SCO are preparing for the so called Armageddon. They want us to believe that this Armageddon is contained in Jezreel valley in Israel, in Greek tongue it is also called Esdraelon. It is a large valley 55 miles north of Jerusalem. But to us who knew, we know better than that. ***This will be a worldwide battle for supremacy***, the supremacy that the United States has been in the last one hundred fifty years or so. For those who are not religious, just consider Armageddon as a mission name. It has nothing to do with religion at all. Besides, as you know, because of the name of the mission. The Vatican and the European Union have provided us with so much money to revive our economy and be able

to maintain the preponderance of power of the United States in the world. SCO is a huge military alliance and they represent four billion people on the planet and mostly Asiatic in ethnicity. China and Russia are leading the group and as we know the reflexes of these two countries are almost similar if not the same when dealing with western countries.'

'I call on you here because India is not included in the alliance and has no intention of being in there. Armageddon for them is pure nonsense in religious perspective but a great one when looked into the realm of politics. I talked to the Prime Minister and he said that he has a proposal for us. That is on having partnership in some of our technologies and in return India will open their local market for US products. Number one in his wish list is the high technologies that we have, mostly defense in nature. Then consumer goods and appliances and chassis of different vehicles, engines too if possible. They also want chocolates and precious metals, precious stones, original sport shoes using synthetic leather and signature clothes cut in their local designs.'

The Secretary of Trade and Industry, Jenny Brewster, then spoke: 'Except for the high technologies for defense and the engines, all can easily be traded and agreed. The other two will undergo Congress' scrutiny and will have difficulty passing them. Remember sir, it is your Party who is in control of Congress now but that does not guarantee that we can agree with India on defense high technologies. Besides it is an international agreement, the Senate will have say on this too. We will have to explain to them the rationale behind all these and Armageddon is not a good answer.'

The President then replied: 'What if we show and share to them the intelligence briefings that we have since the time we learn of the plan of the Shanghai Cooperation Organization? Would they be convinced? Our economy is in dire straits and that needs fixing and I want it fixed now.'

'Sir, Mr. President,' continued the Secretary of Trade and Industry, 'if you will allow to share the intelligence briefings that your office have then there is a great possibility that Congress will allow the transfer of "some" of the high technologies that are being requested by India. Besides, Sir, why would it be in my Department should not it be in the Defense Department?'

Hancock answered for the President: 'Jenny, we are giving it a cloak a sort of cover that China will not suspect that we are in military alliance with the Indians. You know we have to be thankful with Great Britain for making the Indians English Speaking and Democratic country. With their size they can push their weight around and press to the ground those that would be in their way. You know what I mean. China is like that too and luckily for us they have Russia as supplier of high technologies weaponries and not France or Germany or the United Kingdom.'

'Are we talking of possible hot war here Mr. President?' inquired Jenny Brewster.

'Not really Jenny. But we have to be prepared or we might caught off guard,' Replied the President. 'Mike, this will be your deal with Congress and the Senate. Kindly bring

people from the CIA and NSA so that they can brief the legislators and allow us to transfer some of our high technologies to India. Kindly tell too that we are into a good deal because the manpower that we lack in Asia can be provided by India. Israel is not enough or Egypt and the other Arab countries. China alone is too much of a manpower at 1.8 billion people.'

'Sir, if it is possible I would rather have your secretary call on the Senate President and Speaker of the House here in the Whitehouse together and I will deliver the presentation,' requested Michael Hancock. 'In that way what we say to the upper and lower house are the same. Then it will be up to them to convince their colleagues in Congress.

The President immediately instructed his assistant.

'Jinky, can you please make a request for the Senate President and the Speaker of the House to be here tomorrow morning for a breakfast. There will be important matters to discuss. Kindly say that the Secretary of Defense will give a presentation,' instructed the President to an assistant in his office. 'It will be 09:00 a.m.'

GENERAL CONDITION IN THE UNITED STATES

It was a peaceful night in the United States except for some common crimes that people commit daily. But generally the nation is still a safe place to stay, live and raise a family. Their standard of living is one of the highest in the world. They value freedom despite the terrorism that has entered their soil. Their concerns are to defeat the terrorism and now China in economic and military fronts. Americans are jolly people they take life with enthusiasm. They love much and understand much. They do not blame offenders that much but they like to implement their laws. And that separate them from many other people of the world.

THE PRESENTATION OF ARMAGEDDON AND MOST LIKELY APPROVAL BY CONGRESS

The next morning at 09:00 A.M. the President of the United States greeted and welcomed the two Congressmen. 'Good morning, Jim Jimison and Richard Porter. Thank you for coming. Mike Hancock the Secretary of Defense,' introduced the President. 'Mike will be making a presentation for a deal we want to go ahead with India.' By the way, I also asked Jenny to come here and join the meeting since she or they, together with Mike, will iron out the details of the "trade deal."

Then before the presentation starts Jenny Bwester came. 'Good morning gentlemen. Sorry I am late,' said Jenny Brewster, the Secretary of Trade and Industry.

'No, you are not late your just in time for the presentation of Mike about the SCO and India,' Jenny Brewster excused by the President.

‘Mr. President, Congressmen, Jenny, good morning. As you know China now has the ascendancy in production capacity of its manufacturing plants and in many other parts of the economy. But our paramount concern is the recent meeting that they had in Baku, Azerbaijan. There the President of the Russian Federation and the Premier of China agreed on the so called Armageddon,’ started Mike Hancock.

‘Mike,’ interrupted the Senate President, ‘I am wary about that Armageddon thing. Is that the Bible end of the world thing?’

‘Not really,’ replied Mike.

‘Come on Mike, we are in the 21st century that thing belongs to religion and the religious not here in this secular government,’ explained the senator.

Richard Porter said: ‘Jim, let us listen. It was just an introduction. Let’s give the President and Mike Hancock a chance to say what they want to say. Consider this as politics and history.’

‘As you can see, Armageddon is just the name of their mission or just any other name attached to a project, China has upgraded their defense capabilities and the People’s Liberation Army has added 300 thousand soldiers to their ranks and retired 100 thousand at the age of forty. What could that mean? They have vast reserves of soldiers now if they have been doing it starting 2020. The year Japan hosted the Summer Olympics. As we know, China started the one child policy, but when there came the preponderance of male children that shifted their population with extra 300 million males without women counterparts. That is equal to 60% of our population. These males without counterpart females became a problem for them and that they would want to put to service these 300 million population in a manner that they will benefit more.’

‘Now on the hard side of the mission Armageddon: Russia has an order of ten helicopter carriers from China, Billions of bullets, 600 millions of long range rifles and tanks in untold numbers, 10,000 if I were not mistaken. That would be enough to intimidate the whole of South East Asia including Australia. Right now China has a fleet of Aircraft carrier near the waters off Australia. They include destroyers with basic cruise missiles and nuclear capable missiles in their aircraft carriers. In Syria, they have provided the Syrians with 4,000 tanks all ready for battle and have been given enough ammunition to last a battle of 1 year without replenishment. They also provided the Syrians and the Iranians with J20 and J10 fighter jets at the number of 1,000 and 1,500 each. All ready for battle. And who is their target, the Israelis. As we know, their Fourth Temple in Jerusalem has been finished (the position being on the right side of the Muslim Mosque facing East). Now the Muslims would want to destroy that Temple and also we know that there is such thing as red-green alliance that is in existence for more than fifty years now.’

‘According to some of our satellite images and special forces reconnaissance there are at least 10 armaments manufacturing plants being built in Malaysia, 15 in Indonesia, 50 in China, 20 more in Russia and 10 more in Iran. These are troubling signs for the nations

that are not partnered with them. If we remain alone in producing weaponries for the Western world we will not be able to catch up with the volume of productions that they are planning for the next ten years. With China alone we are behind by 40 percent. We are just being good in designs and quality. But quality alone, as we know did not win World War II for Germany.'

Jim Jimison then spoke up: 'What are you then proposing?

'The President would want to have a firm footing in the Far East and that would be India. This behemoth cannot be push aside by China or Russia even combined if we transfer some of our technologies to them. They are the biggest democracy in the world and they are the biggest English speaking country in the world they are also fond of education. They are not into quarreling for quarrel sake and they are not into enlarging their territories by pushing their borders at the expense of their neighbors.'

Thanks to the United Kingdom of Great Britain, the Indians are Western looking when secular and inward looking when it comes to their religion. These are peaceful loving people and they are into sharing their knowledge and civilization when they feel they are correct. For example, Buddha was an Indian prince, who turned religious person. He propagated his teachings in China, Japan, Burma and Thailand. The inventor of "Chinese" Kung Fu was actually Indian. The people of the Philippines, their Rajahs were actually Indians, the Creator that they call Noble One was actually brought by the Indians.'

'These are just some of the examples that we can trust the Indians to side with us and not with those who want to dominate and enslave the world,' Said Mike Hancock.

'And what do they want from us?' asked Richard Porter.

'They want cruise missiles for their ships, surface to air missiles for air defense, those that can intercept ballistic missiles and air to ground missiles. The last one will most likely be used in the Himalayas,' guessed Mike Hancock.

'Mike, except for the surface to air missiles, all are offensive weapons. How are we going to allow these?' complained Senator Jim Jimison. 'Look we are looking for a partner who will maintain peace in the world and not make another war,' explained Senator Jim Jimison.

'War is upon us Mr. Senator whether we like or not. It is a price that we are going to pay by being the best in the world. That we will always be challenged and dethroned if they can. And China is up to the challenge. Russia, although at secondary seat with regard to China, the Motherland has leverages when it comes to China. Example, she can close the valve of oil and gas going to China. Stop the transfer of some "high technology" armaments or not cooperate in the SCO altogether.'

It was the Speaker of the House who gave the nod to Mike Hancock to continue his line of thought. 'As you know, the United Nations is not functioning as it is. They are anti-Israel for unknown reasons. Or simply because Israelis called themselves sons of God.'

'People of God,' Corrected by Congressman Richard Porter. Then he politely gestured to the Defense Secretary to continue, 'Okay you may kindly continue.'

'During the time of former President George W. Bush his administration had nuclear deals with the Indians and those were state of the art nuclear plants and can produce nuclear weapons that can be at par with ours.' Continued Mike Hancock. 'That was the confidence that the Bush administration had given to the Indians. They were also Republicans, I mean the Bushes.'

'Look,' Mike, Mr. President, 'Pakistan was not cooperating in anti-terrorism at that time and it was a carrot that was being given to New Delhi just to side with us in the fight against terrorism. Twin Towers bombings were still fresh in Americans' minds at that time. We cannot compare the two,' explained Senator Jim Jimison.

The President then interrupted: 'Jim, this could be more than Twin Towers Bombings. That will be a terrible thing to happen to us. China is friendly at face value but we all know what happened to their relationship with the USSR and now Russia. Russia is relegated to secondary status. Jim, our relationship with China is more on trade and a trade that is one sided is not fair. Thus we created the Trans Pacific [Trade] Partnership without China. Now China has the silk road and they would want to get the Philippines from our orbit. Remember the former Philippine President who said that they have long been free from being a colony? Well, the United States gave them their freedom but the Philippines remain a property of the United States. He does not know that we bought the Philippines, that piece of Real Estate, from Spain for 20 million dollars and signed at the Treaty of Paris, the document is still with us. An amount so huge before the 20th Century and even now. Take out your reservations, trust us on this, Jim.'

'Okay, Mr. President, as you think best for the country,' agreed the Senate President Jim Jimison.

'And what about Jenny?' Asked Senator Jim Jimison.

'Jenny will be our negotiator in the trade deals. We will put this under her umbrella. Mike cannot go there and sign these agreements. We will instead send some of our staff to do the negotiations and finalizations of the deals. In that case the Chinese and the Russians will not suspect anything,' explained Mike Hancock. 'I will be giving them the signature clothes and synthetic leather shoes.' Hahaha! Laugh Jenny teasingly.

'Are we done with your Armageddon?' Jenny said to the four.

'Yes, the conversation is finished. We will be preparing the agreements of the deals and then we will have Congress and the Senate review them so that they can easily ratify them once they are signed,' explained Mike Hancock.

In heaven the two continued to view the conversation on the walls of heaven in the headquarters of the angels. 'This is interesting San Miguel,' said Juan Miguel. I am understanding their languages and I am learning history in forward manner and in details. I even know the players in this Armageddon. Although, is this the Armageddon wherein our Lord Jesus Christ will come down?' asked Juan Miguel.

'I do not know,' replied San Miguel.

'Surely their languages make a great difference for these two groups. The one is the start of the Tower of Babel while the other group is the consequence of the Tower of Babel,' observed San Miguel.

'And why are they calling it Armageddon?' Juan Miguel asked again.

'That is just a name because they are targeting the valley of Jezreel. Other than that that is merely another war that involves the Jews of that day,' explained San Miguel. 'The fourth Temple of the Jews is the target. They will try to sacrifice pigs on the tabernacle in the Temple. That is a direct abomination to God and to the Jews. I do not think that the Christian Russians will have participation in that sacrifice of pigs on the table of the Jews.'

'Can I stay here until the consummation of the so called Armageddon on the viewing venue?' Juan Miguel requested to San Miguel.

'Of course you can stay here,' agreed San Miguel.

UNITED STATES DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE

Here people can be seen rushing from one place to another, preparing documents for the deal with India. Michael Hancock cannot wait to see the drafts. Atty. Howard Burton, an undersecretary of the Department of Defense is a lawyer who was preparing it for them. A young lawyer of 35 years old, rose from the ranks in the Department and has never been involved into any allegation of corruption, misdemeanor or espionage. He was clean, and patriot American. He was wearing a white long sleeves and a black tie just like their President who wears maroon tie and Hancock who wears blue tie.

'Howard,' asked Michael, 'how long would it still take to finish the documents for India?'

‘Sir, after preparation here, we will give it to you for comments, then, we will still go to Congress and the Senate for the final draft. We are looking forward for the ratification of the document,’ Howard replied, ‘Maybe three days.’

It took them three days to draft the documents. It was a hundred page document excluding the annexes for the details of the armaments that were included. But the gist of the document were:

1. The United States is allowing the transfer of technologies involved in ground-to-air-missiles to the Republic of India.
2. The United States is allowing the transfer of technologies involved in air-to-ground-missiles to the Republic of India.
3. The United States is allowing the transfer of technologies involved in cruise-missiles.
4. All the necessary support for the effective and efficient utilization of the technologies are hereby given managers and technicians to operate and train the Indians in operations and maintenance.

The other documents that were needed for the purpose of agreeing with India were prepared by the Department of Trade and Industry.

In the US House of Congress: the Chairman of Defense staff and the Chairman of Trade and Industry were convened to look into the draft and this was joint together with the staff of the Senators. There were no major revisions to the document except for some wordings that the Congressmen would want to be included. Then the document was finalized. Electronically, the documents were forwarded to the Department of Defense and to the Department of Trade and Industry. The lines that transferred the documents were secure and the United States knew that they cannot be hacked. They knew that they have the most secured Government Intranet in the world.

Michael Hancock read the document carefully and handed a copy too to Atty. Howard Burton. ‘Can you look into it closely,’ he said to the lawyer, are there major revision to the wordings that we would want written?’

‘Only some minor changes in the wordings, thesaurus thing, for legal purposes,’ replied the lawyer. ‘If I were these congressmen I might do the same. The Republic must be protected from carelessness. Legal terms have effects that only lawyers and judges knew the consequences, even in international law,’ explained Howard Burton.

‘Do you think the President would still change some words in here? Hancock questioned Howard Burton.

'Well, the President is a lawyer businessman and I do believe that he can still see some loopholes to plug. I just do not know if he would show deference to Congress,' explained Howard to Hancock.

Then Michael said quoted something from the Bible. Howard, do you think this will happen:

Now there were devout men living in Jerusalem from every nation under heaven, and at this sound they all assembled, each one bewildered to hear these men speaking his own language. They were amazed and astonished. 'Surely' they said 'all these men speaking are Galileans? How does it happen that each of us hears them in his own native language? Parthians, Medes and Elamites; people from Mesopotamia, Judaea and Cappadocia, Pontus and Asia, Phrygia and Pamphylia, Egypt and the parts of Libya round Cyrene; as well as visitors from Rome – Jews and proselytes alike – Cretans and Arabs; we hear them preaching in our own language about the marvels of God. Everyone was amazed and unable to explain it; they asked one another what it all meant. – Acts of the Apostles 2: 1 – 12.

The Lawyer being secular said: 'I do not know about that. I hope so.'

Next month you will be in New Delhi, said Michael Hancock.

CHAPTER XXXI

MEANWHILE IN THE PEOPLE'S REPUBLIC OF CHINA

The office of the President was simple but clean and organized. Pile of books and papers are in order. There are computers that are all made in China, Lenovo, the brand that they acquired from International Business Machines [IBM] of the United States. There are also newspapers on the table both in Chinese and in English. It is intriguing for the Chinese to know how to speak and understand English.

Premier Kai was talking to their President, Haw.

'Mr. President there has been an agreement at the SCO that we can proceed with the building of roads toward the land of Palestine. We are targeting that it will be finished in five years. We would like to have this schedule to parallel the full production capacity of the 50 armaments factories that we have built, I mean, together with the Russians. Russia's will also be at its peak by that time,' said the Premier.

'This plan has long been in coming. The Aryans, we, must then make sure that will have the real estate of this earth. I do not hate or envy the Jews but the Muslims would want them to go from that place and remain; wandering Jews. They have been into the United States and they were very successful less the too much persecution. In China Jews were not persecuted. Why not make us richer through the Jews?,' the Premier said to the President of PRC.

'You know Mr. Premier, when we were young and we studied in Moscow we knew that they were our friends and up to this time temporary setbacks in relationships have not affected much our total relationship with the Russians. We have had wars with them but why is it that we are still together and together we will be in this Great War that is coming. What the Christians call it, Armageddon?'

'I do not know, but the Christians are so much affected by this Armageddon thing, especially the Evangelicals and the Protestants. Catholics and Orthodox do not give much importance to it. They just simply read it and wait for their Lord to come. That Jesus Christ has something that He was able to put billions of people into believing that He is the Son of God,' said the Premier.

'Look, Mr. Premier, during our history lessons in elementary we also believed in the son of heaven, those weaklings that rule the land. They have to sacrifice to heaven so that we will have good harvests and no calamities, etc... There is no difference. Only this Jesus' followers are fanatics. That is why I suspect that the President of the United States must be into this Armageddon. He is an evangelical Christian.

'To tell them that we believe in heaven let us then fulfill their prophecy. We will go by the book. We will march to Israel and rule that land for us. Never was it known in the

history or civilization of the world that ruling empires do not rule Judaea, the old name for that province called Israel. We therefore have to rule it to solidify our position as a world empire,' expound the President of PRC.

'What did our colleagues in the SCO say? Russia has been perfect in its obligations to us rather to all members of the SCO. They were in Yemen when the Iranians stormed the Palace of the place. They helped Kazakhstan's gas pipelines, Russia also placed communication infrastructures in the whole of Tajikistan and lastly they continue to pump oil and gas to us uninterruptedly. What more could you ask from them. "If USA and Great Britain were Brothers in Arms", "China and Russia are "Eternal Brothers," declared the President of the People's Republic of China. 'Vacillations in our relationship with them are always temporary. If we lose the war in Armageddon we will lose it together with Russia.'

'What now with our armaments production. Are we ahead of the Western countries? What about Great Britain? Are they now into production of armaments that can rival Russia's? inquired the President of China.

The Premier then gave an explanation with regard to the status of Great Britain's armament production. 'It has always been that Great Britain has the ascendancy in quality of war materiel vis-à-vis Russia. But at the close of 20th century Russia has shown that they were in fact possessors of greater fire power than Great Britain. In fact, Great Britain will not fight a war with Russia without the United States.'

'The matter of quality of armaments now is based on the precision of electronic components and capabilities and in that case Asians are very good. Japan is precise in its instruments thus they can really be said that they have ascendancy in firepower even against us. Except against Russia because Russia is advanced since it is their focus and not much their civilian economy or other industries. They have perfected the cruise missiles and antiballistic missiles. They also have laser weapons now.

By the way, the Russians said that their delegation to Armageddon is 100,000. I could not believe with what I heard but perhaps the Russian President has something grand in his mind. Some will even mount horses. This is 21st Century, I told to myself.'

'You do not understand Mr. Premier that we are fulfilling prophecies here. And Russia knows what it is doing. Those 100,000 are all trained technicians in using their armaments, so in effect you took all the 1 million standing army of Russia from them. This force will not be those who will shoot the rifles. No, my dear Premier they are well trained in using surface to air missiles, air-to-air missiles, ground-to-ground artillery missiles, tank manners and many other communication devices operators. Imagine 100,000 doing those stuff. They alone can knock down the whole of Israel defences. But we know the story. The Protestants will join the fray and will make sure Israel as a Zionist country will survive. Thus the Chinese and Iranian and other Muslim countries will be joining bringing in their AK 47s and fire bullets at a distance of 200 meters away accuracy, the most. No, Mr. Premier, the Russians are into it as much as we do. That is why I am speeding up the production of tanks, helicopters and many other war materiel under the supervision of our

and Russian technicians. Besides, we have to remember, that the European Union is in their western border. They cannot afford to send all of their men capable of bringing up arms. They have suffered enough under the aggressions of Germany. If you can remember in World War I, Vladimir Lenin was even willing to cede a huge chunk of Russian soil to Germany just to appease them.'

'As I have told you, China is Eternal Brother to Russia, we know it both so do not doubt them. It just so happened that we have the upper hand now in terms of industrial production while Russia remain a supplier of raw materials. Manufacturing is really the way to go and then control the marketing too. That is the problem of oil suppliers now. The Jews are controlling the prices in the downstream, I mean at the retail level. Now the Saudis, as much as they want to cooperate with Russia, cannot lower their productions because the United States does not want them, although this is also benefiting us.'

'I will now focus my attention to the Philippines. How many are they now? 200 million? Well, they will be ours now, the hell with the 20 million dollars that the United States had paid for that piece of Real Estate. Philippines is a better real estate than Israel, it just so happened that people there are indolent or simply lacking an interest in prosperity for material wealth. They would rather stay in their Churches and praise God all day than work in their soil. That what was the Spanish brought them. Now the Americans, give them Government that is stable but eventually became corrupt. Then most of the time Filipinos enjoy the movies of Hollywood and surfing the internet rather than being productive. Now the Chinese were different than them and they blame the Chinese for being better than them. It is really necessary that the locals and the foreigners should interbreed with the Filipinos. They are ugly and have to be given upgrade in beauty and intelligence.'

Then the Premier interrupted their President.

'Mr. President, we would like to know our relationship with the Vatican. I mean that old institution run by old and traditional people. They sway the beliefs of nearly two billion Catholics, as many as our population worldwide.'

The President replied that just like before there has been no changes. Chinese are slow to changes and so does the Vatican. 'If we were turtles they were snails. So nothing has changed. We are being polite to them and their stance is to understand. Do you get me on this? Of course we know that they are financing the United States in rebuilding their economy but they also financed us in the last 20 years and earlier. The Pope is just being a father to his children. They cannot risk the Church here in China and that is a very delicate balancing act for the Vatican. We know that, we have talked about it many times. Remember even the Catholic Church of the United States would want the Chinese Catholic Church to succeed. So this Armageddon is a matter to us Big Boys.'

Then President of China then shared something to their Premier.

'Premier Kai, I would like you to know something. There is a discovery just recently while you are away and in the meeting at the SCO, kindly look at these pictures and videos.'

President Haw then called his lady assistant to play the videos and handout the pictures that they got. First the pictures were shown to Premier Kai.

'What are these? These are markings, ruined structures and these are not Chinese calligraphies. Where did this come from? It looks like something alien or not of this world,' said the amazed Kai.

'These were discovered by our Archaeological team that went to the plateau at the Yellow River,' said President Haw. 'They accidentally discovered the existence of tribes located on top of the Huang Ho and it was such a great discovery that it seemed there are different breeds of Chinese on the plateau. They were taller and have fairer skin than us and they sometimes have blonde hairs. They also have wider bodies. We asked a German archaeological team and they said that this could be angelic in origin. I mean if we can read the markings on the walls perhaps we can decipher what are those markings and writings. As communists we cannot allow that we believe in Angels but the Germans are knowledgeable with these kinds of discoveries. Our team tried to communicate with them but they seemed to have difficulty with that. There is a great gulf of understanding between us and them. Let us look at the videos. On the left side of the screen is their leader, the name is unintelligible to us. But as you can see he is so huge that he can pass as a basketball player for team China. Most of them stand at least 6'6" and wide bodied. They are also strong and quick that they can pass as military personnel for many types of engagements. And also they are beautiful and comely in appearance. The Germans said that they be given some time before they can identify the markings. We are new to it and we do not believe in angels. This can just pass as another tribe of China but how can we not known their existence. We also took a sample of their DNA and I hope that tonight they can give us the reading with regard to these tribes,' explained President Haw. 'Then the ruined structures are somewhat different from the structures that we have now and from the past. We do not have those stone structures. The closest that we can see here in the world are the ones in Europe. Particularly the ones in Germany and France,' continued the President of China.

'They are beautiful, truly angelic,' said the assistant of the President.

The two look at the lady and was amazed at her reaction. 'Really, they look beautiful? Are they yin?' Said Premier Kai.

'Yes, dear premier, they look like angels, the ones that were being portrayed in western movies,' replied the lady assistant with giggle.

After sometime the office phone rang. And it was the archaeologists who discovered the tribes near the Yellow River. 'Hello Lady Ai, may I talk to the President.'

'Mr. President Sir, it is the Archaeologist from Beijing University. Will you take the call, Sir?'

'Yeah, please, kindly give me the phone.' The President went near the phone and talked to the person on the other end. 'Hello Dr. Li, what do we have?'

'Mr. President, you will be surprised with what we got. I mean with regard to the tribes at the Yellow River.'

The President asked for permission from Dr. Li with regard to the phone that he will now put in speaker mode. 'Premier Kai is here and I want to share this conversation with him. Can I now put the phone in speaker mode?' requests the President.

'Yes, please Mr. President,' replied Dr. Li.

'With regard to the tribes, we have discovered that they are different from us humans,' said Dr. Li.

'And how is that Dr. Li? The President asked while Premier Kai and the assistant were listening attentively.

'The chromosomes of the tribes are 48 in numbers 24 plus 24. It means they have a human parent with 24 chromosomes and another parent with 24 chromosomes. They do not originate that way because as the scientists in Beijing University said, they used to have human parents. And human beings have 46 chromosomes: 23 from each parents. So they could have started as 23 and 25 chromosomes. What we have to know is where does this 25 chromosomes come from. Then as they interbreed they stabilized into 48 chromosomes that now became 24 each from their parents,' explained Dr. Li of Beijing University. 'This is a great discovery Mr. President. We have a new breed of human beings if they are indeed human beings, stronger and more beautiful than us.'

'Let us keep this to ourselves for now but in the meantime we wait the reply of the German team about this. Or we can already send them the results of the chromosomes study,' said the President to Dr. Li who was so anxious to know what the Germans got.

'I suggest we put fuel to the fire of studying this discovery of ours so that the Germans will get excited about these chromosomes results,' suggests Dr. Li.

'I think that will be good,' said the President. 'I just have one question: How many are these people in terms of population?'

Dr. Li said to the president, 'Mr. President, in our survey they numbered around one hundred thousand people excluding women and children.'

'Okay. That's enough for now. I highly suggest that you send an email to your German counterparts as regards that chromosomes discovery,' suggested the President.

CHAPTER XXXII

GERMANY 11:00 P.M. LOCAL TIME

It was already 11:00 P.M. when the email reached Johann Wolfgang. But he was not yet sleeping because his team is making researches about the Tribe and the Structures that were discovered in Yellow River. His team is so excited that they cannot seem to sleep. They look into the internet, libraries and special sites to know about the structures and the tribes. But they could not find any. Then they look at the origins of the buildings in Germany and France that are similar to the structures of the tribe.

‘Are these ruins or just unfinished structures? Johann Wolfgang asked to his team.

And the tribes look angelic. They are bigger, in terms of common size, and their clothing are different and they have different markings of some sort.’

‘But the team could not agree. They look into the past drawings of the Vikings and other European Myths and find some similarities. Are these the remnants of the Watchers?’ they say to themselves.

‘These are Europeans in looks but more beautiful indeed,’ said Johann Wolfgang.

Then they compared some very old structures that they got from Germany and France and they find some similarities.

‘Hey, hey! Here it is. There is a building in which one of the intricate designs have some similarities with the ones that we can find in the China ruins. And according to the write up about the structure there is also the same thing in Persia, today’s Iran near the nuclear site that the Iranians built in 2010. And according again to the Iranian website the origin of that structure is from Mexico. Could this be Aztec?’ inquired of one of Johann’s team staff.

‘Okay guys, can we wrap up this for tonight. We work tomorrow at 10:00 A.M. or those who want to work earlier can come. The keys are with the guards,’ said Johann Wolfgang to his team who are now preparing to leave.

‘But wait a minute I have an email from China, from Dr. Li. I will open it first before we retire for the night,’ Johann whispered to his team of archeologists.

It was the content of the email:

Dear Johann:

Here are what do we got from the sample of the DNA of the Tribes on the plateau of the Yellow River.

- a. They have 48 chromosomes
- b. They used to have human parents that have 46 Chromosomes [23 from each parents]
- c. It follows therefore that one of the parents of these tribes if they were crossbreeds have 50 chromosomes
- d. Then as they continue to crossbreeds their chromosomes stabilized into 48 [24 from each parents].

We will continue to communicate with you. We also would want to find out what you got about the structures and the about the tribes?

Sincerely yours,

Dr. Li
College of Social Sciences
University of Beijing

Then the German team got very much excited and they looked into their dedicated and trusted internet sites about the chromosomes and their implications to their discovery.

'This tribe could be more human than human, they are above us. Look at them they are beautiful and strong,' said Johann to his team while they are looking at the videos available to them.

'This is exciting but we have to have our rest. Tomorrow we continue about our researches about these tribes and their structures.

The next day the team members were early. It was just 08:00 A.M. and they are already at the research laboratory. Gotfried Friedman then the assistant to Johann Wolfgang looked into the 24 chromosomes. This is something estrange. He asked Dr. Johann Wolfgang to email back Dr. Li about the findings.

This was the email of Dr. Johann Wolfgang to Dr. Li.

Dear Dr. Li:

We have found a match, actually similarities, in some of the structures here in Germany and France. It is a strange thing to have these as its match since we never knew of our cultural intercourse except only recently. Besides, the structures in China seemed to be not ruins but unfinished ones.

There are also very similar structures that are in Persia, today's Iran but these ones are complete, meaning a complete city. It was also said that the population of this city is about two hundred thousand, excluding women and children. We have not seen the chromosome samples but the people look similar, they were discovered by Dr. Aldrech Robinson in 1897. But Dr. Robinson died of heart attack because of old age after one year of discovering the existence of the tribe. There were not much studies conducted after that.

As regards the 23, 24, 25, 46 and 48 chromosomes, since the 24 is the pairs here we can say that, according to Christian Bible, there used to be 26 ribs of the human being but God operated Adam and took the two and what remains are 24 ribs. With regard to 25 chromosomes; in your Yin and Yang dichotomy, even numbers represent the Yin [Tiger] numbers while the odd numbers represent Yang [Dragon] numbers. It follows therefore that one of the parent of this tribe was a Dragon, because 23 is naturally human or 46 chromosomes in one normal human being. The Dragon or Yang usually has these continuing numbers 555 or 777 both are odd numbers.

Sincerely yours,

Johann Wolfgang
College of Humanities
University of Berlin

THE DRAGON TRIBE

On the other end of the line the Chinese could not believe what he is reading. The Dragon therefore is not a Myth after all. Though the Communist Party has nothing to do with immaterial myths, the overseas Chinese will surely be elated by this discovery. But he could be wrong, the myth or truth of the Dragon has been imbedded in Chinese psyche that they cannot seem to get away with it.

‘We should then call this tribe the Dragon Tribe, after their fathers,’ said Dr. Li to himself.

The next day Dr. Li was called by the leadership in Beijing. From Beijing University he went straight to the Forbidden City the office of the People’s Republic of China’s leadership. In the office of the President of the People’s Republic the President could be seen at his huge desk reading the intelligence digests of the day and the previous day. The Chinese intelligence group also has intelligence predictions digest for the day or for any time in the future which the President is also reading.

The telephone rang and the Ms. Ai took the telephone and answered.

‘Hello, this is the office of the President of PRC. Who is on the other line please?’

‘Ma’am Ai, this is the guard at the entrance, Wei. There is a person here who wants to see the President. His name is Dr. Li of College of Social Sciences at the University of Beijing.’

‘Oh, yes, the President is expecting him. Kindly let him in and guide him to the office,’ instructed Ms. Ai to the guard on duty.

While walking toward the office of China’s President, Dr. Li could not but be amazed with their Palace. The Forbidden City that was closed to the public before the Republicans took over the Chinese Government. He was well aware of it because he has read much about China’s history since he is in the College of Social Sciences. As he entered the office of the President of PRC he found it to be spacious with several computers on different desks. The President’s desk is the one on the right side and the widest of all. There are also shelves with piles of books that surely the President has read and studied carefully.

‘Welcome Dr. Li, have a seat please,’ welcomed the President of the PRC. Inside the room there is also the Premier of China. He is awaiting Dr. Li too on the topics that they want to know.

‘Dr. Li, as you know we already knew that you emailed Germany on the matter of the Tribe that we were discussing. As regards the chromosomes, we checked it with Doctors and indeed there are only 46 chromosomes of a normal person. Now 48 is an abnormality

but the members of the tribe that we are talking about are not abnormal. Are not they normal?' asked the President.

'My dear President, I am not in a position to say if the members of the tribes were normal or abnormal.' Said Dr. Li to the President. 'But they do look different than us, in fact, in Caucasian and even Chinese standards they are beautiful,' continued Dr. Li.

'Of course they are beautiful,' said the President, 'but what we want to know is if they are intelligent beings that we can utilize. Remember we are into technology wars with the United States and if need be we need to breed intelligent people. Are these people good candidates?' insists the President.

'Mr. President, the information that we have is that it was too scant and because of that we cannot yet make a judgment as regards the condition of the intelligence of the tribe members,' explained Dr. Li.

Then the Premier interrupted the conversation of the two. He gently said to Dr. Li that as leaders of nearly two billion people they have to make snap decisions and very many are important ones. They do not need all the information. They were trained by the Russians to do just that. Now with the pictures and videos and many other information as regards the tribes was it not enough to make conclusions? asked the Premier.

'Hmmm.' Dr. Li clearing his throat. 'Well, we can of course make conclusions as regards the possible intelligence of the tribes. First, they were able to survive in that condition that they have. If they were not intelligent enough they will not survive they will perish in the mountainous jungles. Second, they have a technology of the Bronze Age or at least the last 17th century and yet they were able to populate with such numbers within small location. Third, they have clothing or garments very much different from us that only a high kind of technology can produce,' explains Dr. Li to the leaders of the PRC.

'I therefore conclude that they could be very intelligent tribe,' said Dr. Li to the leaders of the PRC.

'As regards the email of the Germans, we can surmise that they are into myth of the Yin and Yang. To which I know that the Communist Party has nothing to do. The Germans told us too that one of the founding parents of the tribe could be a Yang or Dragon, to which, again, I know that the communist party does not believe,' added Dr. Li.

'Is it true that we do not believe in the myth of the Dragon or we do believe it in the higher ups of this government?' teases The Premier of the PRC.

Then Dr. Li was able to see in his peripheral vision a shadow of a person, bigger than usual person, around 6'6", as if like the shadow of the members of the tribe of Yellow River. Then suddenly he showed himself fully to the group, a very beautiful creature standing 6'6" perfect in facial beauty with sturdy body and blonde hair. Dr. Li was captivated by the beauty that he almost forgot that he was in the office of the President of the PRC.

'Behold! The Angel of China!' Shouted the Premier. 'The Dragon! 'The father of the tribe.' The Dragon in angelic form with very long outstretched white wings.

Then all in the room clapped their hands. And shouted, Power for the Dragon!

'We have prepared for this for a very long time,' said the Dragon, 'and I cannot wait to destroy the people of God, the Israelis. We will fulfill the Armageddon whether Jesus arrives or not.'

'I command you Mr. President to now train and interbreed my children in the Yellow River with your most intelligent subjects. We have to find out how high are their IQs. We cannot wait any longer. We have to destroy the children of the Woman who are against my offspring. People now are into armament productions and they are also into buying armaments. I therefore suggest that we run an armament or gun fair next week and invite some representatives from Israel and the Philippines and put them beside the booth of China and let my offspring staff the booth for China. We will find out the truth about the enmity between Her offspring and my offspring,' told the Dragon to the leaders of China.

IN THE UNFINISHED CITY OF DEVILS

That very same day the two leaders and some of their assistants and soldiers go to the plateau at the Yellow River using helicopters, attack choppers and cargo lift choppers. While the Dragon flew to the place using his own wings and was there even before the choppers arrived. This fast arrival of the angel of China amazed the leaders of People's Republic of China the more. They now know that their Angel is very powerful indeed.

Then the Dragon spoke to his children in their own language: 'My children, it is time that you should be known to China and the rest of the world. They have to know that the Prince of this World exist and that is no less than me; the Dragon. It is also time that you interbreed with the people so that our race will dominate the world and conquer it and let this earth be ours!'

Hail the Dragon! The angel of light! Hail the Dragon the Prince of this World! shouted offspring of the serpent.

Then the leaders of China look at the offspring of the serpent and they wonder as to how can anyone breed such types of humans or more human than human? Humans with 48 chromosomes; it could only mean that they were offspring of the angel of China.

'The Dragon, the angel of China, there are places reserve for your offspring in some parts of China. We are now ready to breed your offspring with the other people of China. This is the experiment that the Nazis had failed and in this we will succeed,' said the President of PRC.

'We cannot delay, dear angel of China, we need to go down and keep your offspring from the sight of the enemies for the time being. They are for our eyes only as of this time until such time that we learn of their capacities. We will give them Culture Fair Tests and find out how high are their Intelligence Quotients,' suggests the Premier of PRC.

Then the people airlifted the wingless offspring of serpent. They assembled 100 cargo lift helicopters to carry down the Dragon Tribe. And once they were down the civilized China and in an undisclosed location they were given intelligence quotient tests by the psychologists of China. In China, the Intelligence Quotients tests that are culture fair were up to 100 points. And the results of the tests showed that most of the Dragon Tribe members have 98 percent score on their IQ tests. This means they have superior intelligence than the common man of China.

Their beauty and height were also measured and they have high grades in regards to these, excellent in height and excellent in physical beauty. Their cranial and bone structures were measured and they emerged to be very much superior to 99 percent of people of China. These results convinced the leaders of China that indeed they need the genes of these Dragon Tribe members. But there could be a problem; their chromosomes will end up to be odd number of 47 chromosomes. Forty-seven chromosomes among humans have problems in the mind, and these were verified scientifically a long time ago.

The leaders of the PRC therefore said that the crossbreed of humans and stabled Dragon Tribe members could not commence because mathematically and scientifically their offspring will be abnormal. What then can we do asked the angel of China to the leaders?'

We will in-breed your tribe and produce more of them so that abnormalities will not come out. The Dragon agreed on the proposal. They in-breed the members of the Dragon Tribe among themselves and they assumed that the results would be perfect.

After the conversations they then got six tribe members of Dragon Tribe to man the booth of China in the armaments show or gun fair. They brought them to Shanghai and taught what to do in the booth. In the meantime, they do not know how to read and write the calligraphy of China and it becomes a problem for the Defence Industry of China. They talked to the Dragon Tribe Members and then they agreed that the language of the Dragon Tribe will be used.

IN THE MEANTIME IN SHANGHAI

ARMAMENTS OR GUN SHOW

That same day the armaments manufacturers in the Chinese industries were instructed to have an armaments fair or gun show. The instruction to them was clear: invite the Philippines and Israel and put them near Dragon Tribe

members and find out if there will be natural collisions among the participants.

In a matter of one week 70 nations were participating in the armaments show. They are all in a big stadium in China that was turned into a giant showroom. There were also open air booths for the armaments that are out door in use by nature. The China's booth is at 66, Israel is at 67 and the Philippines is at 68. China has six Dragon Tribe members manning 1st booth while Israel has seven and the Philippines has eight.

Cameras were put in place to see the movements, actions and reactions of the people on those three booths. The special guards were also instructed to focus on the three booths that the Defence Industry has put together. In no time the Israelis and the Dragon Offspring collide in the mind the first time when they saw each other. They cannot explain their dislike with each other although their countries have good diplomatic relationship.

Representatives from Germany, Japan, Iran and Russia were also asked to view what will happen to the contact of the Israelis and the offspring of the Dragon. But they kept it from the Americans, the Britons, or to the countries that are members of the Commonwealth of Nations. While they were watching, from upper part that was enclosed in a glass, they have seen the clash of the eyes of the first time encounter of the two peoples. Then they finally clashed and have a fistfight. The Israelis were at the losing end because they are shorter and thinner than the Dragon tribe members. But there is a seemingly prophetic behavior that the offspring of the serpent have. They are trying to break the legs of the Israelis. The Philippine delegation then arrived and they were trying to separate the two but they were unable. And finally the Dragon tribe members attacked the Philippine delegation. Then the fistfight continued, Philippines joining the side of the Israelis. They are now ganging up on the Dragon tribe members but they cannot hurt them seriously because they are huge than the two combined. Then suddenly one of the Israelis, Avraham Asimov, was able to get a butt of a gun on display and he hit one of the Dragon tribe member on the head and then it bleed profusely. Then the guards arrived and separated the three groups to the stop the commotions that have taken the attention of the whole participants in the armaments show.

Up in the viewing area, the representatives of Germany and other nations were happy and amazed to what happened. You see, they say, that the prophecy is real. They clash the time that they meet even before physically, their minds are not attuned to each other. There is a natural dis-affinity between them. But only Germany and Russia were able to notice the behaviors of the three groups in fighting. The Israelis and the Filipinos were targeting the heads of the Dragon Tribes while the Dragon Tribes were targeting the feet and legs of the two groups.

'What do you think, whispered the German representative to the Russian representative, will they get along?'

'No, I do not think so. There is a natural dislike between the two people. Did you notice how they fought each other?' asked the Russian representative, I mean the fighting styles?'

'Of course,' said the German to the Russian, 'it is better to have them play soccer or volleyball and I know that the Dragon Tribe might not win.' Hahaha. And this is the prophecy:

*Hardships in plenty beset the virtuous man,
but Yahweh rescues him from them all;
taking of every bone,
Yahweh will not let one be broken.* – Psalm 34: 19 - 20

The Americans were invited but did not participate in the armaments show. They are not selling to the watchers anyway so they missed the opportunity to see the Dragon tribe members. But the commotions and the fist fight reached their ears since the Israelis told them. 'The United States told the Israelis to request the security videos to see as to who are these tall people with blonde hairs who were manning the booth of the Chinese. They were not Chinese, do not you think? Asked the Americans to the Israelis. The Israelis replied that they were not and they could be of another race, in fact the language used in the booth was not even Chinese. It is a sort of another thing. We do not know what these are so far, not Arabic, nor Hindu, nor Baybayin, nor Aztec. Their writings are different, sent the Israelis to the Americans.

The Chinese did not provide the security videos that were requested by the Israelis and the Filipinos. Those who were involved in the fight were submitted to investigations by the Chinese authorities. First it was the Police who investigated then their Secret service aided by the PLA Military Intelligence.

'Why were you hostile to the Chinese delegates?' the Chinese military intelligence questioning Avraham Asimov.

'Look, we were talking but we cannot understand each other's languages then suddenly they hit us on the legs and feet,' said the Israeli.

'And with that you retaliated with a butt of a gun?' Asked one of the investigators.

'Look again, they are big and sturdy, what can we do? We did not start the quarrel,' replied Avraham Asimov. 'If you think that you invited us here to maltreat us you are gravely mistaken. They are staffing your booth and diplomatically we are in good relationship with you. Why would China do that to us? This was the first time that it happened to us. Only in Iran would we be treated like this. They do not look like they are Chinese. Was it a trap?'

'What else happened?' Asked the investigator, I mean in your mind?'

'In my mind? That is not your concern,' said the Israeli.

'In China,' said the investigator, 'everything is our concern, your beliefs and even your soul and spirit.'

'But you do not believe in such at least officially. How could you have a concern for that?' Replied the Israeli.

'Okay the one that is in your mind, we would like to know it? Pressed the investigator.

However, the Israeli would not say anything, and then the investigation concluded for the Israelis. They now called the Filipinos and questioned them about the event. But they could not get any relevant information except that they were participants in the fistfight. There is nothing to say except that those angelic looking people are tall and speak different language rather than Chinese.

'It seemed you were the ones that should be investigated. You invited us here and yet you mistreat us? Asked the Filipinos.

'How dare you accuse us,' retorted the Chinese, 'anyway, we will have one last question. What comes into your mind when you first saw them?'

'Well, they were like gods to us but seemed to be of sinister ones, children of angels,' replied one of the Filipinos. 'Would you let us go now?'

'Okay, we will turn you over to the event management and then they will bring you to your embassy in Beijing,' explained one of the investigators.

'That was far and we think that is not necessary,' replied the Filipinos.

'No, the Chinese authorities will give you private transportation and will send you back to Shanghai. All will be well with you. Besides, it was your embassy that requested that you be brought to them. So, have a safe trip,' said the investigator as parting words.

The Filipinos then obeyed the authorities in China. Could they not do anything in China against the authorities? None. So they better follow them and think that they will be safe. Besides, Chinese authorities are lenient to foreigners in their country, especially to Asians.

The transportations that were used were all made in China and very much safe and comfortable. The Chinese were not taking it personally. They are now professionals. Westerners like that much, being business like. It took them sometime before they reached Beijing. In Beijing, it used to have terrible smog but the authorities have improved the air condition a lot and they can now tell that Beijing is an excellent city. Although the traffic is the same ten years ago but being in a diplomatic vehicles give the Filipinos some leeway to go faster than the usual pace of cars ahead and behind them.

CHAPTER XXXIII

PHILIPPINE EMBASSY IN BEIJING, CHINA THE BLACK ARMY ARMAMENTS

Finally they reached their destination: Philippine Embassy in Beijing, China. For them, this was the first time that they reached the place. The Embassy place was simple but clean and the guards were Chinese. Inside the Embassy, Filipinos and Chinese can be seen doing many things for the day. The Filipinos from the armaments show then were ushered to the Ambassadors office.

Outside of the office of the Ambassador is a Filipino secretary: 'Kumusta kayo? Sad naman to what happened at the armaments show. Sino ba ang nagsimula? (How are you? It was sad to what happened at the armaments show. Who started it?).

Filipinos then said: 'That they should let it pass. A hurting leg and a cut in the head that did not consummate into a dead person should be settled diplomatically, amicably. We are here and the Israelis are there in Shanghai but the Chinese delegates could not be seen. This seemed to be quite unusual.'

Then the lady ambassador called the Filipinos in. 'How are you guys? Anong nangyari bakit nagkagulo? (What happened why there was a mess?) Said the lady ambassador.

'It was the Chinese and the Israelis. It was spontaneous Ma'am, we cannot do anything since they cannot be separated.'

In the Ambassador's table there was a wooden name tag that said: Maria Leticia M. Alemar – Lee.

'So you must be married to a Chinese in the Philippines,' Said one of the Filipinos.

'Do not worry about that, I am a Filipino. I was raised in Tondo and studied in Public Schools until I graduated from University of the Philippines. I understand the Filipinos.'

But the Filipinos would not speak to her much. They remain to their previous statement that the commotion happened spontaneously. They just find themselves on the side of the Israelis. But the ambassador knew that her people should be given refreshment or anything to relax them. A sweet tea and Italian food were given to the visitors. Then the conversation continued, this time effortlessly. But the Filipinos could not recall much of what happened they can only talk about the part that they participated. Perhaps the Israelis have given their statements. What about the Chinese? Or, are they really Chinese?

The Lady Ambassador could not give answers to the questions for she was not privy to what happened. Perhaps they can read it on the newspapers. The Filipinos then requested that videos of the scene should be provided to the Filipino delegates, unedited. But the Ambassador said that it will be difficult to get such security videos, especially in China.

‘But we are party to the scenes and that entitles us to see it,’ said one of the Filipinos.

‘Things are different here in China and you should know that,’ replied the Ambassador.

The eight Filipinos agreed and they told the ambassador that they will let it pass, although they want to know about those “sons of angels.”

“Sons of angels? as if the Ambassador is mesmerized after a night of sleep.

‘Yes, Ma’am. We have been used to the sons of gods in our country and these ones did not escape our notice.’ ‘You know ma’am, those who use the table utensils and those who do not. We just have to admit it to ourselves there were superior people than us and obviously these were the ones,’ explained the Filipinos.

‘And why did you find yourselves on the other side? Do you feel inferior? Replied the Ambassador.

Not at all Ma’am, the cause of the Israelis were just, besides we were there to separate the two groups but it seemed the Chinese delegates were more aggressive. And when that is the case they were the ones to be stopped. And while the commotion and fist fight are happening we have to use force.

And that was to the “sons of gods,” said Ambassador Lee.

‘Or you just hate the Chinese?’ Teasingly said by Ambassador Lee.

‘Not at all Ma’am, in fact we were fascinated by the beauty of the sons of gods while the Israelis were known to us since we have invited them once to our place in the Philippines. The security videos, you have to see them unedited,’ replied the Filipinos.

‘So that’s the reason. You’ve been friends to the Israelis prior to this?’ reasoned Ambassador Lee to the Filipinos.

‘Look Ma’am, for us Filipinos and the Israelis these were just by chance we do not know about the Chinese. They were the ones who arranged the booths.’

‘Okay. So you were in the middle of this. Remember, Chinese authorities are different here than in the Philippines or in America. We are lucky the Chinese are our

regional leader and they are lenient to Asians, just do not bring illegal drugs here and unlicensed firearms,' reminded the Ambassador.

Then the Ambassador told them that they can now leave her office and if they want they can go round Beijing before she sends them back to Shanghai. The eight agreed that they will go round the city and find out the beauty of Beijing.

While they were going round they notice the best restaurants of Beijing. They decided to eat and they enjoyed the delicious meals that the Chinese served them. [Although as they were eating they could not hide their dismay to each other, with regard to what happened.] They were there in the fair show to see what are new in the armaments industry then here they are eating in Beijing and not in Shanghai. The group continued to round Beijing and bought something that they can bring to the Philippines without customs duties. Perhaps it was about time to change some of the gadgets but they were hesitant.

'Let's rather buy Samsung ones at least we are safe. Hahaha! Were in the Defence Industry and that should make us wary of our communications,' said one of the Filipinos.

Isagani, one of the Filipinos said: 'Well the Israelis won in that skirmish. Hahaha! The Chinese were inept in the hand to hand combat and seemed to be having difficulty in immediately recognizing things that can be used in the environment. The Israelis were well trained.'

After rounding some part of Beijing they then decided to go back to the Philippine Embassy. Isagani said that they should communicate with the event management in Shanghai. 'They have to secure our armaments and make sure that there is nothing missing. Our rifles and hand guns are expensive, our salaries are not enough to pay for those.'

But one of his colleagues, Evander Alberto said that: 'I accounted them before we left and I turned it over to the event management custody. Have to trust me on this. The Chinese have no interest in our armaments, they are expensive. Though they can, of course, afford. They will go for their own or the Europeans'.'

Then they talked about other brands that were in the gun show. They of course believe in theirs but there were truly superior ones.

'The Black Army has good releases of rifles. Assault rifles and hand guns in the show. I was looking but I was not able to see some,' Isagani said, 'they were very expensive. They seemed to be back in the Defence Industry.'

'It is okay if they were effective and efficient in their intended results,' retorted Gary Palma. 'Black Army products have made a name in the last thirty years that they have been into the market. Israelis, Germans, Great Britain, Canada, most eastern European countries and Australia were some of those who purchased from them. They were made in Croatia one of the best now in the world,' shared Gary.

'But Black Army as an army name did not actually come from Croatia, it came from Hungary,' continued Gary. 'Croatia then, I can say borrowed the spirit of the Black Army.' 'Only Hungary owns the Black Army royalty, it was Matthias Corvinus who actually made it possible in that place but they have to disband after winning many battles because of the lack of funds,' knowingly said by Gary Palma.

'Why do not you read the history of Black Army and you will see the truth of the matter. Black Army and Matthias Corvinus continued to live in the spirit of the people and in their minds that have had contact with them. There is something captivating to this Black Army name.' 'There is Black Army in our hometown but they were more of fashion wears and not metal hard wares like guns. But just like the guns in the show they only release beautiful ones,' said Isagani while helping Gary Palma to explain the Black Army.

While they were conversing about the Black Army they then realized that they were already in front of the Philippine Embassy building. They went inside and greeted the Secretary who already knew them. And then she said to them:

'O, ayos na? (All is okay now?). 'Madam Ambassador fixed the mess that you did in Shanghai.' She continued.

'We did the mess?' Isagani softly questioned the Secretary. 'Excuse me Ms. Secretary. Be diplomatic to us your people. We have been polite like the Vatican with them all throughout. Embassy in Beijing is unbelievable! You are unbelievable. Ma'am Secretary.'

'Then the Secretary said that the Ambassador is inviting you to Ambassador Residence there you can sleep in the Filipino People Quarter. Then the eight proceeded to the Ambassador Residence to the right of the Embassy building. The residence was spacious and clean. There were gardeners doing the cleaning and trimming the plants. There were also maids in uniform.

'Ah, I am seeing the colonial times again of the Filipinos, this time in a mansion in Beijing.' Hahaha! Teases Isagani to his colleagues.

'Don't laugh. All embassies are like this. You have to consider the stature of the Embassy Officials they are our representative to the international arena. Sort of: "Arena of the sons or children of God". Here they do the Histories of their people and of the world. They are the vanguard of Civilization. Without them the Cold war of the 20th Century will not be cold war and if then at that time it became a hot war, we may not be here anymore. So these Ambassadors should be given due credit,' explained Gary Palma with some infuriation in his tone.

Then they went inside the Filipino People Quarter. These were bungalow type residences enough for one Family each. There were four of them in the compound. So the group of eight used just two of the residences. After all they will just be there in one night then they will return to Shanghai. As they continue to converse the SCO meeting in Baku, Azerbaijan did not escape their notice.

Isagani said: 'There seemed to be something that China and Russia are cooking in Central Asia. What do you think is their target?' Saying these with wry smile.

Gary then Said: 'They are building international coalitions to fight the "terrorism menace" and illegal drug problem in the areas they want to operate. You know the opium of Afghanistan.'

'You mean they will operate in cross border fashion now?' said Isagani.

'Of course you have to know that those were cloak for covert operations. Ala CIA,' explained Gary. 'They already crossed the border of one of the nations in the Middle East, Yemen. There the Iranians took the lead and they brought one thousand strong force without insignias and assaulted the government palace.'

'What happened?' Asked Isagani.

"They were repelled with the help of the Saudis but that was a strong statement to the nations around them that they can mount such operations. Remember the Abbottabad in Pakistan. How the United States Navy Seals Team Six stormed the place of the head of Al Qaida and killed him,' shared Gary. 'And that was without casualty from the team of the US Navy Seals. They are being copied by SCO.'

'Who was the President of the US then?' Asked Isagani.

'It was Obama, sort of a black president. Yeah, it was Obama. I forgot the first name,' Gary still remembering the first name of the black president.

Then the group decided to sleep.

In Beijing the city is noisy just like in any other noisy cities of the world. They are now twenty million people in the city. Beijing was expanded to accommodate more people. They intentionally did it so that they can surpass the city of Shanghai in population. The Government of China not only wants Beijing to be the seat of power but also of the seat of economic might. And in twenty years they were able to achieve such status. There were large migrations from the rural areas that Beijing was like two cities combined in just that small time period, within one generation.

The next day the group then say farewell wishes to their Ambassador: 'Next time have a booth next to the Americans or the Canadian or the better yet the Australians,' kid the Ambassador to them.

The eight took a mini bus to airport then they boarded Airbus A320 XAX. The Airbus was spacious and comfortable. They do not need so much legs rooms since they were just around 6'0" feet tall. The legs rooms were actually made for the size of the Caucasians and the Chinese did not add additional seats to the original design of the French. After some

hours of flight they then reached Shanghai. And in Shanghai, the local police were alerted on their arrival and they were carefully appraised and looked on. Cameras and eyes were on them. The incidence in the armaments show was still fresh in the minds of the authorities besides there were instructions from the PLA Intelligence to carefully look at the group of the Philippine delegates and the Israelis. They cannot let these chances go to see the experiment without intervention from the observers, and they realized that the prophecy could really be true.

Then in Shanghai, the Filipinos and the Israelis meet and discuss the request for video and about the identities of the six persons that were staffing the booth of the Chinese. 'The Americans are into it,' said Avraham Asimov, ' they can make sense of this.'

'Did you notice the Germans up in the observers' room?' Asked the Filipinos.

'We saw them and they are looking at as but we cannot really know what they were talking,' said one of the Israelis.

'The Russians were talking to them too. There must be something to all of these,' doubted Gary.

Then the Israelis said farewell to the Filipinos.

At this time the Filipinos or the Philippines have been well respected in the intelligence community of the world because it has millions of workers worldwide, covering Brunei, Australia up to Siberia.

The Filipinos then decided to pack too and go home. The one week armaments show was over for them. They cannot go on because of the incident.

CHAPTER XXXIV

AT THE OVAL OFFICE, WHITE HOUSE, WASHINGTON D.C.

The President of the United States Johnson Cummins is once again can be seen and heard talking to the telephone. This time it is still with the Prime Minister of India.

'Mr. Prime Minister my people will be there next week to sign the agreement as regards the requests that you have made from us. It was clear now to us that in case of hostilities you will be on our side. This will surely be a game changer for SCO to seriously consider,' said the President.

'Mr. President, with all due respect we would like to make this public so that all those that planning the Megiddon, Armageddon or whatever it is will surely think their foolishness,' replied the Prime Minister still in disbelief with the Christians, pagans and the Muslims. 'Israelis are again the victims here. When will this stop? This madness against the Israelis.'

'The Israelis as you know are proud people,' explained the President, 'and their neighbors do not like that.'

'Proud, pride or whatever it is are none of their business. As I read the news and intelligence coming from our sources said that as always, the Israelis are victims of terrorism. Whether in Israel or abroad and that is a terrible unlivable situation for them. Remember Pakistan? How they coddled the terrorists and your Navy Seals had to violate their borders. That is where is India is coming from too. That's why we have to declare this in public. We cannot afford to be a tamed Elephant afraid of mice,' explained the Prime Minister.

'I understand Mr. Prime Minister,' replied the President. 'And who are the mice then?' 'Pakistan and those terrorists being cuddled by their Military Intelligence?' Put forward by the President. 'I understand, I understand,' said the President with caring emotions. 'We are together in this Mr. Prime Minister.'

The Prime Minister again asked the Permission of the President to excuse him because the delegation of the Vatican is here in the Palace and he has to meet them. 'We will talk about the Christians, I mean the Sudras of our society.'

They then put down the telephones. The President then again picked up another phone this time local. 'Hello Jinky, kindly call Mike Hancock, I have to talk to him about the US delegation to New Delhi next week.'

'No problem Mr. President, I will call him now,' replied the secretary.

SECRETARY OF DEFENSE OFFICE

The Phone rang then Michelle Ambrose picked up the phone. 'Hello, office of the Secretary of Defense. Who is on the other line please?'

'Mitch, this is Jinky, the President would want to talk to the Secretary of Defense.'

Mike then took the transferred telephone call to his desk. 'SecDef here, Jinky, what can I do for you?'

'The President wants to talk to you. Can you please come over here,' Said Jinky.

THE OVAL OFFICE, THE WHITE HOUSE

Then the Secretary of Defence went to the oval office and talked to the President. But before he could talk the President said: 'Mike who are the Sudras or what is a sudra?'

'Sudras? As in S-u-d-r-a-s? Sudras? Replied Mike Hancock.

'Yes,' replied the President inquiring.

'Ahmm. Sir, they are the lowest caste in India. As you know the Indians have caste system and the sudras are the laborers and many of those who have lowest educational attainment and mean jobs,' explained Mike Hancock having scant knowledge about India.

'Ah, okay. But that is not the reason why I asked you to be here. I want you to go to India next week and not next month together with the delegation of Jenny. I also want you to release press statements about our defense deal with India. At least we can delay the Armageddon of the SCO and give time for our economy to recuperate and Israel to prepare. Let us pray that the Lord Jesus Christ comes,' ordered the President to the Secretary of Defense.

'And what if He does not come our dear President?' Replied Mike Hancock respectfully.

'That's why we have to prepare.' As the saying goes: "Luck is when preparation meets opportunity," said the President. 'Mike we cannot delay. China does not delay they are no longer the turtle that world leaders used to say,' Shared the President to Mike Hancock. 'Give the press statements to VOA, CNN, BBC, IBS and kindly include Russia Today.'

'Why Russia Today [RT]? Inquired the Secretary of Defence.

'We need to give legitimacy to our press statements to the SCO. For them RT is the most reliable International Press aside from Al Jazeera. At least a lot better than Pravda,' sway the president to the Defense Secretary.

'By the way, in the intelligence digest, I would like to dig deeper into the incident in Shanghai. The Israelis and the Filipinos have more about this. Who are those six people that were not Chinese looking and the calligraphy, have you had a lead? asked the President of the United States.

'They are not of this world. Sort of alien in nature according to some of our people in the Universities, not American Indians nor Aztec nor Peruvian nor Egyptians nor Europeans. All are different. But we have got something from the communications of the Germans and the Chinese. But it seemed they are scholarly in nature. Yin-Yang and angels, those stuff. It will be the scope Pravda newspaper,' said Mike Hancock while chuckling.

'But they are real Mike.' said the President. Of course we still have to look into it. Where can you find people of that kind in this planet? Germans? Or the Vikings?

Secretary of Defense Mike Hancock politely asked their President.
'What will be our priority Mr. President, Sir, the deal with India or those angelic looking beings?'

'Both, let's make teams for both. The Chinese are into something with those angelic beings. While we have to make sure that we are into politics of Defense,' said the President.

'Thank you Mr. President, I will make these both possible, the Angelic beings and the Defense Cooperation with India. I will assign a Lawyer in the angelic beings to give us more pessimistic view. By the way, Sir, I will be talking to Jenny about the delegation to India. We'll arrange this. I will let Atty. Howard handle the Press Statements about the arms technology transfers to India. He drafted the papers so he knows the details of this.'

May I now be excused, Sir, Mr. President lots of pending stuff to do,' requested Mike Hancock. Thereafter President Johnson Cummins excused him.

SECRETARY OF DEFENSE OFFICE

When the Secretary of Defense returned to his office Undersecretary Howard Burton is still there working. He knows that he is included in the delegates for India thus he is preparing things for the event. Under this situation that Michael Hancock talked to him.

'Excuse Howard, there are stuff we have to look into, ASAP, Top Secret from the President. Three things: First, you are included in the delegation as you know but now I

have to be there also. Second, before we leave, since everything has been prepared, you are to look into what happened in China. Not only the fistfight between the Israelis, the Filipinos versus the Chinese Delegates, you now have to know as to the identity of those of the Chinese side.'

As introduction there were communications intercepted between the Chinese and the Germans, they seemed to be scholarly in nature. You were chosen to head this because you are secular in outlook and we can trust you in this.

Third, the Press Release to VOA, CNN, BBC, IBS and RT about the transfers of Defense Technologies to India. We will make it overt. By the way, they are here in a note so that you will not forget. And thank you in advance,' requested the Secretary of Defense.

Howard Replied: 'Okay the press release is easy. The preparation for India was done yesterday. The angelic thing is somewhat problematic with me. I do not believe in them.'

There are two emails that you can start with; one from China, and the other from Germany. It says there about the chromosome of those "angelic beings to be 48". And that is not human. Humans have 46 chromosomes and to have 47 is being abnormal. Do you get me on this? There were also about the ruined structures that were discovered in China. Can you also look into it. It says Bronze Age or 17th Century the oldest. Those are what we have and also the videos we intercepted from the Chinese. Our satellite is scouting the area near the plateau in Yellow River and there were activities of the People's Liberation Army in the area for quite a time now. There were helicopters scouring the area and they are transferring these "angelic beings".' Said Michael Hancock and then gave to Howard a DVD device wherein all the files were there.

'I need to go, said the Secretary of Defense, 'there is a game in the NBA tonight and I will be there. You know the Wizards. By the way, that should be a team effort.'

'Yeah you can go and I will stay here late,' replied Howard.

Howard then looked at the files inside the DVD device. He was skeptic about the contents but since they were taken clandestinely and that the PLA was into it this must be something.

Inside the files he can see the beauty of the subject beings and how they behave. They are quite tall and blonde and wide bodied. 'Wow! These specimens can only be seen in Germany and in the Viking Islands or the so called Nephilim of Genesis,' said Howard to himself. 'How come they have 48 chromosomes? We must have a hold on to these people. We have to make sure,' said again to himself.

Then the Undersecretary made some notes and observations on the videos and the emails, then the event in the armaments show in Shanghai, he said to himself, 'were related.' 'There they are in action.'

He took notice of what the Germans have said about the structures and the study of Dr. Aldrech Robinson. There you are in our competitors' soils China and Iran. He was reading the write ups in the internet. Then he looked for trusted sites that the Americans and allied were maintaining and looked for the name Dr. Aldrech Robinson. And there were series of inputs to that name. And afterward he found the right one that says many things about the topic at hand. They are somewhat related to the Nephilim of the book of Genesis. They also have the same scripts in writings with the ones in China. They are somewhat related or obviously related. They must have come from the same source. But how that happened that they are not located too in India? India is in between China and Iran? Questioning himself. The only difference was that the structures in Iran were complete and the ones in China were incomplete.

Are they ruins or are they incomplete? He said to himself. He enlarged the pictures to look more into the structures and he can see that there were no debris in the China structures. They must be unfinished ones. Then as he goes on reading the papers about the subjects there were already translations in Iran. It says: Dragon City or City of Devils. Hmm. What could this mean? ***This must be a mistranslation.*** They are actually angelic in looks the City of Devils. How could this be? He thinks to himself again.

Then he looked again into the write ups about the Nephilim. And he got was that they were very similar. Only that the Nephilim were more human now and no longer very much different than their angelic counterparts. These 48 chromosome beings therefore were new on earth and not in Biblical eras. The 17th Century could be true or 18th, 17th the oldest. He then again compared the people. 98% IQ over 100. Hmmm. They must be something special. And their scripts are the intriguing ones, not of this world,' Howard murmurs to himself.

'Why are they more in Iran than China? Could this be the completion of the city and incompleteness of the other city? There were many questions that came into his mind but they could not be answered for now. The best thing with these issues at hand is to create a team that will handle this in scholarly fashion and deal with China and Iran. There could be no other way to do this than in cooperation with the Iranians and the Chinese. That was the suggestion he will make to the higher ups. He will talk to universities in the United States. Then another discovery that he was able to make was that the structures were sort of made by the so called "Guitara de San Miguel"? And there in one of the walls was a figure of an outstretched winged angel with a guitar. The myth could then be true?

Then he emailed some contacts in the Universities with specialization in archaeology and anthropology. He knew of one from Harvard University. Dr. Vince Malloy. Before he left the office he immediately emailed the University Professor who has doctorate in anthropology. There could none be better than this guy as far as he knows. And here is his secured email.

Dear Prof. Vince Malloy:

How are you Sir?

Would like to refer a finding to you.

I have here a case about some people in China and Iran with 48 chromosomes. These are abnormalities as far as we know with the chromosomes but the subjects or specimens are seemingly normal in my estimation.

They look like not the Chinese nor the Iranians. They have blonde hairs and their average heights are at 6'6". Could they be of another race that we have to look into?

They have been into oblivion except in these last few months and the Chinese have surfaced them in an armaments show in Shanghai just recently. There was a commotion and fistfight between them and the Israelis and the Filipinos but the details about what happened was scant and the security videos of the Chinese were not available. They were keeping something to themselves. The Israelis and the Filipinos knew something. [It was sort of a discussion between the Germans and the Russians while the two groups were into the fistfight with the people of this Tribe.] By the way, these tribes were also called Dragon Tribes by the Germans.

Perhaps we can talk to the Germans as regards these and find out what they got. They are good in the myth and match things. The Nazis were very much affected by this and they have handed down the knowledge to many Germans when they were finally defeated in World War II. But according to some, there were still remnants of the Nazis who study matters like this.

Hoping to read an immediate reply from you on this.

Sincerely and kind regards,

Howard Burton
Undersecretary of Defense
United States of America

cc: Mike Hancock

CHAPTER XXXV

INSIDE THE UNITED STATES OFFICIAL AIRPLANE GOING TO INDIA

The people inside the plane were discussing the agreements that they will be signing together with their counterparts. On the sideline of the arrangements on the airplane: There the Secretary of Defense and Undersecretary are talking about the Dragon Tribe. 'What do we got so far?' inquired the Secretary of Defense to Howard Burton.

'Well, there seemed to be involved of something magical. To this I do not want to believe but the inscriptions are there on the walls. An outstretched wings of an angel playing a guitar while there were some walls being built. I would rather have the scholars handle this than the defense department. We would rather be on the support group and just get the information that are relevant to national security,' suggested Howard Burton to Michael Hancock. 'I emailed, as I see fit, Professor Vince Malloy of Harvard University college of Anthropology. I hope he already has a reply. By the way, I put you on carbon copy email, Sir.

'Okay then, we'll get on this and report to the President about this,' Replied Michael Hancock.

'And, yeah, I got your email,' continued Mike Hancock.

Jenny Brewsters was busy reviewing the papers on her lap. She would want to make sure about the deals. At least the deal on the Defense side is now being handled by the Department of Defense and no longer by her, No more covert operations in the agreement with India. Then she suddenly asked Michael Hancock about the Defense Deal. The Defense Secretary was a bit generous to Jenny when it comes to information.

'Well, we have to have a footing in the Far East and that would mean we have to have India because she is a natural ally. China has gobbled up South China Sea and even the far away Benham Rise in North East of the Philippines has been declared by China to be hers. There seem to be no stopping with what China wants and she's getting them,' shared the Defense Secretary.

Jenny assured the Secretary of Defense, 'There was a time before when China were saying that the world was too big for both of us but now it seems the world is not enough.'

'The world is really not enough for us and them. Europe said there should only be one to remain as a leading superpower and that means we have to retain that power. ***"The Law of the Jungle says that China must get the power from us or they are not legitimate***

Power in the world. "It is no longer true that China and Russia cannot alter the balance of power. In one of the Association of South East Asian Nation [ASEAN] meetings conducted in Malaysia, the President was not well received while the Chinese and Russian Presidents were well entertained. The world is different now. We cannot seem to be the United States of thirty years ago. We were challenged in all arenas by these Asian powers. We need Europe this time the Latins too. Again in Asia there are odd men out and now they are three: Israel is number one, Philippines is number two and now we are making India as number three. The world is more complex now than what our predecessors have left us. 20th Century was the time when we toppled the USSR and now it seemed it is China and Russia who are doing the same thing to us,' explained the Secretary of Defense Mike Hancock.

Jenny was attentively listening to the Defense Secretary. Ah. These are spy games again. But how good will they be this time? We do not know? The Cold War warriors were too old to join now, these guys are now the new spy warriors. Mike seemed to be one of the best if not the best. 'Just a saying by Saint Paul: Is it hard to kick against the goad?' You cannot fight heaven is the only answer here. This time Jenny Brewster is thinking as a Born Again Christian. For her or at least in the preaching of their Pastor Armageddon is real and it is happening in the higher ups as she is preparing to deliver the agreement to India.

Then Jenny asked Mike, 'Mike, there seemed to be development in Europe as regards a new Weapon of Mass Destruction [WMD]?'

Mike answered that it was perfected at CERN Laboratory in Europe [Geneva, Switzerland]. The Europeans were able to collide and perfect the process of getting the so called "God Particle" [The start of creation of the Big Bang Theory]. But Germany immediately objected to weaponize the material. The Pope would, perhaps want it for Europe, but Germany has a veto power of its own that the Pope would rather not want to openly challenge, at least in the continent, it is still France who has the say with regard to WMD. Great Britain has enough nuclear weapons to be able to obliterate any nation on the planet if it wishes to. So in Europe they were the two of them France and Great Britain. They were then protected enough from the Iranians but not from the Russians.

NEW DELHI INDIA

Then finally the airplane landed in New Delhi the capital of India. There they can see the Foreign Affairs Secretary of India waiting for them and that a red carpet arrival was given them. Jenny was overwhelmed with the reception. They were like rock stars when they were walking on the red carpet. There were lots of press people getting pictures and news channels getting videos. VOA was there, CNN, BBC and India Broadcasting Service [IBS], RT and many other local channels. The news feed of the previous week and days had finally arrived and sunk in into the minds of the people of India and the whole world. Imagine the United States transferring defence technologies to India. The most coveted by India were the missile defence and offense. Obviously many will be used in the Himalayas.

Then their US Embassy staff came to them and for they were the ones who know the itineraries and the programs ahead. The delegates were not familiar with the itinerary and there was no time to read and rehearse them so they let the embassy people handle them. They will always be led by their embassy people all throughout their stay in India, and this is something that is perfect for them for there are many other things in their minds as they are in India. The Defence Minister of India welcomed Michael Hancock and his delegation. They shook hands tightly and smiled to each other while the press keeps on taking pictures and videos. This is the ecstasy of Being Defense Secretary just short of winning a major war or getting Osama Bin Laden. This was Michael Hancock's moment.

After a brief time for the press; the Minister of Defence Jehul Ajalu then ushered the Defense Secretary for lunch break. The American side have no problem with the food that were being served to them but obviously there were no beef menus on the table. While eating Michael Hancock and Jehul Ajalu were talking about the contents of the Defense Agreement. 'We would like to have the best that the United States can offer with us as regards the armaments. As you know, our status is different than of the Philippines though it is now a very big concern for you there,' says Jehul Ajalu to the Defense Secretary of the United States.

'Defence Minister Jehul Ajalu, kindly understand that the times are foreboding of something colossus. We know how advanced the Russian Armaments now. After food security this is their second highest priority and with that focus they have achieved the armament status that they want. Their missile systems are so advanced that as you can know the Brahmos Missiles that you once had have to be replaced by what we are providing you in the contract. These are sixth generation missiles, we will provide 20 mach the minimum speed, and it has an accuracy a one hundred percent on nonmoving targets, 99.99% on land moving targets and 97% on air moving targets at any speed slower than them. These are our state of the art in terms of missile systems. Why would the US give you something if you'll lose an advantage when the fact is we are also relying on you?' replied the US Defense Secretary.

'Thank you for that Mr. Secretary. The Indian people will forever be grateful to you for sharing these technologies to us. We cannot allow any inch of our territory to be eaten by any of our neighbors,' replied Defence Minister Jehul Ajalu.

After eating their lunch the two groups then took some rest before returning to work. They then again went to the press room for the press briefing. In the press room there were many press people covering the whole world. There was India Broadcasting Service [IBS], CNN, BBC, CBC, ABC, RT and many other local press stations. Cameras keep on rolling and flashing, the lights almost blinding the Government Officials of both countries. Then the moderator asked for lull in the flashing of cameras and asked for silence. The two defence officials were standing at the podium one on the left and one on the right.

The Moderator, Vemina Singh, beautiful woman from the Press Secretary of the Office of the Prime Minister. She has been in that position for long and considered to be effective in handling international press: 'Good afternoon Ladies and Gentlemen, we are here for a press briefing in regards to the defense agreements that our countries had made. The first to ask is from India Broadcasting Service Theresa Indira.

Theresa Indira was named after a Catholic Nun who was made Saint by the Church in 2016 - The Nun was revered all throughout India during her lifetime and afterwards. Though far from the looks of the saint; Theresa Indira is beautiful Indian woman, with a long black hair who works for the IBS for quite some time now.

'Thank you very much. I address this to Defense Secretary Hancock. Mr. Secretary, as you know, India and China have border disputes in the Himalayas and India with Pakistan in Kashmir, are these transfers of Defence Technologies to India connected to it?' asked Theresa Indira.

'Hmm. (Mike Clears throat) As you know, the transfers of defense technologies has been long in the making, the United States only want peace to prevail in the region or for the whole world for that matter. We believe that this region should not become volatile and be home to destabilization in any way whatsoever. India is a friendly nation so does the United States. The United States believe that freedom of navigation in the Indian Ocean and the Persian Gulf must remain open for all and Himalayas should be open for exploration by all and these will only happen with strong Indian State that is equipped,' explained the Secretary of Defense.

'Follow up question, still for the Mr. Secretary. Sir, will these transfer of defence technologies will also forge a Defence Alliance like what you have with United Kingdom of Great Britain, NATO, Canada, Australia, etc... or the ones with the Philippines and Vietnam in the form of Visiting Forces Agreement [VFA]? Thank you very much,' questioned Theresa Indira as she smiled to the Mike Hancock.

Mike Hancock smiled back then said this reply: 'The President of the United States and the Indian Prime Minister had talked about a sort of Visiting Forces Agreement with yearly training exercises calendar in advanced. I, together with my counterpart and with the joint-chiefs-of-staff have been working on the details. We are targeting next year to be a start of the military exercises. We will focus on humanitarian assistance and evacuations during calamities.'

Then the press people can be seen raising their hands requesting to be called by the moderator. But all in all they are not unruly but polite.

Vemina Singh: 'Carla Higgins from CNN. You may now ask from the persons at the podium.'

Carla Higgins was a graduate from Yale University and has a bachelor's Degree in Journalism while she also has a Law Degree. She is beautiful with long blonde hair and blue

eyes. She wears a fatigue green blazers with black long sleeves inside and black pencil cut pants. She stands about 5 feet 7 inches.

'My question is with for Mr. Secretary as she was smiling to Mike Hancock. 'Hmmm (Carla Higgins clearing her throat), Mr. Secretary, if the VFA will happen next year where will the military hardware come from? And follow up question: Are you going to set up defense manufacturing plants here in India, do you think that will pass the US Congress? Thank you Mr. Secretary.

Mike Hancock straightly answered the questions so far but this one he did not give all the details. 'Carla Higgins, right? Asked Mike Hancock.

'Yes, Sir, Mr. Secretary of Defense,' snappy answer by Ms. Carla Higgins. 'Then she asked as where are the next destinations of the Secretary of Defense.'

'We all know that we already have given the press release prior to this. The Military Hardware that will be used for next year VFA will come from both countries. The United States will provide 50 pieces of Eagle VFA26s, a rotor aircraft airlift. These behemoths are successors to the Osprey V22 rotor airlifts. The sizes of these Eagle VFA26s are twice their predecessors in everything, from tonnage capacity up to flying time range. This must be a huge evacuation exercises since India is prone to typhoons and other calamities like earthquakes.

In regards to the second question: Yes, we will put up defense manufacturing facilities here in India. Around 20 of them and more on the missile systems, we expect them to have their output in 16 months. American managers and technicians will be here to oversee the putting up of the plants and on running them on daily basis. On matters with Congress, well, the Defense Department will be pushing it hard so let us cross our fingers that it will be approved by both Houses,' explained Mike Hancock to the whole press people in front of them.

'As regards the destinations; we'll be in the Philippines after this then to South Korea.'

Vemina Singh: 'Rafael Disraeli, from BBC.

Rafael Disraeli has been with BBC for quite a long time, 20 years. And he has been their Defence Analysts and reporter at the same time. He is now at his mid-forties and still very much active in reporting and book writing. He authored the book: 'The Invisible Eagle.'

Rafael Disraeli: 'My question is for the Minister of Defence of India. Sir, what do you think will be the reaction of the Chinese and the Pakistanis with regard to these developments in the Security Arrangement with the United States? Great Britain has now 10 operational defence manufacturing facilities put up by the United States and might add

more. Many believe that the bipolar order of the world might be upset in just five-year time?’

‘First, I would like to express the desire of the Indian people to a peaceful region or for the whole world for that matter. Russia has built up 20 or 50 defence manufacturing plants in China alone, and there are many other countries lined up for such undertakings. India did not even comment on the matter. It is within their freedom to do so. So, we expect the same from them.

We want peace and stability in the region. Remember Yemen, up to now the Iranians are operating to destabilize their country. We do not want that to happen to us as well. And if you will read the intelligence digests of the world the hardware that the Russians and the Chinese are building are mostly offense in nature. With regard to the British defence manufacturing plants, well, we hope that they create more for the benefit of Europe,’ explained the Minister of Defence of India Jehul Ajalu.

Vemina Singh: ‘Russia Today wants to ask something?’

RT Representative Dimitry Antonov is a veteran journalist who covers the region of Asia particularly India, the Himalayas and the whole of the Far East. He is a Caucasian man at six feet four inches, good looking with blonde hair, green eyes and protruding nose.

‘My question is for the Defence Minister of India. Sir, you requested Russia to provide you with its long range bombers that the Russians did not provide to you while they provided it to the Chinese. Is this a reaction to this snub of the Russians in not providing you with the long range bombers?’ Asked the reporter from Russia Today.

‘My answer to that is, you have to look on the hardware that the Americans are transferring, ground to air missiles and the corresponding systems necessary to operate them. They are mostly defensive in nature we do not poke our noses to bomb anybody in the region. Even the Mig fighter jets that came from Russia are defensive in nature unlike the long range bombers that the Russians have provided the Chinese.’

The moderator then concluded the press briefing of India Ministry of Defence and the US Defense Department.

After the press briefing of the Defense Departments it was then the turn of Department of Trade and Industry to give some statements.

Jenny Brewster was elated to know that it was about their time. It comes, the goods to a place like this is like a fulfillment of her long dreams, to be able to help the third world countries. Jenny is not that tall but she stand 5 feet 9 inches, Blonde haired and with a Barbie doll smiles and countenance. She is wearing black blazer with white long sleeves inside and a pencil cut pants. She really looks smart on her get up.

On her counterpart is Chandaras Gupta of Ministry of Trade of India. A male in his fifties and stands around 6 feet three inches with clean shaven face. Almost looks like a representative of Sri Krishna when you study Hinduism and find the depiction of their God Krishna.

Moderator: 'Theresa Indira from IBS, you may now ask your questions.

Theresa Indira: 'Ms. Brewster, may we kindly ask what were the products or manufacturing plants that were allowed by your US Congress to be put up here in India? Asked Theresa Indira with a common understanding with a woman from a very powerful country who is empowered like her.

'Theresa Indira, well, I will give to your people in India this answer. The Congress will allow the putting up of around 6,000 factories ranging from clothing plants, candies, chocolates, toothpaste, electric fans, synthetic leather shoes, tire manufacturers, etc... How may were you, around 1.79 billion people. We even see that the number of 6,000 factories to be not enough to satisfy the demand that you have. If there will be more needs for India, the United States is willing to invest in this country. We already talked to Senate President Jim Jimison and Speaker of the House Richard Porter; and there were already bills in both houses of congress in relation to these deals. They already have passed the second reading as we landed in New Delhi,' explained by Jenny Brewster.

Vemina Singh: Rafael Disraeli of BBC please.

'Thank you Madam Moderator.

My question is directed to Mr. Gupta. Sir, what will be the arrangement with these trade deals? I mean who will put the bills knowing that the Party in power in India is now the Nationalists?' Rafael Disraeli eager to share the answer to the question to their readers and viewers.

'Thank you for the question Mr. Disraeli.

'Well, as you know India has already amassed great wealth from the past 40 years, and in Asia we are the ones with the most number of Billionaires in terms of US Dollars. Though we have so much cash, the technological knowhow is still lagging in regards to what the North Americans have. So we studied the options and think that the most viable solution to the growing needs of the Indian population is to have an agreement with the United States. We look into most cost efficient way of machineries available and we find the US's to be the best so far. Germany has offers and we also accepted them,' answered Mr. Gupta to the question of Mr. Disraeli of BBC.

Vemina Singh: 'Dimitry Antonov of Russia Today please.'

'Thank you Madam Moderator for the equal opportunity that you are giving RT in this press briefing.

Ah, my question is to Minister Gupta, Sir, you have said that India has the most Billionaires in Asia, that is correct. But what arrangement do you have with the Americans when it comes to ownership of the manufacturing plants and the output? Follow up question: Are the products for exports or for local consumptions?

'First thank you Mr. Antonov for seeing India as fair in giving the press equal opportunity to ask questions.

And yes, the ownership will be 60/40; Sixty percent India and 40% the United States. The Manufacturing plants will remain as owned by the Americans. India will control the board while the Americans will have the operations to them, Managers and Key Technicians. In the process we expect to have a transfer of know how in regards to the manufacturing plants. We also looked into the economies of scale and according to our computations the market of India as a whole is more than enough for the production capacity that the plants will produce,' answered Mr. Gupta to the question of the reporter from RT.

Vemina Singh: 'Carla Higgins, please, of CNN. Guys we are giving enough time to these international broadcasters so that we can reach more audience in limited air time. After these the locals press can then ask questions.

Carla Higgins then stood up from her chair and went to the microphone and asked question addressed to Mr. Gupta.

'Trade Minister, there is lingering question from the opposition as to why did you accept a Capital Intensive Manufacturing Plants instead of a Labor Intensive Manufacturing Plants, let us say, coming from China, when there are surplus labor in India? There are some Democrats who are also questioning the wisdom of United States' and India's decision in regards to these matters? Asked Carla Higgins obviously knowing the politics and economics behind the agreements with India. And then she adds: 'Will there be cigarettes.'

Chandaras Gupta: 'Thank you for the question Ms. Higgins. The decisions that we made here are more on the economic side of the agreement although we gave enough attention to the political side of the matter. In regards the Capital Intensive thing, with so much market that India has, in the computation, it resulted in the Capital intensive proving to be better than the Labor intensive with just considering the market of the Ksatriyas alone [Ksatriyas are the government people and the soldier caste of Hinduism]. To give you more vivid pictures of the technical side, there were plants that will produce assorted type of products, for example, in the chocolate and candies, clothing and some synthetic leather goods, while there will be plants that will produce just single type of goods. These are the diversity of products that will be produced for India.

With regard to the cigarettes, yes, there will be a single plant for cigarettes. But the nicotine level for cigars have been almost put down to zero as you know and there are not much harm now than compared 20 years ago.' Chandaras Gupta answered eloquently.

(Actually the intention of the cigarettes are for Military. Necessary when their men are on battle field. To keep away the mosquitoes that bring diseases.)

Vemina Singh: 'This is now the time for other news organizations to ask questions. Then the other press people asked for questions from the Trade Agreements delegates of both sides. After enough questions the moderator decided to close the press briefing.

The delegates of the United States thenceforth again boarded their airplanes and to go to the Philippines wherein there is an on-going Balikatan [shoulder to shoulder] Exercises together with Australia, Japan and New Zealand. The places of the Balikatan Exercises are in Ternate Cavite, Tarlac, Palawan and General Santos in Mindanao. They decided to land in General Santos International Airport and after visiting some of their soldiers and observing the Balikatan Exercises they then go to Palawan to see one of the first lines of defense in case China decided to invade the country. There were rumors that the people of Palawan are resigned to the fact that they are just awaiting the Chinese to invade them and take their island from them. And to this the Secretary of Defense wants to verify first hand.

As they went to the officials of the Province they realized that they are in denial of the situation or they just could not grasp the gravity of the situation or that they simply do not know international politics and China. Substantial populations of Palawan are Chinese in ethnicity and that gives China leverage in regards to the possible action the local governments would have to make.

'There seemed to be brain drain here in this province. What left are the Bataks, Tao't Batos, Cuyono, the immigrants from Visayas and Mindanao and the Tagbanuas and finally the Chinese who control the economy. Where are the intelligentsia? Asked Mike Hancock.

'The answer to that sir is that they went to English Speaking countries and make a living there. What remain are the intelligent Chinese people, those who wait for a dole out from their relatives abroad [they are called tambays [standby]] and the new immigrants from different parts of the Philippines,' said one of the provincial government official.

After hearing the said statement Mike Hancock instructed then Howard Burton to verify the statement of the provincial government official and find out the truth about the matter.

'The strata of the Palawan society have been changing in favor of the Chinese who remain in the province. They are becoming the new elites of the area. If proven true, we have to do something about the situation or everything will be easy for China. What remains to us are the three most organized institutions in the Philippines: 1. Military,

Philippine Constabulary and the Police Forces; 2. The Government, then all the rest will not be in our orbit,' Explained the Defense Undersecretary of the United States.

Then they fly towards Seoul and find out about their troops who are stationed there. In South Korea everything seemed to be calmed except the 38th parallel wherein the North Koreans have added stationed soldiers to three hundred thousand. They are now ready to attack the areas near the 38th parallel or the Demilitarized Zone [DMZ]. The North Koreans have been a bully this time since the time that the Russians became the highest exporter of wheat, gas and oil then that they were given enough leverage to show their tantrums to the South Korean kins and their Security Guarantor, the United States.

The North Koreans have also upgraded their nuclear arsenal, they have in their stockpiles about 400 nuclear bombs many of which are the hydrogen in nature similar to the Russians, enough to destroy key cities of South Korea. But the North Koreans knew that South Korea has Nuclear Stockpiles of its own and it will not be easy to start a war with the South knowing that the United States Navy 8th fleet is just in the vicinity of the Pacific West.

South Korea on the other hand would not want to start a war and force a unification of the two Koreas because China is to the north of North Korea. She will certainly do not want to happen a United Korea near her border. These people might become too ambitious and fight China together with the United States and Japan. United Korea is strong having modern South Korea and Nuclear Armed North Korea. South Korea has mandatory military conscriptions and everyone has to serve for at least two years yet their standing army is only around eight hundred thousand compared to North Korea's nearly two million.

Finally, it was time for the group to go back to the United States and start a new day there. It was December 20, 2060 in South Korea and when they return to the United States it will still be December 20, 2060 to them. 'Ah, that is how wide the world is.' Said Mike Hancock to himself.

But Jenny Brewster is correct: "The world now is not enough." Tomorrow we will be fighting for the moon. Who knows what's with the natural satellite of the earth. Then he thought to himself as to whom does he thinks will start the Armageddon. It just seems that the Chinese and the Russians are preparing while the other countries who have limited capabilities want to start it. If Iran has the same power as Russia we have long been into chaos worldwide.

Well, Russia has been plunging the world into blood since the time of the USSR. Imagine five hundred million Kalashnikovs [AK 47s] manufactured and sold worldwide, from Middle East, Africa up to Latin America. There are lots of guns and ammunition to produce yearly.

It was 11:00 A.M. December 20, 2060. Instead of going home they decided to go to the office and look for the updates that there may be from sources. As you know the world now runs so fast despite having the same 24 hours, it seemed the time is now not enough. Everything is no longer enough: natural resources, manpower, water, military, policemen,

etc... Time is of the essence now for them. They have to act fast, get information fast and distribute them to the right persons at the right place at the right time.

CHAPTER XXXVI

THE DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

Howard Burton immediately walked to their office and go to his desk to find out about his emails or many other communications. There were that came in while they were on the airplane but he rather have it answered after reviewing some of the information from reliable on-line sources. It was the answer of Professor Vince Malloy.

Dear Howard,

Hi!

Nice to hear from you. It has been a long time since the time that I saw you during your graduation as law student from Harvard University.

In regards to the topics on hand, well, I made some researches already while you were away and these are what I found.

1. The Dragon Tribe came from a sort of a single stock of fathers that has the 50 chromosomes.
2. When they intermarried with people they got the 48 chromosomes. And they stabilized that way. So the one hundred thousand from China could have started in the 17th or 18th Century. They also seemed to have long life of one hundred years old or more.
3. In regards to the structures: they are believed to be the so called city of devils although if we can see on the walls there were seemed to be angels playing guitars. [Note: Dragon was also an angel]. Could be mistranslations.
4. The guitar was believed to be somewhere in Mexico particularly the Church of Mexico, south of our Country.

The critical thing that has to be discovered here is the guitar that the angels are playing. Documents from the Philippines say that there was only one Guitara de San Miguel and all the rest were replicas made by a so called Juan Miguel from Cebu Philippines who migrated to Tondo, Manila in the 18th Century. This can also be connected to the 1734 C.E. Philippine Map that the late Father Murillo Velarde has made to be published and once hold onto by United Kingdom of Great Britain.

There have been studies by the Spaniards about the Guitara de San Miguel and the results were that they were the only ones that have seen the scribbles of a person, the certain Juan Miguel, about the angels fighting, embedded on the walls of the two cities. There must be good and bad angels fighting at the time. We can surmise that the other group were many while the other group were at least 1/3 of their force. But it was the 1/3 that has the Guitara de San Miguel and that I assume the leaders was the one playing the guitar.

In the last part of the document that I got, it was said that there were pictures and studies about the Guitara de San Miguel in the Vatican Archives. We therefore asked for permission from the Vatican to have access to their archives.

Sincerely yours,

Prof. Vince Malloy
College of Social Sciences
Harvard University

Howard Burton immediately replied that he already talked to the Vatican Archives and that they have given him access to the topic of Guitara de San Miguel. The Vatican and the United States have an agreement in regards to the sharing of information and pertinent documents with regard to studies for scholarly purposes. The topic of Guitara de San Miguel belongs to that. It also includes the studies about the Dragon Tribes and cities of devils.

Here is the reply of Atty. Howard Burton to Professor Vince Malloy:

Dear Prof. Vince Malloy

I already talked to the Vatican Archives people and they have provided us with the information and previous studies that had been made about the Guitara de San Miguel, cities of devils and the Dragon Tribe. There were also some studies on the writings that we have found on the walls.

We have known the chromosomes and other stuff. The Chinese intended to breed these angelic looking beings with humans but they did not commence them because there will be a result of 47 chromosomes which means that the offspring will be abnormal. In that case the Chinese did not commence the Nazi inspired crossbreeding. Right now, they are into in-breeding and according to the information that we got from our sources these angelic looking beings will play a role in the so called Armageddon by the Russians, Chinese and the Iranians. They will be fighting the Diwatas of the Philippines as written by the source Juan Miguel. The Diwatas it seemed were remnants of the many offspring of the Nephilim of the Genesis 6: 1- 4, the children of the union of angels and daughters of men.

Right now the Chinese are honing the skills of the Dragon Tribe, males and females, in fighting using their own weapons, Bronze Age Weapons.

The Nephilim as we speak have a billion populations although it says that they were not on the earth that we speak of. There are “mystical gates” to their kingdom that only them and to whom they allow can enter. We can contact the priests that can enter the mystical gates near the enclosed city in Manila which they called Intramuros.

Sincerely yours,

Atty. Howard Burton
Undersecretary of Defense
United States Department of Defense

Meanwhile in heaven, Juan Miguel is still looking at the scenes of events that will happen in heaven and in the conversations of the world leaders particularly the leading nations. There were many recorders in heaven and that they can be viewed in advanced or reviewed as seem fit by the archangels and angels or any persons that were in heaven including the saints.

Juan Miguel: ‘I would like to stay here for a little longer until I finish viewing the end of the Armageddon.’ He requested to San Miguel to which the archangel gave his assent.

After Five years and after the plants in India, China, Iran, United Kingdom and Russia have been into operations. The Chinese leadership then decided to review their plans and designs in concern to the Islands of the Philippines. This is in particular to invading the country. As per their review the Philippines has:

1. 400,000 standing Military. 60% of which are in the Navy.
2. 30% are in the Army
3. 10% are in the Air Force
4. 100 Warships
5. 200 Attack Helicopters
6. 26 Cargo lift choppers
7. 100 tanks
8. 4,000 artilleries
9. 20 million rifles
10. 20 million short firearms
11. And many other unaccounted defence materiel in the number of around 50 million
12. 500 thousand Armed Police force and 2 Million Private Security

But the difficulty that China has is the presence of United States Marines and Army in the Philippines. In all military bases in the Philippines the American presence were there. They have sixty-six thousand American soldiers stationed in the country. With unnumbered war materials of whom mostly are anti-aircraft missiles. There were anti-aircraft missiles systems in Mindanao, in the Visayas and in the island of Luzon.

There were also stationed long ranged bombers like B2 Spirit 2 in the island of Luzon. The US 7th Navy Fleet was also in the South China Sea having face to face encounter with the Chinese PLA Navy. The US 7th Navy Fleet are all nuclear capable Navy ships with Aegis 6th generation anti-aircraft, anti-missiles defense capabilities.

CHAPTER XXXVII

IN THE CHINESE HELD ARTIFICIAL ISLANDS IN THE SOUTH CHINA SEA

Two Chinese officers could be heard talking and they were talking about the approaching fleet of ships of the US Navy.

1st Chinese Officer talking to his radio microphone: 'This is a Chinese sea territory kindly identify yourselves?'

2nd Chinese Officer talking to his comrade: 'The Politburo has given the PLA Navy and the Army a directive to shoot on any vessels that will not identify themselves with us. That armed Navy ships of the United States must be shot if they will not identify with us.'

The US Navy 7th Fleet remained silent as they approach the islands held by the Chinese PLA.

'I repeat this is a Chinese sea territory. Kindly identify yourselves,' said the Chinese soldier Officer to his radio microphone.

The US Navy remained silent and then the 1st Chinese soldier Officer then contacted the head of the PLA Navy in-charge in the South China Sea. 'Then General Hao on the other side of the radio gave a go signal to fire on the in-coming ships.'

'Fire multiple laser guided missiles to the Aircraft carriers and the destroyers and all the ships that are coming toward our islands!'

'Last warning to you said the Chinese officers. We will fire! We will fire!'

Then without waiting for a reply from the US Navy ships that PLA Navy stationed fired multiple laser guided missiles on the whole 7th fleet of the US Navy. The swooshings of the laser guided missiles then can be heard on the artificial islands in the darkness of the night and also the lights and fires emanating from the back of the multiple missiles that were flying toward the US Navy ships. Then from three nautical miles the bombs of the missiles can be heard hitting their targets. Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Then fires of red emanated from the US ships flew during the darkness of the night.

The PLA Navy on the islands knew that they directly hit the Aircraft carrier of the United States. Then there were replies from the aircraft and other ships of the US Navy. Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh, swoosh sound the laser guided missiles from the US Navy ships. And when they reached their destinations in the islands they also sounded: Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

On both sides of the combatants can be heard people shouting and trying to put down the fires of red that emanated from the missiles that were fired to each other. Then they manned their respective armaments ready to fire a second salvo of missiles to each other. The Chinese were first to fire once more. Multiple laser guided missiles: Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Sounded the missiles and then again the laser guided missiles lighted up the dark night of the South China Sea and they hit their targets among the US Navy Ships.

Then the Chinese PLA Navy decided to fly their jet fighters from their islands and from a nearby aircraft fleet that they have. It was a proactive approach that they are winning the battle with the America's Navy 7th Fleet.

Afterwards the engines of jets on both sides of the combatants can be heard: Whoooooooooooo! Zooooooooooooooooooooooooooooom! Whoooooooooooooooooooo! Zooooooooooooooooooooooooooooom! Zooooooooooooooooooooooooooooom! Zooooooooooooooooooooooooooooom! Next the aircrafts could be seen in the air with the preponderance of Chinese aircrafts in the air. Some of the aircrafts of the US Navy have been hit in the first and the second salvo of the missiles. Too few were able to fly so there was a dogfight between the aircrafts of United States vs. China.

The first to be able to fire an air-to-air missiles were the US aircrafts: Swoooooosh! Swoooooosh! Swoooooosh! Swoooooosh! At that point the dark night lighted up with the fires emanating from the laser guided missiles. Thenceforward can be heard: Boom! Boom! Boom! Many of the fighter jets of the Chinese PLA Navy were hit but the pilots were able to eject from the jet and had their parachutes flew open in the air. Fighter jets were cut into pieces still on fire as they descend the air.

Then it was the turn of the other fighter jets of the Chinese PLA Navy to fire their air-to-air laser guided missiles and they fired at the US fighter jets. Swoooooosh! Swoooooosh! Swoooooosh! Swoooooosh! subsequently the missiles lighted up the night sky and then after sometime of travelling from one place to another they hit their targets. Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The dogfights between the two combatants were evenly match while the artificial island based anti-access denial laser guided missiles of the PLA Navy were firing continuously. It was in the dark of the night that the Aircraft carrier of the United States 7th Fleet Navy was half-sunk off the waters of the South China Sea. Only the lights of the ships, in the artificial islands, and the missiles that, were continuously being fired, were the lights of the dark night.

The US Navy 7th Fleet immediately radioed their Philippine bases of the on-going battle between them and the PLA Navy. This was a test of resolved for the PLA Navy because they have never challenged the US Navy in any real fights.

US Aircraft Carrier calling their Philippine base: 'Mayday! Philippine base! We are having a firefight against the Chinese in the artificial islands in the Mischief reef,' shouted the American sailor to his radio microphone. Then they also called on the Washington and the Pentagon.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

02:00 A.M. FRIDAY BEIJING, CHINA +08:00 GMT

During the night the Chinese President Haw and Chinese Premier Kai were still asleep and they were woke up by phone that rang. 'Ringgg, Ringgg, Ringgg,' to the telephone of President Haw. Knock! Knock! Knock! to the door of President Haw. 'Hello! Come in. Yes, General Shai'; his chief of staff on the other line.

'Mr. President, there is a firefight in the South China Sea between the PLA Navy in the artificial Islands and the US Navy 7th Fleet. The US Navy Aircraft Carrier is now half sunk and some of their fighter jets are hit by our J20 fighter jets. The artificial islands are still safe as of this time,' reported General Shai to the President of China.

'General Shai, what is the best thing to do at this time?' asked President Haw to General Shai.

'According to our playbook we are awaiting this opportunity just like the time of the 20th Century when the United States waited for the Cuba incident,' replied General Shai.

'General Shai, they have long range bombers stationed in Luzon. I think they have the B2 Spirits 2 in Clark Base in Pampanga,' said President Haw, 'should we start the bombings of Manila. The Russian long range bombers are available in the southern part of China. Should they fly now?' Asked the President to General Shai.

'Remember Mr. President that these are diversionary tactics from us. And we planned to give these artificial islands to destruction. We know the firepower of the United States that are in the Philippines. Meanwhile we have called the North Koreans to start mobilizing to the 38th parallel. They will be positioning one million infantry, missile artilleries and tanks on the border separating them and the South Koreans,' replied the General and reminded General Shai to their President.

'There is a call from Iran and they say that they are mobilizing their army and navy to Persian Gulf area. There the 5th Navy Fleet of the United States is located. The only defence and offense that the Iranians can do there are the laser guided anti-access denial missiles, two aircraft carriers and eight destroyers and eight frigates.'

Then the Russians called the Chinese side to confirm the matter in the South China Sea. It was the Premier of China who took the call from the President of the Russian Federation. 'Hello Premier Kai, we would like to know the incident that is happening in the South China Sea. With that battle with the United States we are now mobilizing our Army to the Western side of our border and we will enter the country of Georgia and Ukraine.

In three days we will be in the borders of Ukraine and Georgia and in one week we will be in their capital Kiev and Tblisi respectively,' said the President of Russia. 'We also know that the North Koreans have moved their infantry to the 38th parallel and will cross the line anytime that the Chinese side has sent three million PLA reserves to North Korea.

In fact, I gave the go signal to mobilize to the 38th parallel,' explained the informed President of the Russian Federation.

'The Syrians have also called us,' continued the Russian President, 'they are mobilizing to the Golan Heights to preempt any Israeli mobilization and to move out from Israel their tanks and artilleries. We know that jets will move in to bomb the positions of the Syrians but I already instructed our 20,000 Army, Air force and Navy to send the Helicopter Carriers to the Mediterranean We are also moving in to the Golan Heights the ground-to-air laser guided missiles systems that we have and mobilizing 12 dozens of tanks. And the Syrians are mobilizing five million infantry with infantry vehicles and ground to air missiles. Ground to ground missiles are also being deployed.'

Premier Kai then proposed an Emergency SCO Meeting the next day and this time this will be held in Beijing, China. 'Besides, ***I do not think that you can penetrate into the Mediterranean Sea,***' replied the President of PRC.

Meanwhile in the South China Sea the battle between the Chinese PLA Navy and US Navy are continuing. The Aircraft carrier USS Ronald Reagan has been submerged into the water with only the part of the tip of the aircraft carrier can be seen above the water. Despite being long and wide as it was.

There was also one destroyer that was pulverized by the Chinese and to the sinking point and with fires all over the other ships and the sailors being removed from the ships and from the water and transferred to other ships that have smoke covers. The remaining Commander of the US Destroyers and frigates has to make a decision either to retreat or continue to engage the Chinese head on. He instructed the remaining Hawk fighter jets to shoot all their remaining missiles to J20 fighter jets of that are making heavy damage on them. The remaining six Chinese J20 fighter jets from the artificial islands are engaging the last five Hawk fighter jets of the United States 7th Navy fleet. Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Sounded the laser guided air-to-air missiles of the Hawk fighters jets and all the twenty missiles hit the six remaining J20 fighter jets of China's PLA Navy in the South China Sea. Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! to all downed J20 Fighter Jets of the Chinese PLA Navy. The J20 Fighter Jets could be seen torn to pieces and on fire as they descend to the cold water of South China Sea.

What remain to the PLA Navy were their three artificial islands in the South China Sea and the aircraft carrier Liaoning under cover of the night. Then suddenly the F-117 Night Hawk Stealth Bombers of the United States dropped bombs to the remaining artificial PLA Navy base and they were bombed to destruction with nothing remaining but the traces of air strips and some form of former military habitations. The pilots of the F-117As Night

Hawk Stealth Bombers can only see the blasts and fires created by every bomb they dropped to the artificial islands that the Chinese have built in the South China Sea.

‘Subic, do you hear us? Target destroyed! Target destroyed! Radioed one of the pilots.’

Subic, do you hear us? Mischief reef bombed, no more installations! Artificial islands destroyed. Radioed another pilot.

Subic, all targets are on flames now. All targets were destroyed!

Then the Commander of the remaining US Navy ships has ordered the return of their ships to Subic Bay Zambales, Philippines.

Meanwhile the Aircraft carrier Liaoning of the PLA Navy went away unscathed with 15 remaining J20 Fighter Jets on its deck, they were not able to fly for lack of pilots. It was now voyaging north going back to Southern China. Undetected and they turned off their lights and a new silent engine was used in the darkness of the night. Their Naval facilities in the South China Sea have been totally decimated except perhaps the one near the Philippines that the Filipinos call Bajo de Masinloc or Panacot Island.

The US Navy and Air Force decided not to bomb the rock covers at Bajo de Masinloc because, the area is a common fishing ground among different coastal people of South East Asia. But obviously the US Navy and the Philippine Navy will go there in the morning and fish out the remaining Chinese Navy men stationed within the Philippines’ 200 miles exclusive economic zone.

CHAPTER XXXIX

IN WASHINGTON, OVAL OFFICE, THE WHITE HOUSE. 09:00 A.M.

The President of the United States convened the whole cabinet meeting and they draft a resolution for Congress to approve declaring war on China. By 10:00 A.M. the meeting was over and by lunch time the President is in a joint session of US Congress. He is addressing the nation. All Americans have known the event of the night prior to the morning. At the podium the US President can be seen standing in the middle and wearing black suit with white long sleeves inside and a red collar. At the back are the Senate President Jim Jimison on the right of the President and Speaker of the House Richard Porter on the left. Then at the back of the two heads of Houses is a huge flag of the United States. In front of the three are the senators to the right while the representatives of the people are on the left.

Millions upon millions are watching and listening to the address of the President of the United States worldwide even the enemies who started it all and challenged the West are listening. Here was the address of the President to his nation:

US Seal

To all fellow citizens the Senate President, Speaker of the House, and All freedom and Peace loving people of the United States and of the world.

We are again at a crossroad of civilization when old and new outlooks in governance and life meet. The United States has been a young nation and a new State but an old Government among the governments of the world. We have been generous to share our ideals and wealth to all countries that we have had in relationship with. We share them our love for freedom and respect for human lives. We also give them the values of hard work and of success that comes out of it. And many heed our values but last night before going to sleep, the US Navy 7th Fleet that has been patrolling the South China Sea, an international water, was bombed at will by the People's Liberation Army Navy. The USS Ronald Reagan was sunk in the middle of the night. 4,000 American lives were lost while 2,000 Filipino lives were also lost at that momentous event. The Chinese were not provoked but they fired at will on our Navy men.

Ladies and Gentlemen,

The United States is again called into action in this dark moment of history to stand up and fight for the cause of right and to pursue freedom for the people of the world.

We are therefore declaring War on China and call on the North Atlantic Treaty Organization [NATO] to stand up on the bullying of Russia on the eastern border of Europe.

As I speak right now, the Russian Army has mobilized one million of their Army infantry and war materiel on their western border. They are threatening the independence of Ukraine and Georgia. As I speak now, the North Korean Army has massed millions of their infantry near the 38th parallel and poised to cross the dividing line. We have stationed one hundred thousand soldiers in South Korea and we will defend her to the last man. As I speak, the Syrian Army aided by the Russians have mobilized their armed forces near the Golan Heights and poised to strike our ally Israel. And right now, the US Navy 5th Fleet is in a standoff in the Persian Gulf with the Iranian Navy.

In Mogadishu, Somalia armed militias are again in the Indian Ocean doing piracy on the seas as a way of living.

Last night, Philippine local time, four of our F-117A Nighthawk Bombers have bomb and destroyed the artificial installations of China in the South China Sea. With these actions of our Air force we have neutralized the immediate and direct threat to the country of the Philippines and neighboring South East Asian nations particularly Vietnam. While in the southern Philippines particularly the Island of Mindanao, radical Muslims have started to move going to Muslim countries. Meanwhile Laos has declared Martial Law in their country in preparation for conscriptions to join China in the War. Radicals in Indonesia, in Jakarta,

and Malaysia, in Kuala Lumpur, are on the streets calling on their governments to join the Muslims in the Middle East in its fight against Israel and the United States.

We will stand and fight to win back freedom from all these marauding hordes who want to dominate the world and put back civilization to the time wherein women have no rights and voice, children were considered as properties while poverty, squalor and idleness are the norm of the day.

No, people of the world, we will not allow these. We will put all the efforts that we have had put together during World War I and World War II. It is a sad thing that Russia is now on the other side. Now, they want to blame colonialism as the root cause of evils in the relationships of nations today, but no my friends, it fast tracked civilization, lift up billions of people from poverty and brought to you food on the table, the internet, televisions, hospitals and medicines. We should not allow that to be relegated to the forum of hate and unreason.

A especial call on United Kingdom, Canada, Australia, New Zealand, Israel, Japan, India, South Africa, South Korea and the Philippines to stand up against these violators of sovereignty and by blatant aggressions that have destabilized the balance of peace and prosperity in the world.

May God Bless America! On these new quests that are on her forefronts.

Good noon United States of America.

The President of the United States of America
On the occasion of the Declaration of War against
China

Then all those that are in the session of both chambers of Congress clapped their hands and congratulated the President. This event could not come in the most opportune time that the Economy of the United States has recovered from slumber for the past decade or so. The stagnant growth is over, the industries of people and machines will again hum to its most efficient possible. Americans were challenged and now they will find out who has the better system; United States of America or China. This cannot come in the most opportune date in the Gregorian Calendar, 2066 C.E.

The news reverberated throughout the world. The stock markets were down shedding an almost 40 trillion US dollars paper losses. Markets lost confidence in the situation especially a war that is eminent or wars that are already declared. From New York Stock Exchange, Dow Jones Industrial, to Main Street, Cospi Index, Xetra Dax, Nikkei, PSE, etc... were all down.

BEIJING CHINA ON THE ARRIVAL OF SHANGHAI COOPERATION ORGANIZATION HEAD OF STATES AND/OR HEAD OF GOVERNMENTS

In China the anti-missile batteries, anti-aircraft laser guided missiles and fighter jets were alerted for the arrival of world leaders. Some of the fighter jets are already in the air patrolling the air and the South China Sea. And one by one the airplanes of each Head of States are arriving. First to arrive is the Prime Minister of Russia Sergey Alkanoff in his Antonov XV with six Mig 44 fighter jet escorts. Then the President Kim Jong Lee of North Korea arrived just thirty minutes after the Russian Prime Minister, afterwards the President of Iran arrived in a Chinese made Jumbo jet escorted by six J20 fighter jets. Syrian President also arrived in a Russian Antonov XV with escorts of six fighter jets from the Russian Air force. Then one by one the heads of states and head governments of different members of the SCO arrived.

President Haw gave them all red carpet welcome. Thenceforth all were gathered in an undisclosed location in Beijing China. There the group holds a meeting to address the speech of the President of the United States of America in declaring war on China. After speeches from different Heads of States and/or governments the group agreed that the President of China will give the Declaration of War against the United States with the whole SCO as signatory to the Declaration.

There were some debates over some of the wordings but the Chinese and Russian delegations prevailed. Then the Group emerged from their place of meeting they were ushered and transported to the Beijing People's Hall of Congress. In the Chinese People's Hall of Congress the Members of the Chinese Communist Party and the Representatives of the People have been seated in their assigned locations and seats while the whole of SCO Members are in front of the stage standing as the President of China is about to deliver his speech.

Russia Today [RT] News covers the event and other news channels of China cover the event and feed to the whole world who are monitoring the will be statement of the SCO. Then the President of China delivered the Declaration of War against the United States, the Philippines, Australia, Israel and New Zealand:

The SCO Seal

To the Oppressed People of the World, to Russia “Our Eternal Brother” and the whole of Shanghai Cooperation Organization,

We have scant information about what happened in our undisputed ancient territory South China Sea, the Mare of Asians. We have a recording prior to engagement of People’s Liberation Army Navy and the United States 7th Fleet Navy. I will let the world hear the recordings. [Then the Chinese technicians played the recording that they have leading to the event in the South China Sea a day before]: “‘Last warning said the Chinese officers. We will fire! We will fire!’ Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Then the return fire of laser guided missiles could be heard. Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Dear friends, our sea territory was violated and there was silence instead of identifying themselves. China has the right to fire on the intruders and be respected in its territories.

We are speaking for the voice of all the oppressed people that are here: to gain our real freedom, true prosperity for all, equality under heaven, respect for our mothers and sisters and loved ones. True brotherhood based on values, real affection and search for happiness. These are the values and qualities that we are fighting for, we will live and die for it.

My friends and brothers, this is the moment when we will take off the shackles that have been wearing us down for more than 400 years of colonization and inequality in laws and in distribution of goods of the world.

Though we believe that war is not the only way to go forward, heaven has given us this chance to prove to the world that we are not afraid to fight when opportunity for glory comes and when our side is in the cause of right.

People of the world unite and end the shackle of people that have been enslaving us for more than 400 years. This is the time! This is the moment! We do not condone violence but if we need to stand up and fight for our rights then it is our eternal duty to do just that.

President of the People’s Republic of China
For the Shanghai Cooperation Organization
On the Occasion of Declaring War against the United States,
Australia, New Zealand, Israel and the Philippines.

All in the People’s Congress then clapped their hands and congratulated the members of the SCO, though not all can go to the stage since the security was very tight at

that moment. Then one by one the world leaders of the SCO rode their respective transportation vehicles to fly back to their countries.

UNITED KINGDOM OF GREAT BRITAIN 04:00 A.M. IN A SPECIAL SESSION OF THE PARLIAMENT

After seeing and hearing the statement of the SCO through the President of China. Great Britain did not wait for the Meeting of NATO that day to commence and the Parliament declared war against China and her interests. They cannot delay, by 08:00 A.M. London time the money transactions in Yuan will cease. All properties of China will be confiscated for the time being. All people of Chinese descent will be into close look out of the authorities, another great war has commenced and will most likely be the most catastrophic of all.

Nuclear bombs have proliferated. In United Kingdom's estimates the weakest of all the combatants might be the first one to use a nuclear weapon.

BRUSSELS, BELGIUM 09:00 A.M.

The Security was so tight in Europe with the ragtag missile shield systems in operation. Fighter jets were stationed at airports and ready to intercept any unidentified flying objects that their radars would encounter. There was a no fly zone for passenger airliners for now while the world leaders of Europe are coming in and landing in Brussels Belgium.

The European Union is in meeting addressing the present problem of the day; the mobilization of Russia's one million mobile Army infantry near the eastern borders of Europe. NATO in the meantime cannot commence the meeting in the absence of the United States representative. Secretary of Defense Michael Hancock will arrive in approximately 10:00 A.M. local time accompanied by his delegate. The Head of the Joint-Chiefs-of-Staff is with him.

Then Germany's representative declared that the meeting should already commence before the arrival of the Americans. They cannot know what position they have to take, the Missile Shield of Europe has been unreliable and they cannot risk a missile battle with Russia at this point in time. Russia is one of the most accurate holders of missile systems in the world. Most cities of Europe are vulnerable even Great Britain's and France's are vulnerable. They cannot engage the Russians without the Americans.

'Are we to declare war with the Russians or just give up Georgia and Ukraine then close the borders of Europe?' Wolfgang von Gottfield asked his colleagues.

But at the same time those that are in the Eastern Europe have mobilized their armies to their Eastern borders. Germany has called on their Army to go to their Eastern borders and join together with the Polish Army, Austria and Hungary.

'No more Western theatre! Exclaimed the German Representative. 'We all go to the east.' Then all agreed. [Because in World War I and World War II Germany engaged France and the United Kingdom in their West and Russia to the East all at the same time thus they lost the two wars].

Then the German clarified that they are not yet declaring war with any nation thus far. They know they can have a détente with the Russians by giving up Ukraine and Georgia. In any case, the two have been in the Russian orbit since forty years ago. NATO will fail if the United States does not come to their aid.

Then there was a shout outside the meeting room. 'Eight Russian long range bombers are flying on the North Sea and the fighter jets of the British are already escorting them going to the Norwegian Sea!'

Afterwards they looked into their flat wide monitors in the meeting room the positions of the Russian Bombers.

Wolfgang von Gottfield then gave an instruction: 'Kindly monitor the movements of the Russian long range bombers. Let France fly their jets as well in making sure that the Russians will not go inside the continental Europe's air space. We will also fly our fighter jets to escort out the Russian bombers,' continued Wolfgang von Gottfield.

'Now I know that we are hostages of these two countries: the United States and the Russia.' He said to the NATO members who are awaiting the Secretary of Defense of the United States.

'The Russian long range bombers have turned back toward their positions in the Arkhangelsk region of Russia,' shouted one of the staff that is in communication with their Monitoring Team.

'Whew! Said the people inside the meeting room in one of the Buildings in Brussels Belgium. That was very, very close. They could have bombed us yet we could have done nothing. How come that Europe is this weak now?' Sigh Wolfgang von Gottfield the Minister of Defence of Germany.

Then suddenly there was again a call, the airplane of the Defense Secretary of the United States has landed escorted by five US fighter jets, they were now being transported to the location.

Michael Hancock could not believe what he is seeing. Europe is truly beautiful place. 'How could these brothers of them could create such monuments with feminine touch yet they do not lost their manliness?' Asked it to himself.

'There must be in the cultures that have widely differed despite being the same in origins. We still should learn from these varieties of people,' Michael Hancock continuously observing the sceneries in Brussels.

Then in no time they are now trying to park inside the parking area of the building. 'Even the elevators of the buildings are somewhat advanced than the United States, the designs are also different, there must be something angelic in Europe,' he murmurs to himself.

Michael Hancock then arrived in the Meeting Room. All eyes are on him. Wolfgang von Gottfield broke the silence in the meeting room.

'Mike, thank you for coming, you come in the most opportune time for Europe. There were eight Russian long range bombers that we've monitored in the North Sea. They could have dropped bombs had they wished to,' shared Wolfgang Gottfield.

Then Michael Hancock said that indeed they have monitored the eight long range bombers of the Russians plus ten fighter jets that escorted them out to the Norwegian Sea. 'Europe is so vulnerable now,' said Wolfgang von Gottfield to Michael Hancock.

Michael Hancock reassured the Europeans that the Americans are in control of the situation. 'We can halt the advance of the Russian with fielding of F-35s and F-117As and B2 Spirits 2 in Europe. We have manufactured another forty of B2 Spirits 2 instead of the intention of just another twenty.

The remaining difficulty if the Russians were to decide to just press their buttons and use missiles instead, to destroy cities of Europe. And let their Military remain in their borders to avoid casualties.' Michael knows the risks they are taking by relegating the most advance missile defense shields of Europe into the shelves. [Missile Defense Shield [Star Wars] for cities of Europe was a missile defense project and being developed since the time of President Ronald Reagan [1980's] and President George Bush [2000's], both Republicans, that project was shelve because of the objections of Russia].

Mike now calls the shots and the chiefs-of-staff of the United States. The Germans decided to go to the back seat make suggestions although Wolfgang von Gottfield insisted that this time there will only be one theatre in Northern Hemisphere and that is the eastern border of Europe and if they can avoid it altogether the better.

Mike then said that better to close the borders with Turkey and close the borders of the other East Europeans and additional patrol on the Mediterranean.

'We have to add additional fleet of Navy aircraft carriers in the Mediterranean Sea, three fleets would be enough; one from the United States the 6th Fleet, one Fleet from the British the Queen Elizabeth and one from the Spaniards [Spain being a non-member of NATO],' suggested Mike Hancock.

Where are the French on this? Mike Hancock asked them. France being wooed by Russia not to participate in the mobilization planned by Germany.

The reason being that they want to protect the vital sea lanes from the reach of the Russians so that they cannot reinforce the Syrians. The Spaniards decided to put their Navy Fleet near the Strait of Gibraltar. The US Defense Department said that on that part of the Spaniards that is understandable, North Atlantic Ocean then will be patrolled by the Americans, Canadians and the British.

‘According to the President of the United States,’ said Mike Hancock, ‘Europe must mobilize on the eastern borders but should not fire the first shot. NATO will remain in defensive posture. Three thousand laser guided missile tanks and laser guided artilleries, plus 200 fighter jets and 15 B2 Spirits 2 long range bombers in Poland, on standby basis, and four hundred thousand infantry personnel.

One Hundred Thousand US Military Army and equipment are in Europe ready to join the mobilization on the eastern front against Russia. Ukraine and Georgia will not be given up, it will be fought on.’

‘We will field additional one million Army Personnel in Europe and additional five thousand laser guided missile tanks on the eastern countries of Europe,’ Said the Mike Hancock. ‘Then 200 Apache 300XA Helicopters on the front line. Half of which can be transferred to the Mediterranean on a three day notice.

The Americans knew that the Russians might use their Intercontinental Ballistic Missiles [ICBMs] without the nukes. But their ragtag missile shield systems in Europe have been operational and would it be able to intercept the missiles that will come from Russia?’ That was the question on the table. And Mike and Wolfgang’s answer was that they all must be fielded and made operational to the maximum.

Mike said that in three months the English speaking countries will be able to control the vital Sea Lanes and that would mean that the SCO must operate on the Old World of Asia, in-land. And the World will be divided between the Western Hemisphere and Asia and Africa. Europe must be able to defend herself and do not rely much on the United States. Although the Defense Structure of the United States will still be in Europe.

Mike asked Wolfgang: ‘Wolf, how many tanks do you have in Saudi Arabia?’

‘Around five thousand now and a thousand of which are the old model Leopard IV. Four thousand have the laser guided missiles as offense weapons.’

‘In that case we can engage the Russians and the Chinese in tank and helicopter battle at Megiddo? By the way, are they operational? Continued Mike Hancock.

‘Do you mean an Army to Army Battle?’ Asked Wolfgang Gottfield. Yes, they are all operational and have ammunitions to last a year without replenishments. With you we will go to Megiddo and consider this war to be Armageddon.’

Mike Hancock and the rest of Chiefs-of-Staff of the United States then said so it will be Armageddon.

‘By the way,’ Asked the Germans to the Americans, ‘we need additional lifts.’

‘Oh, yes, we will provide them. Let the tactical planners do it,’ Said Mike Hancock. ***And the Statement?*** Asked Mike Hancock.

‘Oh yes, we should not forget it. I will be the one to deliver it, I mean the ***Statement,***’ Said the German Defence Minister.

They then go to the European Parliament Building and there the press are assembled and they knew they are about to hear the ***statement*** of the North Atlantic Treaty Organization. This time the security inside and outside of the parliament building was very tight. Cameras and Video Cameras are all over: BBC, CNN, VOA, DW and many other TV Channels. Here now comes Wolfgang von Gottfield,.

NATO Seal

To the people of the Free world and all those who are peace loving ones,

Once again we are visited by civilizational calamity that if it were not opposed and stopped can turn back our civilization into the Stone Age. These are matters of principles and values that we aspire and lived. We cannot sit aside and do nothing while all the world are wondering if tomorrow they will still be able to hug their loved ones or not.

The **Shanghai Cooperation Organization [SCO]** has declared war on the United States and that the United States has been attacked in the South China Sea, unprovoked in waters within the Exclusive Economic Zone of the Republic of the Philippines. This blatant act of aggression with the loss of 4,000 lives on the side of the Americans and 2,000 lives from the Filipinos will not pass unanswered. Invoking the North Atlantic Treaty Organization treaty, NATO is therefore declaring war on the SCO commencing now.

Europe does not wish to be involved in many more wars but we believe that this one is worth fighting for. The hate of the enemies should only be turn into love and compassion and only with enough courage and force of will that we can do that.

NATO therefore orders its military to mobilize in the eastern front and defend Ukraine and Georgia against Russian aggression in that part of Europe's borders. Accordingly the United States committed the NATO to defend the said countries and we will give stiff resistance to the maximum. We are fielding long range bombers, fighter jets, helicopters and tanks to our eastern borders.

Wolfgang von Gottfield
Defence Minister Federal State of Germany for the
North Atlantic Treaty Organization [NATO]
On its occasion of Declaration of War
Against the Shanghai Cooperation Organization [SCO]

In the United Kingdom, the Prime Minister is expecting the arrival of representatives from Canada, Australia, South Africa, India and New Zealand. They will also make a statement and declare war on the SCO. The security in the UK was tight. Multiple ground-to-air Missile Batteries were deployed and there were fighter jets that patrol the sky. They were the ones that intercepted the long range bombers of Russia.

Then one by one the leaders of the said countries landed on the airport of London [Heathrow International Airport]. They then proceeded to the Parliament Building and made the declaration of war against the SCO.

CHAPTER XL

HOUSE DIVIDED

In the Philippines; right after the declaration of War by China the joint session of Congress commenced. The Senators and Congressmen were in a quandary as to the position that the Philippines will take. They were always on the defensive position and always been friendly with the Chinese people, local and abroad.

But because of the so much presence of the United States Military in the country and the origin of the F-117As Nighthawk Bombers that obliterated the artificial islands of the Chinese, the Philippines was included in the list of those that the SCO had declared war. The Americans have brought war to the Philippines again.

Invasion was inevitable now for the Chinese have declared war. The questions now are how many Chinese will invade the islands and where will they land. These are foremost in the minds of the leaders of the Philippines particularly those who are in the Military.

The Navy people are the most restless because while they are capable mariners they still lack the modern ships that can repel any invasion that will be attempted in the country.

The sixty-six thousand US Military personnel in the country are now augmented by One Hundred Thousand Australian contingents fully armored and equipped for prolonged battle together with their Military Hardware. The Australians reasoned that if Manila will fall then there would be no more defensive barrier to the invasion of their country. Only India is the most possible nearest that can help them. Besides the Philippines, particularly the southern part can be a staging area of China's long range bombers that can reach Australia in matter of three hours.

So a long range bomber that can fly for 24 hours can easily make sorties in their country from the Philippines. It is a must therefore that the Philippines not to fall.

In the joint session of Congress the Philippines then declared war against the SCO. And joined the whole of English Speaking people and NATO in fight against the SCO. This will now be a war that the Philippines will be the first target of invasion by no less than their relatives, the Chinese.

Then the Military and the Police were put on Red Alert and all were to fight the invading forces that will come from China. There could be substantial manpower that the Chinese will put into this invasion. The Philippine Military Reserves then were called for action. All those that are able bodied were also called to take up arms. But this time the Philippines was divided. There were those who favor the Americans while there were those who favor the Chinese. While the Military, Philippine Constabulary and the Police were

majority solid in favor of the Americans. There could be civil war at the same time. This has been long in coming and the Republic might be fragmented.

This was the situation of the Philippines at the onset of war against the SCO.

JAPAN

Meanwhile in Japan, the Diet was in session and considering declaring war against the SCO but being very near China and North Korea they were thinking more it over. But when the English speaking countries and the NATO, the Philippines, Israel and India decided to side with the United States, Japan declared war on SCO.

IN THE NORTH EAST ASIA

... China declared that they won the first battle at sea with the United States had not the F-117As Night Hawk intervened they could have obliterated the whole US Navy 7th Fleet. But their fortifications in the South China were no longer there and that the New and repaired US Navy Fleet can operate unmolested in the area.

SOUTH CHINA SEA

The PLA Navy personnel stationed in the Bajo de Masinloc were then taken as prisoners of war by the US Navy and the Philippine Navy together. There was a firefight but the superiority of the US Navy was uncontested against small fortifications that the PLA Navy has put up in the area.

When the US Navy ships had been repaired at Subic Bay Zambales, Philippines they joined another aircraft carriers and this time the 8th Fleet and 11th Fleet together with the submarine hunting team. Now there were two aircraft carriers, destroyers, frigates and submarine hunting PLA Navy Fleet in the South China Sea. While at this point in time China has already seven Fleets of aircraft carriers. Three were also operating in the South China Sea. However the PLA Navy has decided to concentrate their Navy forces in the invasion of the Philippines. There will be four aircraft carriers fleets and the forty long range bombers that the Russians have provided them and 90 pieces of J20 fighter jets embedded on the aircraft carriers.

There will be six million People's Liberation Army that will land in the Philippines. General Shao knew what to do with the six million People's Liberation Army under his command. He will go to the western side of the Philippines, Palawan and Zambales as his diversionary tactics. But the main force of his army will be transported to Benham Rise on the Eastern shore of the Philippines, Cagayan, Isabela, Aurora, Quezon and Bicol provinces.

The strategy is to bomb North Luzon and the western side of the country from the southern shores of China using the long range bombers of PLA Air Force, forty Long Range

Bombers from Russia, three aircraft carriers plus fighter jets. They will start the bombings in the late afternoon until night then the five million People's Liberation Army will land on the east coast of the Philippines during the cover of the night until early dawn.

That what was the Chinese did, and they lured the Philippine Navy and the US Navy into the fight in the western side of the country. General Shao was willing to lose some of his aircraft carriers as long they make a footing on the eastern shores of the Philippines.

04:00 P.M. PHILIPPINE LOCAL TIME

Forty grey long range bombers can be seen and heard humming up above forty thousand feet off the North Luzon and then another 60 fighter jets following them. Then they fired missiles to strategic targets. But the Americans were up to the tasks of defending the Philippines. Army and Navy Missile batteries were then put up upwards; the ground to air laser guided missiles could be seen swooshing the air with their fires at the back and the smokes that they create lining up the sky. Swoosh. Swoosh. Swoosh. Swoosh. Swoosh. Then in the sky can be seen the exploding fighter jets of China. Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Then there again some dogfights from the fighter jets of China and United States Air Force. The dogfights were evenly matched. Air-to-air laser guided missiles were the weapons of choice. While the jets were busy shooting down each other the long range bombers of China were also busy bombing vital installations of the Philippines up in the North and Northwest. Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Can be heard in the battle that ensued, the aircraft carriers of the United States were lured into the Northwest of the country then they have seen the invading force of China came out from Macao area.

US Generals thenceforth think that the invasion by China will then commence on that area. They then called the Philippine forces to man their areas on the northwest and many were transferred to the area. But the four million of the invading force will land on the east side of the country.

One of the scout jets of the Philippines was able to see the forces on ships that are coming out of the Southeast side of China and immediately reported it to the Philippines base. There then the Philippine East side forces were called to the shores of the islands. After which some fighter jets were flown to the area and but it was already night so the American Forces then operated the area and called the Japanese side to send their Aircraft Carrier to the south east area of China. The Japanese responded and tried to find out where the Chinese invasion team will come.

But the Americans were prompt they immediately flew their B2 Spirit 2 long ranged Bombers and F-117As Night Hawks long ranged bombers and targeted the staging area of invasion team. Laser guided two tons bombs then were dropped to the PLA invasion team and then what could be heard were swoosh Boom! swoosh Boom! swoosh Boom! swoosh Boom! swoosh Boom! There were no misses but all are on target.

Afterwards there was a call to General Shao. 'Hello General Shao, This is Colonel Cao, 'the invasion team has been discovered. I suggest that we postpone the invasion and look to the plan once more. There were many casualties on our side on the southeast area of the country. The water off the coast has turned into reds of blood. Dead Chinese bodies are floating on the sea.'

'What were the Americans are using? Asked the General. 'Long range bombers B2 Spirits and Night Hawks,' replied Colonel Cao.

'Aim the laser guided surface to air missiles and fire at sight of the bombers but at the same time kindly inform the forces there to call off the invasion,' ordered General Shao. 'Then fly our fighter jets to intercept their bombers.'

The invasion of the Philippines was called off and the Chinese Military planners decided to rethink and revisit their plans of invasion. This was a risk they took, to find out if they can defeat the United States in blue water naval battles. But the forces of the United States were so overwhelming and that they were so adept in their war materiel that they can force their will on their enemies. The Americans have good command of their superior firepower.

MEANWHILE IN THE PERSIAN GULF

The stand-off between the US Navy 5th Fleet and the Iranian Navy has been resolved but it also come into a naval battle. United States took the initiative in firing laser guided missiles to the target ships of the Iranian Navy. These are the sounds that were heard: Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh, swoosh. Then the sky was lined with the smokes coming from the missiles that ended in the Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Then four ships of the fleet of the Iranian Navy submerged and they decided to disengage the Americans. They return to their base in their home country Iran.

WHAT SYSTEM IS BETTER?

As the war is being prosecuted the two countries who produced the goods now have to show who has the best system of industrial production and war materiel production. When in regards to Navy hardware it was the United States and United Kingdom that have the advantage but when it comes to Army war materiel it was the Chinese and the Russians. Food production surplus was made possible by the Russian for the SCO side. While in industrial production output it was the Chinese and the other Asian countries that were in the ascendancy but when the output of India is considered then the production becomes comparable for the English speaking countries.

In European theatre of war, the Russians have the ascendancy. They were able to capture Kiev and Tblisi in one month. They used the superiority of their Army war materiel

and preponderance in number. Missiles from both sides keep on flying hitting targets after targets. Helicopters go to and fro to strike targets, replenish ammunitions and rest the pilots for a while. Tanks were no match for the Helicopters that both sides have. Although from time to time tanks bring down helicopters when there are preponderance of tanks in the area of engagement. Russian gains were the only good news that the SCO were having in their war communications.

CHAPTER XLI

THE CHECK MATE MOVE THE ARMAGEDDON

Although the English speaking countries have achieved the superiority at seas and oceans they still cannot stage an invasion in any combatant country when they were looking at the possible casualties that they will incur. China, Russia, Iran, Syria, North Korea all have laser guided missiles anti-access denial against the naval ships near their shores. SCO has control of the lands of the Old World except in the area of Israel, India and South Africa. The SCO decided to have one final push to gain the whole of Asia and Africa. These will be an army to army battles, tank to tank, helicopters to helicopters, fighter jets to fighters jets and missiles to missiles. These will be battles of skills among the combatants in using their armaments.

For this Operation Check Mate the Shanghai Cooperation Organization decided to meet in Moscow before the final move. They will plan the prosecution of control of the Old World.

MOSCOW, RUSSIA 08:00 A.M.

The sky of Moscow is full of fighter jets flying to protect the incoming world leaders of the SCO. Fifteen then twenty fighter jets can be seen in the sky all at once and when they have spotted a jumbo jet of member countries they immediately escorted them going to Moscow. Below, on the ground of Moscow, the missile batteries can be seen patrolling the streets and open grounds were hosts to laser guided missile artilleries. The Security was tight, very tight. No civilian vehicles can move to and fro Moscow.

One by one the jumbo jets of world leaders come; first was the leader of North Korea, then the leader of China escorted by six J10 fighter jets. After 30 minutes it was then the leader of Iran came in China made jumbo jet escorted again by six J20 fighter jets. Then Kazakhstan, Uzbekistan, Afghanistan, Pakistan, etc... arrived. Then they were transported to the meeting place. It was then agreed that Armageddon must commence.

We do not control the seas except the ones that are in north Arctic Ocean and some part of north pacific. But the whole of Asia and Africa are in our orbit. The Old World as the Westerners say it: the 'Old World.' But Russia reminded them that the western countries can easily stage attacks inside the weaker parts of the Old World. Then the representative of Iran asked: 'Is it not that the seas are the part or abode of the Dragon?'

It was the representative of Russia, China and North Korea answered: 'Yes, it is the abode of the Dragon or the Leviathan in Christian Holy Scriptures.'

'Why?' Asked the North Korean President.

Then the Iranian President asked again: 'Then why is it that they are calling the tribes in our area and the tribes in China Dragon Tribes?'

'The answer to that my dear President, said the Chinese, is on the numbers of the chromosomes. One of the parents, probably their fathers have 50 chromosomes. Thus they got half of which is 25 an odd number. In yin-yang dichotomy the odd is dragon and the even number is yin or tiger. The offspring then are yin in chromosomes being 24 and 48 even numbers.'

'Which is better then? Asked the Iranian President.

'We are the yins said.' the North Korean President. 'We are the Army of God.' Do not you know that in the Christian and Jewish Holy Scriptures we are called the ***Army of God*** and here to punish His people and to show His glory to them?' We were called to His service.

Then the President of Iran pressed more for answer: 'And then who is playing the JESUS CHRIST then?'

'The Son of Heaven? Said the Russian President.

'And who is the Son of Heaven?' Asked the Iranian President.

'The Chinese?' Asked the Iranian President.

'He is fighting His Father as well in this quest which is the United States. The guy named John,' said the Russian President.

'And you the Iranians, who do you think you are here? Asked the Chinese.

'Ah. We are the archangels and the angels for it was the archangels who brought to us our religion,' said the Iranian.

'For the Christians it was no less than the only Son of the Father who brought to us our religion,' shared the Russian President.

'And then how come the Chinese have the Dragon as angel? They will just fight the son of Woman, either the Israelis or the Chinese. This is a very complicated matter,' continued the Russian President. 'It just so happened the tribes ended in your areas were to be pitied against the Israelis. The Israelis and the English speaking countries were now the lords of the seas, the home of the Dragon. In our Holy Scriptures it was said:

Then I saw a new heaven and a new earth; the first heaven and the first earth had disappeared now, and there was no longer any sea.' – Revelation 21:1,' continued the Russian President.

'Why did you not tell these to us on the first place that there are stuff like that in your Holy Scriptures? Asked the Iranian President.

'Look,' said the Russian President and the Chinese Premier agreeing, 'We are now ruling the Old World. What more would you asked from us. We are in fact winning in our estimation because two continents are with us while Europe will be in our hands eventually. Only your mortal enemies, the Israelis and the Hindus, were against our way now. All islands will be in the hands of the English Speaking countries while the Old World is with us, ours.'

The Iranian asked again: 'Is not that you are the Juj and Majij?'

'We are, including you. And you are here to destroy Israel. Do you think you can defeat us Juj and Majij? How will you destroy yourself?' Asked the Russian President.

'Besides we are the **God's Army** right?

Win or lose we are His,' blurted the Iranian President.

The Iranians and the Chinese then agreed that they have trained the Dragon tribes well enough to fight the Israelis. They are not adept in handling guns and many other armaments. They want to see when they are into close combat against the Israelis.

Then the Iranian realized that indeed the Russians and the Chinese are friends and that they are on the same perspective. Never mind Chechnya. The more it is peaceful the more that Muslims can conquer the world. There will be peace after the war but not for the Israelis.

The Iranians then asked for the Check Mate Plan: 'the Armageddon.' He said to himself that the 12th Imam then will come.'

The Russian retorted that according to the Christians: 'It is the Lord Jesus Christ who will come. To judge and living and the dead and that is also your belief, do not you?'

'Ah. Yes. He could be the 12th Imam,' said the Iranian.

'To that I can agree,' said the Russian President.

The plan of the SCO then is to bring more ground-to-air-missiles and other missiles based armaments to the area near Israel. It is impossible for the Russians and the Chinese to bring their remaining ships to Mediterranean Sea and the only way is to bring them to

the area of Central Asia, Iran the Caspian Sea and the Black Sea then Turkey. The planned Mediterranean Sea is impossible because of the preponderance of forces of NATO there.

Indian Ocean is in the hands of the US Navy, Australian, Indian Navy and British Navy. There is no other way. Turkey has joined on the side of the SCO when they learned that the war is now an Armageddon.

Turkey has substantial number of modern tanks and they would want to participate with the SCO despite being a member of NATO. That was the reason that the Russians and other Muslim countries are not molesting them for the past year of the war.

The Armaments will be airlifted or by land transports escorted by tanks and artilleries. Truckloads of items and convoys of vans will be used in transportation; laser guided ground to air missiles and will be the escorts and fighter jets on the sky. We cannot wait then the forces with AK 47s and many other handheld rockets and missiles will now go down to Jerusalem.

‘Choose your weapons and the place to operate, said the President of Russia, to the members of SCO.’

After choosing their weapons and putting the orders the members of SCO then decided to leave and go back to his own country.

Then the airlifting or armaments to Syria and, Iraq and Iran were being done via the Central Asia by both Russia and China. Lebanon too took many armaments with the intention of joining the Armageddon.

Israel knew of the movements of the armaments but they could not molest them along the way since the transportation of armaments are escorted by fighter jets by Russia, China, Iran and many other countries. Many of the armaments went in as far as Hamas Controlled territory in Palestine. These were not merely rockets but they were now laser guided missiles. The Palestinians were able to hide the existence of the missiles systems because the areas were still large enough and there were concrete buildings to do just that, hide the systems. The Israelis are resigned to the fact that they are now to wait and fight the ***Army of God inside Megiddo and Jerusalem***. Their Temple has just been in existence for the last 26 years and here again the pagans about to destroy them.

CHAPTER XLII

MEANWHILE IN WASHINGTON D.C. OVAL OFFICE, THE WHITE HOUSE

The President and his cabinet are talking about the prosecution of the war. He wants to know the war materiel production and the industrial outputs that the economy has produced.

'Mike we would like to know our production of war materials so far?' Asked the President to Michael Hancock, the Defense Secretary.

'We have a good number of losses in the South China Sea and the West Pacific Ocean; fighters jets and ships alike against the Chinese but we have the ascendancy on the sea now, Mr. President. In one instance the Chinese invasion of the Philippines coming from the Southeast of China was preemptively bombed by our fighter jets and long range bombers and China abandoned the invasion execution,' Said Mike Hancock. With regard to the war material production: 'In the last five years we have built additional of three aircraft carriers and they are ready to be commissioned now. They are fully equipped with all the modern weaponries that we have designed together with the Japanese and the Filipinos. We also have produced additional ten destroyers and twelve frigates.'

'We have great number of losses of fighter jets, tanks and helicopters in the European theatre. But we have replaced them with one hundred fifty Abrams tanks XV, new with laser guided missiles. The Helicopters are still Apaches XXIV but this time they are more agile and have good radars. We produced two hundred of them to augment the incoming Armageddon that the SCO has now implementing. We've manufactured one hundred fighter jets as replacement to the eighty that were bombed out of the war,' summarized by the Defense Secretary.

'The European theatre is our problem because Russia has solid control of Kiev and Tblisi. We cannot do anything about them as of this time unless Germany makes bold moves of wresting them back from the Russian before any Peace Agreement is signed.

What about the Chinese, how are they doing with their war materiel production? Queried the President.

Mike answered that the Chinese: 'have five new aircraft carriers, fourteen new destroyers and twenty new frigates but they are not as good as our quality and the armaments are a bit behind. The Russians have also upgraded their capacity of helicopters and tanks and they were advanced in numbers compared to us. But if we include the production of United Kingdom then well almost be the same since the UK has produced two aircraft carriers and six destroyers and ten frigates plus four submarines. The US has six new submarines.

'Thank you very much Mike for the sharing that you have provided for us. We can then decide more about these stuff when more information from the field come. What about the Germans and the Japanese?' Asked President Johnson Cummins.

'Sir,' said Mike Hancock, 'if we include their productions then we will be above by at least twenty percent overall. Then if we add more the Indians' production then we'll be above by fifty percent from the whole production of the SCO combined. But that is not enough for us to offset their superiority on the lands they are holding. The reason being that people of those areas are their friends and we cannot get a foothold.'

The President then said: 'Armageddon is really to happen at Megiddo and Jerusalem and then we can get a head on collision with helicopters, fighter jets, tanks and artilleries then. As it was said:

'When you see Jerusalem surrounded by Armies, you must realize that she will soon be laid desolate... For this is the time of vengeance when all that the scripture says must be fulfilled. – Luke 21:20, 22.

'Where are the Germans on this? Asked the President.

'Wolfgang von Gottfield said that if we're in they will be in,' replied the Defense Secretary.

'What do they got for the battle ground?' Asked the President.

'Their Leopards Tanks are superb but they do not have helicopters. They will borrow that from us. And he also asked for more lifts of their military hardware. They seemed to have neglected their defense department,' shared Mike Hancock.

'Let us go to Jenny now. Jenny, what do you got when it comes to productions?'

'Sir on a country to country basis, we are behind China by thirty percent on item per item basis: toothpaste, cigarettes, chocolates, shoes, etc... But we have decided correctly few years ago when we put up manufacturing plants in India. We are up by forty percent on a group basis. Meaning the whole of SCO was not able to produce more than us [on a group basis],' said Jenny Brewster to their President.

'Mike, may I kindly ask the situation in the Himalayas?' Asked the President to the Defense Secretary.

'It is a stalemate Sir, none was able to get a good inch of soil. The air-to ground laser guided missiles that we shared to the Indians made most of the damage to the Chinese that is why the Chinese cannot advance unlike in their previous wars when the Chinese gobbled up large part of Indian territories,' said the Defense Secretary.

'And the Pakistanis?' Asked the President.

'They will be joining the other Central Asians in the Armageddon and this time this will be for real,' said again by the Defense Secretary.

'Mike I would like to join you now in the War Room at the Pentagon. Kindly bring the CIA people and the NSA. I would like to know the updates,' said the President.

The Security in Washington D.C. was very tight. Many fighter jets are up in the air guarding the sky, missile batteries are turned forty-five degrees toward the east on the Atlantic shores and west coast toward the Pacific Ocean. USA cannot afford to have anything that can breach their national security and defenses. Then in no time the convoy of the President and the Secretary of Defense reached Pentagon.

Inside the War Room, large monitoring devices can be seen on the walls and computers are all over and technicians are also all over. The Joint-chiefs-of-Staff are also there. They were monitoring everything. All communication systems possible are also in the War Room. Then a good interactive map of the world was there in the front of the seats. The Chief-of-Staff then briefed the President on what is happening in the world.

'So what is happening to the so called Army of God and their Armageddon?' Asked the President.

Four Star General David Lambert: 'First the Philippines, pointing to the South East Asian nation down the left side of the interactive map, is already secured; the Chinese will perhaps abandon the whole idea of invading the Philippines. We still have sixty-six thousand Military Forces in the islands. We replaced those who lost their lives in the diversionary tactics that the Chinese made in the western side of the country.' Then he pointed to the islands of Luzon and Palawan.

'We still stationed the long ranged bombers in the three main islands. These made much of the damage to the Chinese forces although from time to time they are flying jets fighters in the South China Sea. [Then they enlarge the area of the South China Sea on the screen]. Then they view the island of Mindanao.

'The Australian contingent are mostly in the Mindanao area they are still numbering around one hundred thousand strong and fully equipped.'

'Thence he told about what is happening in the Himalayas. How the stalemate happened in there. The Indian fighter jets made it possible with the weapons the United States provided them. The laser guided air-to-ground missiles were doing much of the damage. As regards the Indian Ocean,' said the Chief-of-Staff, 'we have control of it together with the Australian Navy and British Naval Forces.

'Sir, In the Arabian Sea, we are also in the ascendancy. The Russians, the Chinese and the Iranians could not effectively make their blockade we have superiority in firepower,

skills and intelligence in using them,' continued the Military General. 'The Mediterranean is in our control just like in the past, the Russians cannot bring their aircraft carriers there. From there if the Spanish Aircraft Carrier go near Israel then we can have a good fight therein in the Megiddo and Jerusalem. We have two Navy fleets of aircraft carriers in the area.' Continue the General augmented by the French aircraft carriers and the Spanish aircraft carriers, and of course the Queen Elizabeth of Great Britain.

'So France finally decided to side with NATO early on. Hehehe!' Smiled the President. 'They have no choice anyway.'

'In the North Atlantic there is relative peace. The Chinese and the Russians do not bring their Navy assets here even their submarines do not operate here. We, together with the Canadians and the British are patrolling the Ocean. The only losses that we encounter were in the eastern theater of Europe. The Russians have taken Kiev and Tblisi but they do not want to move forward since the Germans and the Polish are poised to repel them if there will be a ground attack.

Yesterday two Russian long range bombers were shot down and blown up while trying to make a sortie in the eastern borders of Europe. But that is with the loss of our ten helicopters and six tanks on the ground,' Continued the General.

'Right now the Chinese and the Russians are transporting large amount of armaments near Israel, all is escorted by fighter jets and many missile batteries. They will go all out this time. We talked to the Germans and they say that they will also go all out in this Armageddon. As long as support from the United States will come,' continued the General.

'By the way Sir, Mr. President, all oils that come from Asian Continent and African Continent have cease to flow to us. But we have enough from Alaska, Canada, Latin America, Australia, South China Sea and internal sources here in the country,' informed the General to the United States President.

'That was the reason why we have to hold into the Western Hemisphere because our lives are in here. But we will defeat their contingents at Megiddo,' Said the President of the United States. 'The world now is divided between the New World and the Old World and this should not stay for long. We have to talk to the Pope to fight the Old world into Crusades.'

The President of the United States also asked about the Dragon Tribes. 'What happened to the Dragon Tribes, any news about them?'

It was the Secretary of Defense who answered: 'They will be put now together near Israel since they can know who are the children of the Woman and who are not. They can be good soldiers in a close cluster combat encounter. They will be the ones to destroy the Jewish Jerusalem Temple. That is what we have heard so far. And also, the construction that the angels did in those two locations were made using Guitara de San Miguel. This Guitara

de San Miguel is said to be found somewhere in Mexico, downward our South. The Vatican holds many clues about it. There was certain Juan Miguel who left a written account about it during the 18th Century, somewhere in the Philippines, during the time of the Spaniards in that country.

‘There are people in the Philippines that we have contacted to enter this so called Diwatas’ kingdom. They are now trying to communicate to their Diwatas. The Filipinos who are knowledgeable about the Diwatas said that they can also be the enemies of the Dragon Tribes [they are in enmity with each other]. There seemed to be natural dislike between them. By this time they could have contacted these Bronze Wielding people. This is as if you were calling the race of Legolas of The Lord of the Rings. Less the pointed ears just the normal ones.

Meanwhile the Chinese are now transporting the Dragon Tribe that they have trained for the last five years and at this point in time the Dragon Tribe can distinguish between the children of the Woman and the their kin among the Dragon Tribe in Iran. This time they will be put together to find out if they will understand each other. And they will be trained to fight together. There will be close combat training including knife and Bronze Age arms. They will be the ones to go near the Israelis while the armies of God will be operating the armaments, tanks, Missiles, artilleries, fighter jets, helicopters and all other armaments new and old.

It took them several days to cross Pakistan, Afghanistan and to Iran with large contingent of one hundred thousand Dragon Tribes. All were able bodied: men and women capable of bearing arms, all are included. Following them are the Chinese contingent of one hundred million man army strong and armed. Destination: Old Babylon. They are into military convoys including all trucks, Armored Personnel Carriers, Tanks and trains that the Chinese can muster from their country. The convoys were escorted again by missiles, fighter jets and long range bombers. The convoys were too numerous that the roads and nearby places were covered with clouds of dust.

The movement of China was the signal that the Russians were waiting and they gave the go signal to the central Asian republics to muster their army and start a convoy going to the Old Babylon, today’s Iraq, and there rest their forces. Just like the armies of China the central Asian republics they too were too numerous to count and they also made the roads they are travelling like clouds of dusts.

Syria and Turkey’s armies now made into the Golan heights to attack Israel but they are awaiting the contingents of China, the Central Asian Republics, Russia, Pakistan, Afghanistan and many other non-Arab Muslim countries especially Iran. It took them many days before they reach their destination in the Middle East.

The Arab league, an organization composed of 22 nations, then called a special meeting to know what will be their position on the ongoing Armageddon. Some have peace agreement with the Zionist Nation of the Jews and they would not want to violate their peace agreement knowing also that the United States and her allies are masters of the seas

and Oceans. The Russians are not even in the Mediterranean although they have foothold on much of the lands of the Old World. 'It was about time to let the infidels get out of the Muslim lands reasoned many of them.'

However Saudi Arabia, a very strong member, Jordan, Egypt and Kuwait were against the invasion but instead would want to side with the Allied forces of the English Speaking Countries. The Arab League then was divided. They cannot know which side they were to take but since they think of the plight of the Palestinians many of them want to join the invasion. Then Saudi Arabia, Jordan, Egypt and Kuwait abstained for a while but instead will give their support to Israel or the least be neutral. The Saudis knew that without wars in the land of the United States or in many strong countries in Europe there will have retribution if the Israelis win at the end. Beside they fear the Holy Book of the Christians and the Jews. They seemed to be always correct and true at the end.

The book of the Christians and the Jews predicted these events and no other Holy Books have done it. The Second World War of Germany was predicted with stunning accuracy. The rise of Hitler was also predicted. The rise and fall of many Empires in the Old World were also predicted including their downfall. But all Muslims are awaiting the arrival of the twelfth Mahdi and most likely candidate is in Iran the highest Ayatollah. He was a fundamentalist Muslim and he would really like to destroy the Jewish nation and make it into a Palestinian State. Will he be the one? Many ask among Muslims but even the Ayatollah was unsure.

Meanwhile among the fundamentalist Jews they were also in a quandary as to what will happen to them. In the Knesset there is an ongoing debate whether to use a nuclear bomb or not. While there is also a cabinet meeting with their Prime Minister and the Hawkish Defence Minister. They have prepared precisely for this. The Ultra Nationalist Defence Minister listened to the Fundamentalist Jews who think that the Messiah will then come out at this momentous hour.

While the secular Prime Minister said that: 'We are our own Messiahs.' 'Be realistic, he said to the Defence Minister. The Christians are correct. There are two hundred million armies assembling before us and our only hope is that Russia and China will stop them or that the United States and NATO and other English speaking countries will prevail over them. Surely we will destroy the Dome of the Rock and also they will destroy our Fourth Temple. There is no stopping this,' explained the Prime Minister.

But the Defence Minister was insistent that the Messiah will come. 'And who is your candidate to be the Messiah for us the Jews?' queried the Prime Minister.

'That would be you,' Said the Defence Minister. '

'Stop this madness Mister Defence Minister. I am not the Messiah,' said the Prime Minister. 'And if you insist I will declare to you that our Messiahs are the people living in the Western Hemisphere. The English speaking countries, those who have some semblance of our values, the Judeo Christian

civilization, this is the end of the world for us like the way it ended for David Koresh, he fought the authorities. Besides, I am from the tribe of Benjamin. [The Jewish Messiah will in fact come from the tribe of Judah a Son of King David].

Prime Minister Shalom el Shalom then took the Prime Minister's telephone and called first the Russian President and asked what was going on. The Russian President then said that this Armageddon was the creation not really of the Russia but of the SCO as a whole.

How could you not stop it while it was in your power? Look we will be annihilated or we will use nuclear against these pagans and Muslims,' said Prime Minister Shalom el Shalom.

The Russian replied that they too have nuclear weapons and that the Israelis would not know in which armaments did they put it. With single blast of the bomb all religious temples in Jerusalem will be destroyed. 'You would not want that?' Asked the Prime Minister of Russia. 'Besides, the Chinese are nuclear powered too, including the North Koreans and the Pakistanis,' he continued.

'This is madness Mr. Russian President. You are destroying the cradle of civilization. And if the West wins you will be in trouble, you will be a Pariah in the United Nations,' replied the Israeli Prime Minister.

'And what the United Nations can do? Nothing. It was the Americans who are calling the shots in this world. This is a game of Empires. And we have to challenge that arrangement. We have lived with it for more than one hundred years and this cannot go on forever,' Explained the Russian President with disdain.

Then they put down the telephones and the Prime Minister of Israel was so upset that he called again the result of votes in the Knesset. 'It was approved that the Zionist nation will use nuclear bomb in extraordinary situation like this,' Said the Defence Minister.

Then the phone of the Prime Minister rang. He asked his secretary to pick it up. According to the color coding it was the President of the United States. He took the call and talked to the President of the United States. 'Mr. President, this is not good news for the nation of Israel. This land is promised to us by the Creator Himself and Russia and China would want us to leave by force,' Said the Prime Minister of Israel Shalom el Shalom.

'And where can we find a document that says the land is yours? Said the President of the United States to the Prime Minister of Israel.

'In the Bible Mr. President, you Christians owe a lot of money to us for printing that one that you called Old Testament. And I know you believe what were written in that very old document,' said Shalom el Shalom to the President of the United States, as if asking for royalties on the book that the Jews have written.

'Of course I believe the Holy Scriptures. The land called Israel is indeed yours and we will defend it together. So prepare your Israeli Defense Force and together with NATO we will pulverized these armies assembling in the Old Babylon. Germany has said that they will join in the Armageddon on our side. We have four fleets of aircraft carriers in the Mediterranean Sea including one from Spain and one from France. We also have two fleets entering the Red sea if need be. The British are also in here and the Australians,' shared and assured President Johnson Cummins to the Prime Minister of Israel.

Then the President instructed the Prime Minister to let Michael Hancock talk to the Defense Minister of Israel. 'Mike will call him in a minute,' said the President.

Then Mike Hancock called on the Defence Minister of Israel Daniel Reubenson. The phone of the Defence Minister of Israel rang and it was Mike Hancock. 'Hello Daniel, Mike Hancock on the other line.' Greet Mike Hancock. 'What is happening in Iraq is indeed bad news but why use nuclear bombs? It is not necessary this time. Tonight we will start bombing sorties. The B2 Spirits 2 bombers will dropped two ton bombs then the tanks and helicopters in Saudi Arabia will enter the Megiddo and Golan heights. Kindly see the markings on the tanks and the helicopters. We will use Israeli flags together with our national flags. How was your Merkavas 26? Asked the Defense Secretary.

'The Merkavas are okay Mike. I am concerned if we do not make it this time, replied the Defence Minister of Israel.

'NATO is on our back then the Catholics and the Latins will join in the mopping up operations. The Russians just put one hundred thousand contingents but mostly technicians and Generals so we know they will be directing the battles on the SCO side,' replied Mike Hancock.

'We will then let loose the Merkavas and start the fighting.' The Prime Minister then asked Mike Hancock. 'Mike, do you think our Messiah will now come? I mean the event has timing that we cannot miss the significance?' Said Defence Minister Daniel Reubenson.

'Ah,' Replied Mike Hancock, 'I cannot tell about your side but we Christians are also waiting for our Messiah to return let us hope who will be proven right. And I pray at least one of us is correct. Remember the Muslims are also waiting for their twelfth Mahdi and this is also the right time for them. We cannot tell really Daniel. Please keep the line open.'

Then the conversation stopped and they put down their telephones.

AT THE PENTAGON

At Pentagon 07:00 p.m. the people there are not going home. They are awaiting news from every side of the world and this time the culmination of years of sacrifices. They ordered burgers and many foods to last for the night and even maybe tomorrow. They will be monitoring what will happen in the Middle East. The United States will strike the armies in the Old Babylon at night and the tanks, artilleries and helicopters from Saudi will come out and pound on the Golan Heights.

Five B2 Spirits 2 flew from US Navy aircraft carriers in the Mediterranean and will make bombings in Iraq. Three hundred kilometers away the bombers were spotted by Russian radars in the Old Babylon. They immediately position their laser and heat seeking missiles and aimed it at the incoming bombers. Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Then the operators of the missile batteries waited for a hit but none were hit in the first salvo of missiles. 'We miss the bombers! Said the Russians. Second round of missiles, but this time there are loud explosion about a kilometer away from them. Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!. There were hits in their camps. Then they realized that the Armageddon had begun.

Soldiers now are running around to man their posts, their missile batteries and their tanks, truck, armored personnel carriers, fighter jets and helicopters. They then put their aims of the missile batteries on the incoming fighter jets and bombers. This time there were hits. Swoooooooooooooooooooooooooosh. Boom! Swoooooooooooooooooooooooooosh. Boom! 'There were hits! Shout the soldiers of the SCO. There they can see in the dark of night the fires of the missiles and the bombed out fighter jets but not the long ranged bombers. The convoys now will go to Megiddo and they are starting in the middle of the night. But China and Iran have made preparations for the Dragon Tribes to go to Jerusalem and surround it and destroy the newly installed Temple there.

On the other side of the combatants and in the middle of the night the Apache XXIV Helicopters now can be seen flying out of Kuwait, Tel Aviv and Saudi, their destination were Golan Heights and Megiddo 55 miles north of Jerusalem. They look like locusts at night and they give enough heat and sound that the scouts and intelligence units of the SCO were able to pick. 'The allied are moving in to Megiddo we have to be there first!' Exclaimed one of the Generals of SCO. These are indications of Helicopters! Their Apaches XXIV and 300XA are flying in to Megiddo.

The tanks, artilleries, helicopters and armored personnel carriers then went toward Megiddo. The battle will commence once each combatants see each other. The SCO does not have unity flag unlike the Allied that have the Star of David as unity flag. The Air force of Israel decided a bomb attempt on the airports of Syria but still 100 kilometers away they have been spotted on the radars of the Syrian Army. The newly installed S800s ground to air missiles systems of the Russian then flew laser guided ground to air missiles to intercept the fighter jets of Israel. Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh.

Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. Sound the missiles but their fires and smoke at their tails were seen by the Pilots of the Israelis and the fighter jets change course and the Israelis were able to evade the missiles. The Israelis thenceforth realized that the defensive armaments of the Syrians and the Russians were formidable, the Syrians cannot be easily targeted this time.

The pilots decided to go back to their nearest base and inform the officers of the ground to air missiles of the Syrians as provided to them by the Russians.

'The missiles are formidable and accurate they also have good radar since they immediately saw us. This is trouble for us but we will try again. The Israeli Defence Force then has to jam the radars of the Syrians then the fighter jets flew once more to try to bomb the nearest airport of the Syrians.

This time they were able to drop their bombs but the Russian fighter jets have been in the air and they make a chase of the Israeli fighter jets. Of the ten that went to drop their bombs in Syria three were hit by air-to-air missiles of the Russian Mig 95s and the Chinese J20s. These were the sounds on the radio that they heard: Sweeeeeesh. BooM! Sweeeeeesh. BooM! Sweeeeeesh. BooM! The reddish fires of the hit fighter jets can be seen in the dark of the night as they fell down from the sky.

The people below can see what was happening in the sky. They knew that the Syrian airports were hit but three of the fighter jets of the Israelis were hit and down. In the middle of the night they will be hunting the pilots if they were able to eject. But the Israelis were persistent they attempted once more to engage the Syrians in Russian and Chinese fighter jets to a dogfight. There were night signals for the Israelis in situations like these.

One of the Israeli pilots then saw a Mig 95 overshooting his fighter jet. He tailed this one, Mig 95, and he locked in the target and once locked he armed the missiles then he pressed the red fire button. Sweeeeeesh. BooM! 'It was a hit! Base it was a hit! Mig 95 down,' said the Israeli pilot.

Then suddenly his fighter jet sounds beep! beep! beep! beep! There were missiles toward him coming from the ground. Nevertheless the pilot was able to eject before the missile hit his jet. Then it hit his jet. BooM!

The General Staff of the Israelis then realized that the SCO has improved a lot in war engagements. Now they have to plan in very short time, the SCO is now moving towards Megiddo and Jerusalem. Then they have to engage them in Megiddo. Release the Merkavas and the helicopters! Command the Generals of the Israelis. This time the SCO moved wide than the available pile of roads. They cover as wide as they can so that bombers will have difficulty targeting with maximum volume of losses of soldiers.

The Syrians now felt that the Russian and Chinese armaments were effective and they were relying on it while the Russians were relying on the skills and resolved of the

Syrians to fight with their armaments. There must be disconnect with the expectations of the Syrians and the Russians. That if they do not sit down and talk about it they will not be able to continue with the same effectiveness. But time is of the essence. There are no more talks about the trainings that have been conducted this time they are actual and the result are outstanding. Four missiles released from the ground and one hit. That is better than no hit.

The Israeli Defence Force has to change strategy. They decided to use ground-to-ground missiles with bigger and multiple warheads. They have to fire now if they want the SCO to stop moving and try firing too. Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Are all the sounds that can be heard in the middle of the night. These are battle of better deliveries of firepower and no better that can deliver them than their missiles.

The Israelis then called on their American counterparts and then the Americans send their fighter jets and long range bombers from the Mediterranean Sea. The French and the Spaniards then sent their fighter jets in the air loaded and ready to bomb the SCO moving towards Megiddo.

By just thirty minutes of flying the fighter jets were dropping air-to-ground missiles to the positions of SCO. Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Those are what can be heard in the middle of the night.

Then the SCO were fighting back using the ground to air missiles and with the numbers of fighter jets they were firing at will also and they were seeing in the middle of the night the fighter jets that were blown up. They color the night sky red as some fighter fall from the sky. On the ground the SCO were incurring heavy casualties but they are continuing to move toward Megiddo and the Jerusalem.

The armies that are going to Jerusalem include the three hundred thousand Dragon Tribes of China and Iran. They are well equipped and they are courageous. The Dragon Tribes do not get easily distracted by the firings and bombings that they are hearing along the way. Then some miles away they have sighted the target. Jerusalem on sight. They can see the Jerusalem Temple and that is the target, they are eager to be there and bomb the Temple as soon as possible. But Jerusalem is a heavily fortified city. They cannot enter without stiff fights. There was a reminder to them that the Muslim Mosques must not be touched, only the Jewish Temple to the right of the Muslim Mosques. The Jewish Temple was so huge that the Muslim Mosque pale and small in comparison with it, this is also one of the reasons why the Muslims want the Jewish Temple blown up and here are the Dragon Tribes to do it.

Then tank battles ensued, it was already early morning. The combatants can see each other now and they strategize better than before. Missile artilleries were in use on the

ongoing army battles but the Allied forces have preponderance in the airspace. They can now drop bombs at will. Fighter jets of the SCO now are on the defensive they have to protect their moving army forces. All the armies of SCO can hear are Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Of missiles. Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. BoooM! There were no let up on both sides. The casualties of the SCO were heavy that their vehicles and tanks were sometimes bogging down because of the number of casualties in front. But they did not come in here in to be defeated so they fight valiantly.

The casualties of the Israelis were at the minimum. They were well spread over the area of engagement at Megiddo. They know the place and the terrains. They were also well equipped and they were skilled in using their armaments. Valor were the name of the day for both sides. Each sides can always hear the word: Fire! Fire! Fire! Fire! Fire!

The United States Navy then continued their air sorties and they were now bombing almost at will. The armies of the SCO on the ground were fighting back with ground-to-air-missiles. These were their umbrellas during the rain of the missiles and bombs coming from above. Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. Can be heard from the SCO missile artilleries but very few Boos! Their radars have been effectively jammed by the Allied forces and NATO.

Despite the Allied bombing at will, they have difficulty finishing the SCO armies because of sheer number. Two hundred millions at the start and now they are still at around that number. They are well dispersed and the bombs of the allied cannot give maximum casualties. The SCO armies are still continuing firing at will from the ground. This time their effective weapons are the ground-to-ground-missiles. Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. Boos! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. Boos! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. Boos! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. Boos! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh. Boos!

Since they can now see each other, man to man fighting has started. SCO are too many said the Israelis but since they are fighting for their lives they fight valiantly and effectively. There has always been this possibility so the Israelis were prepared. Then the contingent from Saudi Arabia arrived and they started to fire at the SCO, they knew the enemies because their armaments have no Star of David insignia. There the helicopters were making so much damage to the tanks of the SCO. But the SCO was able to make their strategies change as the battle intensifies. They then engaged the helicopters of the Saudis with their own helicopters. Helicopter dogfights. Sweeeesh. Boos! Sweeeesh. Boos! Sweeeesh. Boos! Sweeeesh. Boos! Sweeeesh. These were the sounds in the battle field. There were too many of the SCO armies and they come to the battle well equipped. They will be fighting to the death since they do not know where to retreat.

Then there was a satellite telephone call to the Defence Ministry of the Israeli Defence Force. It said the Americans have landed in the Mediterranean Sea shores of Israel and Lebanon. They are with the Germans together with the tanks and artilleries that they have. Under cover by fighter jets and long-range bombers the Allied have easy time landing their men and equipment.

MEANWHILE IN JERUSALEM

The SCO and the Israeli Defence Force are having hand to hand combat aside from the bombs that can be heard outside of Jerusalem. The three hundred thousand Dragon Tribes are now near the Jewish Temple. They can sense that they cannot go inside just like a walk in a park because the Israelis have put up stiff resistance. But this time a ground-to-ground missile has hit the Jewish Jerusalem Temple. The Jews retaliated by firing a ground-to-ground missiles to the Muslim Mosques too. And the Mosques were blown up and then the Muslims saw what happened then they became more infuriated. They decided to throw their support to the Palestinians who were fighting the Israelis in the East Jerusalem.

From Tel Aviv, the capital of Israel, Daniel Reubenson called Mike Hancock once more: 'Hello, Mike, this is Daniel, if the movements of the SCO are not halted at Megiddo they will claim it then Jerusalem and then they will poke their noses at Tel Aviv and no one will be able to stop them.'

'Hello Daniel, can you hear the one hundred Eagles VFA26 rotor crafts? Said Mike Hancock to Defence Minister Daniel Reubenson.

'I can hear sounds of flying rotors and they seemed to be many if not too many. Are these your reinforcements? Asked Daniel Reubenson. The Defence Minister a little bit assured. 'Mike, kindly give instructions with regard to these Eagles VFA26 rotor crafts?'

Mike responded that they are at the Defence Minister's command except the Diwatas from the Philippines: 'They will be fighting the Dragon Tribe. We found out that they have similarities except that these ones are normal, they have 46 chromosomes but nevertheless they are Nephilim in race.'

'Mike, the Jewish Temple has been bombed. And the Dragon Tribes are about to enter,' shared Daniel Reubenson.

'Okay I will give instruction to drop the Diwatas at the Jewish Temple site. They are about fifty thousand with almost the same weapons as the Dragon Tribes.' Then Michael Hancock gave instruction to the people in the Pentagon to drop the Diwatas at the Jewish Temple site and/or in the nearby sites.

'Okay Sir, we will give the command.' Said the monitoring team at the Pentagon. Then the monitoring team at Pentagon gave the order for the Diwatas to be dropped at the Jewish Temple site and join the Israelis.

When the Diwatas were dropped to the Jewish Temple site they immediately sensed that they have some affinity with the Jewish people. 'Who are you asked the Israeli fighters?' But since they came from United States Eagle VFA26 the Israelis are attuned to them and they trusted them.

'We are from the Philippines, the Diwatas. Let's talk later it's time for fighting,' Said Malaya to them. 'More will come, around one million to your count.'

The Israelis then realized that the Diwatas and the Dragons Tribes are having the same Bronze Age fighting armaments. These could be fighters of the almost the same race but of different sides. The Diwatas have strong and wide bodies bringing with them very large swords with a metal different from the ones that the humans were using. The Israelis then again asked: 'Where you from?'

'From our Kingdom the one you called Elementals,' said Malaya. 'We are real and here we are in body form. Our Leader is the one called Arkangel San Miguel.'

'You mean Archangel Michael?' 'Yes, in your language he is called in that name,' answered Malaya. 'Let's continue fighting the Dragon Tribes.'

Swords now are clashing inside the Temple while the Jews were firing their guns. One by one the Dragon Tribes are being gunned down or cut to pieces by the Angels swords replicas.

Meanwhile in heaven, Juan Miguel asked San Miguel, why was it that his troops were not there to fight the enemies? And there were only three hundred thousand Dragon Tribes and not the 100 million estimate?

San Miguel replied that they are in the spirit realms at that time since that is more effective for them and it was the children of the Nephilim, the Diwatas, who are doing the physical fighting for them and the Israelis. In regards to the numbers of the Dragon Tribes; remember the obstacles we put? That retarded their population.

'Were not the Chinese were good?' Juan Miguel asked.

San Miguel said. 'In every race there are good and there are bad. If they were good at this point in time they will not be in the Philippines' territory of 200 mile exclusive economic zone. If you will review what you are viewing you will realize that the humans have the so called United Nations Commission on the Laws of the Sea [UNCLOS] a Tribunal on the dispute about the territories of the claimant countries. You have seen the 1734 Philippine Map by Father Murillo Velarde before you left Manila going to Mexico, did not

you? That is the evidence that the Bajo de Masinloc belongs to the Philippines and not to China.'

But the heart of Juan Miguel was with the Diwatas to win and he is seeing the Dragon Tribes to be winning sometimes but sometimes they are also losing. The Diwatas are good in fighting because it was no less than the fighting styles of the angels that they know. They have observed the angels in fighting the Halimaws and it was the same with this Dragon Tribe. One by one they are cutting down the Dragon Tribes. There was even a time when swords clash and the swords of the Dragon Tribes break into pieces. The metals that the Diwatas were using were superior to the ones being used by the Dragon Tribes.

Then there the sounds of the Eagles VFA26 rotors flying again and since they were too many the Dragon Tribes were alerted as to what they were but they realized that they were just the flying machines and they continue to fight. Then the second batch of one hundred Eagles VFA26 rotors bringing in their reinforcements from the Southeast and South arrived in Jerusalem. India and Saudi Arabia were the staging points of the Eagles VFA26. These second batch of Diwatas brought with them their large birds to fight the Dragon Tribes who have not such advantage unlike the Diwatas.

Daniel Reubenson then called Mike Hancock once more: 'Hello Mike, we are repelling the Dragon Tribes in the temple area. If new Diwata reinforcements arrive then we can all throughout defeat the Dragon Tribes.'

'Rest assured Daniel, they are coming and more. The Helicopters will be joining with them in these different battles. Concentrate on your strategies so that you can win each battles you are fighting there. Boeing jumbo jets will come and land in Tel Aviv there some Filipinos will man the Apache XXIV Helicopters and join the fight in Jerusalem and Megiddo. They are skilled in handling such Helicopters, better than the Saudis and other Arab pilots,' said Mike Hancock.

Then the Daniel call on their international airport in Tel Aviv and confirmed that truly jumbo jets are coming drop many who will man the Apache helicopters that they will be using in destroying the tanks, artilleries and helicopters of the SCO. The helicopters were actually hidden by Israeli Defence Force precisely for this situation and that the Filipinos were trained to fly just these Apache XXIV attack helicopters.

One by one Boeing jumbo jets were landing in Tel Aviv airport and they immediately run to their assigned Apache XXIV attack helicopters. Whiiiiir. Takatak-katak-katak-katak-katak-katak-katak. Whiiiiir. Takatak-katak-katak-katak-katak-katak-katak. Whiiiiir. Takatak-katak-katak-katak-katak-katak-katak. Whiiiiir. Takatak-katak-katak-katak-katak-katak-katak. Fly the Apache XXIV attack helicopters as being manned by the Filipinos. Whiiiiir. Takatak-katak-katak-katak-katak-katak-katak. katak-katak-katak. In no time that they reached the battle ground in Megiddo. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrrr. Sound the Apache XXIV attack helicopters. And when the pilots have seen the tanks that do

not have the insignia of Israel they keep on firing on them, besides, they know by heart the designs of the Chinese and the Russians when it comes to tanks and helicopters.

Technically the Filipinos are adept in flying the attack helicopters. In one instance a pilot saw another helicopter of the SCO and immediately he locked the target, once the target was locked in the monitor screen, he armed the missiles, when the chopper he was following cannot go out from the target locked he then pressed the fire button. Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh! BooM! Were the sounds that were created by the air-to-air missile that hit the helicopter of the SCO. It was a hit! It was a hit! It was a hit! Reports that pilot to their base. And these are the scenes all throughout the battle field of Megiddo.

There were even instances when one Apache XXIV attack helicopter has to contend with eight main battle tanks all at the same time. The pilot has to lock the targets one by one in a manner like they were playing games in a computer. Target locked. Missile armed. Press fire button! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh! BooM! Then he has to find the other tank that he monitored recently and once seen the process then follows. Target locked. Missile armed. Press fire button! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh! BooM!

Again to another SCO tank that was engaging another Israeli Merkava tank. Target locked. Missile armed. Press fire button! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh! BooM! These are the simple processes involved in knocking down the eight Main Battle Tanks from China that were manned by the other Arabs.

There seemed to be no letup in putting reinforcement after reinforcement from the SCO they have too much manpower. The ground-to-air missiles systems of Russia the S8000s were making so much damage to the fighter jets and helicopters of the Allied forces. They have the same system processes only with the inclusion of radars: Target locked. Missile armed. Press fire button! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh! BooM! Target locked. Missile armed. Press fire button! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh! BooM! Every time they will see Apaches or fighter jets. Target locked. Missile armed. Press fire button! Sweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeesh! BooM! The helicopters of the Allied forces were falling or crashing down.

The Filipino pilots reported to the base that it was the S8000s ground-to-air-missiles of Russia that were making damages to the Apache XXIV attack helicopters and fighter jets. Then a new strategy was devised. The allied forces will send the long ranged bombers to bomb the location of the S8000s missile systems of Russia that were manned by the Syrians. Once the targets S8000s were identified they will then call on the B2 Spirits or the F-117 Night Hawks bombers to bomb the locations of the S8000s missile systems. And they were very much successful in it. These identifications of the locations of the S8000s greatly minimized the losses of the Allied forces in the Golan Heights and at Megiddo.

10:00 P.M. ISRAEL TIME

It was the second night of battle. The Germans' army landed on the southwestern side of the Jerusalem one hundred thousand strong. They were wearing pure black with German insignia on their upper right arms and Israeli Star of David on the upper left hand. Together with the Leopard Tanks as brought by the United States Navy landing team they attacked the positions of the Dragon Tribes. It was night but the Germans were really adept in using their tanks. They were just like driving Ferraris on rugged soils in the way they maneuver their tanks. Just like the Apache XXIV attack helicopter they have these processes in their Main Battle Tank offense: Target locked. Missile armed. Press red fire button: Swezzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz! Boom! Then the enemy tanks or artilleries were broken piece by piece. Target locked. Missile armed. Press red fire button: Swezzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz! Boom! Target locked. Missile armed. Press red fire button: Swezzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz! Boom! Target locked. Missile armed. Press red fire button: Swezzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz! Boom! These were the identifying processes of the offense of German tanks that are in use in Armageddon.

During the morning, with the help of the Filipinos, Diwatas and the Germans, the Israelis have almost decimated the Dragon Tribes. Only few were remaining but continuing to fight head on with the Allied forces.

Then at 08:00 A.M. local time. The Chinese contingents in full armored Main Battle Tanks, Armored Personnel Carriers and Helicopters were seen pushing for Jerusalem. They would want to enter the damaged Jewish Temple. From there they would want to sacrifice pig on the Jewish Temple Table. It was reported to the Israeli Defence Minister Daniel Reubenson by Colonel Joshua Abramamov: 'Hello, Sir, Joshua Abramamov here. The Chinese are trying to sacrifice a pigs on our Holy Site I mean on the table of the Jewish Temple. The Germans are continuously engaging them but it seemed they will breach the defences, kindly called on the Americans to reinforce the temple area. We cannot hold on for very long. The Dragon Tribes are decimated and the Diwatas continue to fight on our side,' said the report on the situation at Jerusalem Temple.

The Eagles VFA26s continue to come but they were divided in three. There were forces dropped in Jerusalem to halt the advance of the Chinese, there were forces dropped at Megiddo and there were forces dropped at Golan Heights. The tanks of both sides continue to pour so do the helicopters. The fighter jets of the Allied forces continue to pound on the SCO forces and it seemed the battle will last longer than both expected.

Then the Chinese General, Shai, commanded his forces to push for the Jewish Jerusalem Temple. The Chinese are turning south. They will sacrifice a pig on the Jewish Table in the Temple. With the persistence of the Chinese forces they were able to enter the Temple and there the General asked the pigs that they brought. The pigs were still alive when they brought it inside. Then they put them on the table. Then the pig was killed using

a knife and then cut in half, the General then pour gasoline on the pig and lit a fire on it. Under that situation when the Americans arrived.

The Americans landed on top of the Jerusalem temple and bring in their special forces to put out the fire and take out the pig. There they pulverized some of the pigs into burning pieces. General Shai then went out and return to his Armored Personnel Carrier and return to the bulk of the Chinese contingent together with his personal military guards. Thus the words of Lord Jesus Christ and Prophet Daniel were fulfilled:

‘So when you see the disastrous abomination, of which the prophet Daniel spoke, set up in the Holy Place (let the reader understand), then those in Judaea must escape to the mountains; if a man is on the housetop, he must not come down to collect his belongings; if a man is in the fields, he must not turn back to fetch his cloak. Alas for those with child, or with babies at the breast, when those days come! Pray that you will not have to escape in winter or on a Sabbath. For there will be great distress such as, until now, since the world began, there never has been, nor ever will be again. And if that time has not been shortened, no one would have survived; but shortened that time shall be, for the sake of those who are chosen.

If anyone says to you then, “Look, here is the Christ” or, “He is there”, do not believe it; for false Christs and false prophets will arise and produce great signs and portents, enough to deceive even the chosen, if that were possible. There; I have forewarned you. – Matthew 24: 15-25

Then the Americans throw some of the sacrificed pigs outside of the temple and bring it to the sea and thrown there. The Jews then were angered so much that they almost release their nuclear weapons and aimed them at the Chinese contingents. But reasons prevailed. General Shai then continued to bombed and missile the Jewish Temple and brought it to the ground. The SCO have been cut into half in military population but they remain strong at one hundred million less some of the heavy armaments.

The Allied forces continued to pound the SCO and Syria, Lebanon, Gaza Strip and other places that were under the forces of the SCO, including Megiddo. But more Eagles VFA26s come to the battle area ready to reinforce Israel and Allied forces, the two camps now opposite each other trying to guess what the other side will do. There seemed to be an stalemate. The SCO without reinforcements but with one hundred million continue to remain in the area. While the Allied forces with military hardware and with continuing reinforcements. The stalemate must break said the Americans while the SCO side would want to continue the stalemate.

MEANWHILE IN EUROPE

The NATO continues to pour contingents to their eastern borders to defend against the advancing Russian forces. The Russians are now advancing little by little. But with the arrival of the US Air Force long ranged bombers the Russian advances were halted and was able to push back to Kiev and Tblisi once more. There is again a semblance of stalemate in European theatre of war.

Refugees continue to pour into European shores in the hundreds of thousands and they were fished into the boats of the European Union. Turkey that declared war against Israel was not willing to accept many more Muslim refugees. For them the war was a creation of the West and they must be willing to accept refugees. It was the Americans and the Israelis despite having no connection whatsoever with the war that the SCO decided to start. Crimes in the European cities are becoming unacceptable to the European citizens because of the increase in the arrival of refugees. The world is tumbling down for them. The United States decided to accept initial one million refugees and more. Other Latin American countries decided to accept twenty million refugees from the Middle East divided to many countries Brazil, Argentina, Mexico, Venezuela and Colombia taking the bulk of the refugees, at least a promise on paper.

German Defence Minister Wolfgang von Gottfield then called Secretary of Defense Michael Hancock to discuss the stalemate and in European theatre and the problem of the refugees. 'Mike, this is now a concern to Europe that Russia might use their nuclear arsenals and wipe out the cities of Europe?' asked Wolfgang Gottfield.

'Mister Defence Minister, the problem is in the Middle East we have to pull the plug in there. The food stuff must be brought there. The United Nations structures are still functioning we can coordinate with them so as not to burden the NATO and the Allied forces,' replied the Defense Secretary.

'Where will the food come from?' Asked the German.

'Food from the United States, Canada and Australia, Latin America and Europe, there are surplus now in the Latin American countries. We cannot expect Russia to join us despite them having surplus in wheat production. They have to feed the remaining one hundred million of their forces in Israel,' replied and estimated the Defense Secretary of the United States.

'Do you think He will come?' Asked the German Defence Minister to Mike Hancock.

'Who will come?' replied the Secretary of Defense.

'I mean, Jesus Christ, He is being awaited by billions of people and they all thought that he will come during Armageddon?' explained Wolfgang von Gottfield.

'Ah. I do not know. Although the American President is hoping that He will come but I do think that Shalomon el Shalomon is correct. We are our own Messiahs. I am a Christian, make no mistake about that, but at this juncture let us serve the Father and field as much force that we can to Israel. We have to destroy the Chinese horde that came in that sacred land,' replied and shared Mike Hancock to Wolfgang von Gottfield.

'All the three Religions then were mistaken about the arrival of the twelfth Mahdi, the Second coming of Lord Jesus Christ and the coming out of the Messiah of the Jews. If they will not come Europe will have One.' said Wolfgang von Gottfield. 'Just like old times Germany has to surrender liberty to strongman of strong countenance and that would be me.'

'Mike, we will go all out, kindly provide lift to five million of our forces and armaments I will break the stalemate in the Middle East and conquer the Holy Land for the Christians and we will bomb the religious structures there and put up another one. Remember Davao, Philippines religious successors, we have to bring him to the forefront? A New Worldwide Church,' said Defence Minister Wolfgang von Gottfield. 'The sacrifices that China and Russia have made are enough for it to become a worldwide church. I propose that the headquarters of this Church be put in New York City. The sixth Rome,' said the German Defence Minister.

[Davao is in the Philippines and there is a blossoming Worldwide Church in there that the founder had his Illumination in the land of Israel although not in Jerusalem. He has millions of followers worldwide and he is always on his television channel preaching. This Davao Church has April 13, 2007 as its anniversary or founding date. His successors are now preaching his teachings.]

'Wolf, when you talk like that you are scary but I do understand the thing about the Church of Christ [Iglesia ni Cristo] that was created during World War One. The world must know that there will always be new eras for us people. We will make communications with the Davao Church and make sure that she makes his Headquarters here in New York City. We will give her place for the Church or else the Chinese and the Russians will steal her from us,' replied Mike Hancock. 'Perhaps another round of waiting for the Lord Jesus Christ, by the way, yes, Wolf, we will provide the lifts. Expect the ships and the Eagles VFA26s rotors, they will come. The ships tomorrow morning while the Eagles VFA26s will come tonight. Two hundred of those muscled two rotor flying machines,' assured Mike Hancock to the German Defence Minister.

'Germany will be the Best man this time. Who bombed the Temple to the ground?' said the German Minister of Defense.

'Wolf, that is not necessary the Founder of the Davao, Philippines Church did also realized his Illumination in Israel so we will put up there and not necessarily in Jerusalem,' replied Mike Hancock. 'It was the Chinese who bombed the Jewish Temple.'

'Mike, she must be in Jerusalem,' replied Wolfgang von Gottfield.

'To Jerusalem then for the Bride,' said the United State Defense Secretary. 'I will also call the ships that float in the North Atlantic to join in this planned breaking of the stalemate. I will ask the Canadian to send their best soldiers.'

'Thank you Mike. Do not let them steal your Bride. Hehehe!' Replied the German Minister.

'My head aches so I give her the car keys. Hehehe! How could I forget that I give her an extra key? Hahaha. So it was not you?' Hehehe! Laughingly replied Mike Hancock to Wolfgang Von Gottfield. They are now joking about the prospects of having worldwide Church. Taking the lines from the songs of old times singers, like: Eric Clapton's Wonderful Tonight and another rapper's: So it wasn't you.

Then the conversation terminated, they have to have their break and eat.

CHAPTER XLIII

IN THE UNITED STATES DEFENSE DEPARTMENT

There were reports coming in. There is still the stalemate in Israel, stalemate also in the borders of Eastern European countries. But the SCO are now lacking in war materiel only manpower remains with them.

'Mike, said Howard Burton, this could be a massacre if Russia did not add more armaments to their forces. Their S8000s ground-to-air missiles systems were almost decimated. There were only pockets in the Golan Heights that they were still there but at Megiddo there were none. Let us monitor the movements of the Russians and the Chinese.'

'I will call the Indians and will tell them to push in the Himalayas and to their west in Pakistan. Maybe two hundred tanks in the Himalayas and one hundred tanks in the west and then the fighter jets support. I will tell them that China now will make a choice of reinforcing their troops there in Israel or the ones in Himalayas. The ones in Himalayas are most likely infantrymen and artilleries according to reports. It will be a great opportunity for the Indians. Pakistan will not be able to use her nuclear missiles since the Indians have superiority in it because of former President George W. Bush policy of allowing the Indians get nuclear technologies from the United States,' estimated Mike Hancock the Defense Secretary of the United States to Atty. Howard Burton the Undersecretary.

IN ISRAEL

To break the stalemate the Germans landed five millions of their best troops near Jerusalem airlifted by the Americans. Then they waited for some of their war materiel coming from the ships. Again the Germans are in pure black uniform with German insignia to their upper right arm and Israel Star of David on the upper left arm. When their Apache XXIV attack helicopters come they will then push to Megiddo since the Chinese have withdrawn from Jerusalem.

The Palestinians in the East Jerusalem have been decimated by the Israelis in close combat encounters. Since the Diwatas have won the battle against the Dragon Tribes they were now joining in the battle at Megiddo using their birds as transportation.

At Megiddo the Americans and the Filipino pilots are firing at the SCO contingents at will while the SCO were firing their AK 47s and shoulder fired missiles and fighting valiantly to the end. Missiles were still the ones that were making the most damage to both sides. This time it will be difficult for the Russians to reinforce the remaining forces at Megiddo. It was the Chinese who were calling the shots. The transportation were very

difficult by land and they do not have the likes of Osprey V22 and the Eagles VFA26s transport lifts that the Allied forces have.

This time there was a call to General Shai. 'Hello, General Shai, the Indians are now moving their tanks and helicopters under cover of fighter jets to the Himalayas. The Politburo decided to tackle this matter first. You have to ask Russia for reinforcements,' said the General Staff of China to him.

General Shai knew that that should be the priority. Israel can wait. In the meantime they will engage the enemies in guerilla battles. Then suddenly there came sounds of many Apache XXIV and Apache 300XA attack helicopters of the Germans and American contingents at Megiddo. Whiiiiirrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrr. Whiiiiirrrrrrrrrrrr. Target locked. Missile armed. Press red fire button: Swezzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz! Boom! Target locked. Missile armed. Press red fire button: Swezzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz! Boom! Target locked. Missile armed. Press red fire button: Swezzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz! Boom! Target locked. Missile armed. Press red fire button: Swezzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzzz! Boom!

These were the scenes and finally the SCO surrendered and many other went away with their remaining Armored Personnel Carriers. The Allied did not follow them but they let them escape the place to go to Syria, Iraq, Jordan and Egypt. Some they go to Saudi Arabia.

Iran's contingents were still almost intact and they did many damages to the Allied forces using the fighter jets of the Chinese and the S800s Ground-to-air-missiles of the Russians. They took care much of their Russian 800s under cover, the Iranians retreated via Iraq to their place and will regroup to fight again in another day. Iran's Armored Personnel Carriers were intact so also of their tanks and other artilleries. They were moving under cover of their fighter jets. Persia's angel once more protected his people.

The Chinese contingents meanwhile were obliterated as they fought valiantly to the last man.

The Allied forces then celebrated their win and they invited the leaders of the world to join them in Jerusalem to celebrate the victory. The Allied forces were shouting Victory! Victory! Victory! Victory! Then they took their provisions and celebrated for the night together with the Diwatas.

It was the Secretary of Defense Michael Hancock of United States, Defence Minister Daniel Reubenson of Israel and Defence Minister Wolfgang von Gottfield of Germany who celebrated the victory in Jerusalem. The Chancellor of Germany went to the United States to speak to joint session of Congress after the President of the United States speech about their victory in the Armageddon. Indian Prime Minister was also there in the US Congress, the Philippine President, Canadian Prime Minister, United Kingdom's Prime Minister,

Australian Prime Minister, Israeli Prime Minister, Japanese Prime Minister, South Korean President, South African President and New Zealand Prime Minister.

NATO Seal

To the peace loving people of the world:

One more time, we have overcome a planetary calamity, to this single planet that we have. To the dearest people of the Earth, we cannot allow that we destroy this planet by ourselves, whether our enemies or us. It was true that there was an agreement not to use nuclear bombs in this conflict only because we cannot avoid the conflict altogether. The better system must prevail so that humanity will survive and give that better quality of life to people of the world.

NATO has always been on the side of preserving peace in the world. Right now, we are proposing a One World Government led by the United States of America. One World Religion led by the Roman Catholic Church. One World Economy by reviving the World Trade Organization to be agreed upon arrangements.

Germany is willing to be relegated at the back seat and become facilitator just to achieve a single world. There should no longer be regionalism. Regionalism is a passé after the "Armageddon". Even though Russia and China remained strong while Iran got out from the conflict unscathed, SCO remain relevant in world affairs. New World Order is still the way forward.

China, Russia and Iran must cooperate to achieve this New World Order. To the victors, we would want to remind ourselves that it is just the beginning. There are lots of tasks ahead in rebuilding the world. Create a more equitable arrangement by taking out borders while strengthening our resolve to fight the blight of terrorism. We also must encourage sharing of physical goods.

Right now, a new Church is born and we should help her in her propagation of a Universal Faith for all. For the Christians, keep on waiting for the Lord Jesus Christ; for the Jews hope for your Messiah; for the Muslims wait for the 12th Mahdi. While for those who wait for the Avatar, hope that he will again Descend.

We believe that the world is for all of us.

Good night world.

Sollenne von Fritsch
Chancellor of Germany
For the North Atlantic Treaty
Organization

On the occasion of winning the Armageddon

Thus an Armageddon ended without the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ, or the Mahdi or the Jewish Messiah. But a new Church is born, the one that has initial headquarters in Davao City, Philippines. The Head of this Church calls himself the appointed son of God. Then a new Arka years of waiting for the people for the coming of either the: Mahdi, the Lord Jesus Christ or the Jewish Messiah or the Avatar.

THE UNIVERSAL SABBATH [Seven Year Sabbath]

Meanwhile in Israel, soldiers and civilian people alike were ordered by Defence Minister Daniel Reubenson to clean the land of the dead. There were so many corpses that they cannot be numbered. What are they going do to these stinking corpses that an Armageddon has killed? But the Jews are pious people they have to follow what was written in the Holy Scriptures.

***T**he citizens of the towns of Israel will go out and use these arms for firewood: shields and bucklers, bows and arrows, clubs and javelins. For seven years they will feed fire with them. Men will stop looking for wood in the countryside or cutting in the forest; they will be feeding the fire with arms. They will plunder those who plundered them, and take spoil from those who despoiled them – it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks.*

***O**n that day, I shall give Gog a famous spot in Israel for his grave – the valley of the Abarim, on the east of the Sea – the valley that turns back the traveler – and there Gog and his whole army will be buried, and it shall be called the Valley of Hamon-gog. The House of Israel will take seven months to bury them and cleanse the country. All the people of the country will dig their, graves, and be honored for this on the day when I reveal my glory – it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks. Men will be selected to go continually up and down the country to bury those left on the ground and cleanse it. For seven months they will searching. If one of them see any human bones as they go up and down the country he will put a mark beside them until the gravediggers have buried them in the valley of Hamon-gog – the name of the town is to be Hamonah – and so have cleansed the country. – Ezekiel 39: 09 - 16*

Israelis will use the fuel of the defunct armaments of the SCO, NATO and Allied Forces for their needs. And for seven years they will be using it for free with the costs of transportations from their government.

Juan Miguel seeing all these things keeps it to himself and Praise the Lord Jesus Christ for the future that lies ahead. It comes to the most opportune time for him. The Guitara de San Miguel has been instrumental in showing him the future and the things that will happen. He believes that the Lord is the Good and that He will not destroy the earth. Just like the short prayer in the Glory Be of the Catholic Church.

Glory be to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Spirit.
As it was in the beginning, is now, and ever shall be, **world without end.** –
Amen

The world it seemed will have no end. The Israelites of the 66 -70 A.D. had their end of the world and new Arka years happen for them. It also happened to them in 586 B.C. when they were invaded by the Persians. Now, another beginning for Jewish People, 2066 A.D.

The Chinese and the Russians though defeated remain strong. The Shanghai Cooperation Organization continued to be intact and awaiting another opportunity to upset the current world order. Germany and the United States with the birth of a new Global Church now propose a New World Order. There will be One Religion, One Government and One Economic system.

As Juan Miguel sees in the viewing area of heaven he is wondering if the beast will now come out or the 666 as there will be One Economic System. But for him, he knows that he will be in heaven since he is already here and just have to be avatara to continue his journey on earth. But definitely the Lord Jesus Christ will come down to earth as He promised but He does not know when but only the Father knows.

San Miguel then tell Juan Miguel that it was about time to go avatara to earth and continue his Guitara de San Miguel replica making in Tondo, Manila. He will see the daughter of Mr. Caballero and they will certainly get in-love with each other and go the Church to get married. He asked San Miguel if he will have children. 'Well, God willing you will have children,' said San Miguel.

'Can you then tell me what more are there in the Catholic theology?' Asked Juan Miguel.

There will be more about the Catholic Theology for him. He, sure, will not get bored with the upcoming changes in the Catholic Church and the competition that She has now with other Churches.

With regard to the Philippines, Juan Miguel has seen that that new world power the United States will conquer the country and will give it its prosperity and will make the nation great. They will speak different language in a matter of one hundred years and that will be the Universal Business Language of the English Speaking countries.

The Philippines will look west to Europe for Spiritual and cultural guidance, looks west to Washington D.C. for political affiliation and looks east to California, United States for her Cultural identification.

Now, Juan Miguel is in Tondo, Manila and he now returns to his previous occupation of crafting Guitara de San Miguel replicas.

'Juan Miguel, how are you?' Asked Mr. Caballero. 'You've been away quite a while and there were many orders that were listed here for you.'

Then suddenly Mr. Caballero's daughter came out of his place and look as to who is the one talking to her father.

'Papa, to whom are you talking to? she said.

'Ahhm. He is Juan Miguel, a lessee in this part of the workshop. Do you want to know him?' said Mr. Caballero to his daughter.

'Ah si, sure. Co mo esta? Mi nombre es Princesa Urduja, y tu?' Said Princesa Urduja to Juan Miguel.

'Ah. My name is Juan Miguel and I craft these guitars. Want to hear some of the sounds?'

'Oh. Si. Why not?' Replied Princesa Urduja.

As Juan Miguel looks to the lady, he could not but be amazed to the goddess like beauty of the lady. As he plucks the guitar replica, some of the items in Mr. Caballero's pieces of furniture moved.

- The End -

The food of the poor

Oh, come to the water all you who are thirsty;
though you have no money, come!
Buy corn without money, and eat,
and, at no cost, wine and milk.
Why spend money on what is not bread,
Your wages on what fails to satisfy?
Listen, listen to me, and you will have good things to eat
and rich food to enjoy.
Pay attention, come to me;
listen, and your soul will live. – Isaiah 55: 1 - 3